# Patching on Berkovich Spaces and the Local-Global Principle 

Vlere Mehmeti

## To cite this version:

Vlere Mehmeti. Patching on Berkovich Spaces and the Local-Global Principle. Algebraic Geometry [math.AG]. Normandie Université, 2019. English. NNT : 2019NORMC240 . tel-02499757

HAL Id: tel-02499757
https://theses.hal.science/tel-02499757
Submitted on 5 Mar 2020

HAL is a multi-disciplinary open access archive for the deposit and dissemination of scientific research documents, whether they are published or not. The documents may come from teaching and research institutions in France or abroad, or from public or private research centers.

L'archive ouverte pluridisciplinaire HAL, est destinée au dépôt et à la diffusion de documents scientifiques de niveau recherche, publiés ou non, émanant des établissements d'enseignement et de recherche français ou étrangers, des laboratoires publics ou privés.

## THESE

Pour obtenir le diplôme de doctorat Spécialité MATHEMATIQUES

Préparée au sein de l'Université de Caen Normandie

## Patching on Berkovich Spaces and the Local-Global Principle

## Présentée et soutenue par Vlere MEHMETI

| Thèse soutenue publiquement le 04/12/2019 <br> devant le jury composé de |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :---: |
| M. DAVID HARARI | Professeur des universités, Université Paris 11 Paris-Sud | Rapporteur du jury |  |
| Mme ANNETTE WERNER | Professeur des universités, Goethe-Universität | Rapporteur du jury |  |
| M. ANTOINE DUCROS | Professeur des universités, universités Sorbonne regroupées | Membre du jury |  |
| M. PHILIPPE GILLE | Directeur de recherche, Université Lyon 1 Claude Bernard | Membre du jury |  |
| M. DAVID HARBATER | Professeur, UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA | Membre du jury |  |
| M. JÉRÔME POINEAU | Professeur des universités, Université Caen Normandie | Directeur de thèse |  |

Thèse dirigée par JÉRÔME POINEAU, Laboratoire de Mathématiques 'Nicolas Oresme' (Caen)


# Patching on Berkovich Spaces and the Local-Global Principle 

Vlerë Mehmeti

## Acknowledgements

I would like to start by a heartfelt thank you to Jérôme Poineau, without whom this thesis would not have been possible. I am very grateful for all the time that he has dedicated into introducing me to the world of research and preparing me to be a mathematician. Jérôme's support and guidance have been most precious to me during all this time, and have ceaselessly encouraged me to continue with my work, even at moments of demoralization from my part.

My profound gratitude goes to both David Harari and Annette Werner for having accepted to be the referees of this thesis, as well as part of its defense committee. In particular, many thanks to David for his support and recommendations about the next step after Caen.

A very big thanks to Antoine Ducros for his support and for accepting to participate in the defense committee. His enthousiasm and curiosity for my work even in its earlier stages have been highly motivating and have made me feel welcome in the domain of Berkovich spaces. The quality of this manuscript has benefited greatly from Antoine's remarks.

My sincere gratitude also goes to Philippe Gille and David Harbater for accepting to be part of my thesis committee and for expressing interest in my work. I am especially grateful to David Harbater and Julia Hartmann for a research visit they invited me to at the University of Philadelphia, and the thought-provoking discussions we had on that occasion.

A very special thanks to Qëndrim Gashi, one of my first professors (fortunately for me) at the University of Prishtina. His unwavering support has played a big role in shaping both my ambitions and the path to a PhD in mathematics. Shumë faleminderit për mbështetjen, Qëndrim!

Upon my first trip to France, Qëndrim put me in contact with Martin Andler. I am very thankful to Martin for his support which started then and continues to this day. It is, in part, what influenced my decision to come to France for my master's studies.

Whenever I had somewhat non-specific mathematical questions, there was always the very curious and enthousiastic Philippe Satgé I could address them to, and who would always take his time to try and give me an answer. Merci de ton soutien, Philippe !

I am very happy to have been part of the LMNO for the previous three years. There is a great work environement, and I have learnt a lot from the many workshops organized here during this time. Many thanks to all of the members of the LMNO.

Upon my arrival to the LMNO, the great atmosphere among the PhD students and postdocs made my integration here easy and my days very enjoyable. Many thanks for that to: Loulou, Sarra, Pablo, César, Georges, Frank and Arnaud. The moments we shared during "les pauses cafés" and "les soirées" are among the highlights of my stay in Caen. I am also very grateful for the wonderful three years in the company of: Emilie, Daniele,

Julien, Stavroula, Guillaume, Étienne, Nacer, Angelot, Rubén, Coumba, Tiphaine, Thien, Dorian, Tin, Hung and Gilberto. I wish we had spent more time together!

I am very thankful to Mariagiulia for injecting to my life some (much needed) quirkiness! She made my transition from Preshevë to Palaiseau much easier.

A very special thanks to my friend, Sudarshan Arthur Shinde, the amicus omnibus. Many of my years in France would have been simply unbearable without our "irish" moments, long talks, and little trips.

Shumë faleminderit nanës e babit për përkrahjen e tyre të vazhdueshme gjatë tërë jetës time! Kjo doktoraturë nuk do të kishte qenë e mundur pa juve. Faleminderit që keni ardhur prej Presheve veçanërisht për mbrojtjen time të doktoraturës. Shpresoj se do të gëzojmë edhe plot momente të tjera të lumtura bashkë. A very heartfelt thanks to my parents for their support for over 27 years now and for coming to my PhD defense.

I am beyond happy that all of the choices I have made brought me to Caen. I would like to thank my partner, Léonard, for all of his support and the great moments we have spent together. I look forward to all the ones that are to come.

Abstract. Field patching, introduced by Harbater and Hartmann in [33], and extended by the aforementioned authors and Krashen in [34], has recently seen numerous applications. We present an extension of this technique to the setting of Berkovich analytic geometry and applications to the local-global principle.

In particular, we show that this adaptation of patching can be applied to Berkovich analytic curves, and as a consequence obtain local-global principles over function fields of curves defined over complete ultrametric fields. Because of the connection between the points of a Berkovich analytic curve and the valuations that its function field can be endowed with, one of these local-global principles is given with respect to completions, thus evoking some similarity with more classical versions. As an application, we obtain local-global principles for quadratic forms and results on the $u$-invariant. These findings generalize those of [34].

As a starting point for higher-dimensional patching in the Berkovich setting, we show that this technique is applicable around certain fibers of a relative Berkovich analytic curve. As a consequence, we prove a local-global principle over the germs of meromorphic functions on said fibers. By showing that said germs of meromorphic functions are algebraic, we also obtain local-global principles over function fields of algebraic curves defined over a larger class of ultrametric fields.

Résumé. Recollement sur les espaces de Berkovich et principe local-global. Le recollement sur les corps, introduit par Harbater et Hartmann dans [33], et étendu par ces auteurs et Krashen dans [34], a récemment trouvé de nombreuses applications. Nous présentons ici une extension de cette technique au cadre de la géométrie analytique de Berkovich et des applications au principe local-global.

Nous montrons que cette adaptation du recollement peut s'appliquer aux courbes analytiques de Berkovich, et par conséquent obtenons des principes locaux-globaux sur les corps de fonctions de courbes définies sur des corps ultramétriques complets. Grâce à la connexion entre les points d'une courbe analytique de Berkovich et les valuations dont on peut munir son corps de fonctions, nous obtenons un principe local-global par rapport à des complétés du corps de fonctions considéré, ce qui présente une ressemblance avec des versions plus classiques. En application, nous établissons des principes locauxglobaux dans le cas plus précis des formes quadratiques et en déduisons des bornes sur l'u-invariant de certains corps. Nos résultats généralisent ceux de [34].

Comme point de départ pour le recollement en dimension supérieure dans un cadre d'espaces de Berkovich, nous montrons que cette technique peut s'appliquer autour de certaines fibres d'une courbe analytique relative. Nous l'utilisons ensuite pour démontrer un principe local-global sur les germes des fonctions méromorphes sur ces fibres. En montrant que ces germes de fonctions méromorphes sont algébriques, nous obtenons aussi des principes locaux-globaux sur les corps de fonctions des courbes algébriques définies sur une famille plus vaste de corps ultramétriques.

## Contents

Introduction ..... i
Presentation of the major directions ..... i
Organization of the manuscript ..... iv
Introduction (in French) ..... xiii
Présentation des directions majeures ..... xiii
Organisation du manuscrit ..... xvi
Chapter 1. Introduction to Berkovich Spaces ..... 1
1.1. Banach rings and the Berkovich spectrum ..... 2
1.1.1. Valued Fields ..... 2
1.1.2. Semi-normed rings ..... 4
1.1.3. The spectral radius ..... 5
1.1.4. Semi-normed modules ..... 6
1.1.5. Complete tensor product of modules in the non-Archimedean case ..... 6
1.1.6. The Berkovich spectrum ..... 7
1.2. The Analytic Affine Line ..... 10
1.2.1. The analytic affine space ..... 10
1.2.2. $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ : the trivially valued case ..... 11
1.2.3. $\quad \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ : the algebraically closed case $([\mathbf{6}, 1.4 .4])$ ..... 12
1.2.4. $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ : the general case ..... 12
1.2.5. The analytic projective line ..... 14
1.3. Affinoid Algebras ..... 14
1.3.1. Definition and some properties ..... 14
1.3.2. Affinoid algebras and the spectral radius ..... 16
1.3.3. Finite modules/algebras over a $k$-affinoid algebra ..... 17
1.4. Affinoid Spaces ..... 17
1.4.1. A first definition ..... 17
1.4.2. Affinoid domains ..... 17
1.4.3. The structural sheaf ..... 20
1.4.4. The stalks ..... 21
1.4.5. Back to affinoid spaces ..... 21
1.4.6. The boundaries of an affinoid space ..... 22
1.4.7. The reduction map ..... 23
1.5. Good Berkovich analytic spaces ..... 24
1.5.1. The category of good analytic spaces ..... 24
1.5.2. Examples of affinoid domains ..... 26
1.5.3. Local properties and dimension of good analytic spaces ..... 27
1.5.4. Morphisms, relative boundary and interior ..... 28
1.5.5. Topological properties ..... 31
1.6. Analytification functor and GAGA theorems ..... 31
1.6.1. The kernel map ..... 32
1.6.2. Analytification over a field ..... 32
1.6.3. Analytification over an affinoid space ..... 34
1.6.4. The Zariski topology ..... 35
1.7. Complement I: The sheaf of meromorphic functions ..... 36
1.8. Complement II: Analytic curves ..... 41
1.8.1. The points of an analytic curve ..... 41
1.8.2. Boundaries in dimension 1 ..... 43
1.8.3. Some general results on curves ..... 43
1.8.4. Additional properties of $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$ ..... 47
Chapter 2. Patching ..... 51
2.1. The general case ..... 51
2.2. A special case fundamental for patching over curves ..... 57
Chapter 3. Patching over Berkovich Curves and Quadratic Forms ..... 61
3.1. Nice covers ..... 62
3.1.1. An interpretation of patching over analytic curves ..... 62
3.1.2. Nice covers of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ ..... 64
3.1.3. Nice Covers of a Berkovich Curve ..... 66
3.2. A Local-Global Principle over Berkovich Curves ..... 69
3.2.1. Patching over nice covers ..... 69
3.2.2. Local-global principles over analytic curves ..... 71
3.2.3. Valuations, Berkovich Curves, and the local-global principle ..... 76
3.3. Comparison of Overfields ..... 79
3.3.1. Analytic generic fiber and the specialization map ..... 79
3.3.2. The setup of HHK's [34] ..... 81
3.3.3. The comparison ..... 81
3.4. Applications to Quadratic Forms and the $u$-invariant ..... 84
3.4.1. Local-global principles for quadratic forms ..... 84
3.4.2. Local Calculations ..... 85
3.4.3. The applications ..... 93
Chapter 4. Patching over Analytic Fibers and the Local-Global Principle ..... 95
4.1. Nice covers for the relative projective line ..... 96
4.1.1. Some results on the analytic projective line ..... 96
4.1.2. The general setting ..... 98
4.1.3. A Theorem: Thickenings of Type 3 Points ..... 99
4.1.4. Towards Relative Nice Covers ..... 102
4.2. A norm comparison ..... 107
4.2.1. The case of degree one polynomials ..... 107
4.2.2. The general case ..... 109
4.2.3. The explicit norm comparison ..... 113
4.2.4. A useful proposition ..... 115
4.3. Patching on the Relative Projective Line ..... 117

## CONTENTS

4.3.1. A few preliminary results ..... 117
4.3.2. Patching over $\mathbb{P}^{1, a n}$ ..... 118
4.3.3. Patching over relative nice covers ..... 122
4.4. Relative proper curves ..... 123
4.4.1. Example: Realization of an algebraic curve over $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ as the thickening of an analytic curve over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ ..... 124
4.4.2. Consequences of Setting 4.4.1 ..... 126
4.5. Nice Covers of a Relative Proper Curve and Patching ..... 130
4.5.1. Nice covers of a relative proper curve ..... 130
4.5.2. Patching over Relative Proper Curves ..... 136
4.6. The Local-Global Principles ..... 139
4.6.1. With respect to germs of meromorphic functions ..... 139
4.6.2. With respect to valuations ..... 141
4.6.3. Summary of results ..... 143
4.7. Examples of fields $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ ..... 144
Bibliography ..... 147

## Introduction

In this thesis we use the language of Berkovich's theory to prove results on the localglobal principle as well as applications to quadratic forms and a related invariant. We do this by using the crucial tool of patching. This technique has seen many applications, and has recently become the main instrument in an ongoing series of papers. We extend patching from an algebraic setting to one of Berkovich spaces.

With the Berkovich point of view, patching becomes of highly geometric nature: it can be interpreted as the sheaf-theoretical gluing of meromorphic functions, thus providing clarity into the overall strategy of proof. This is one of the reasons why we believe this approach to be a nice framework for further generalizations.

More precisely, we show that patching is applicable to Berkovich analytic curves, and thus obtain a local-global principle over function fields of curves, generalizing the results of the founding paper [34]. We recall that a variety $X$ defined over a field $F$ is said to satisfy the local-global principle if there exists a family $\left(F_{i}\right)_{i}$ of fields containing $F$ (from now on referred to as overfields) such that $X(F) \neq \emptyset$ if and only if $X\left(F_{i}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $i$. We provide two possible families of overfields in this setting: one appearing quite naturally in Berkovich's theory (germs of meromorphic functions), and one of more classical nature consisting of completions of the function field. The connection between the two is a consequence of the connection between the points of a Berkovich analytic curve and the valuations that its function field can be endowed with, which we make precise.

Said local-global principle is applicable to quadratic forms. This, combined with the nice algebraic properties of local rings of Berkovich analytic curves, allows us to obtain applications on the $u$-invariant.

As a first step towards higher dimensional versions of this technique, we show that patching is possible around certain fibers of a relative Berkovich analytic curve. This way, we obtain a local-global principle over the germs of meromorphic functions on said fibers, which is applicable to quadratic forms. As before, there are two possible families of overfields: the germs of meromorphic functions on the points of the fiber, and completions of the field of meromorphic germs. In particular, we show that the latter are algebraic.

By using the theory of projective limits of schemes, we also obtain a local-global principle over function fields of algebraic curves over a larger class of ultrametric fields (which aren't necessarily complete).

## Presentation of the major directions

Local-global principle. The local-global principle first appeared in the '20s under the name Hasse-Minkowski principle, which states that a rational quadratic form has nontrivial solutions over $\mathbb{Q}$ if and only if it has non-trivial solutions over $\mathbb{R}$ and $\mathbb{Q}_{p}$ for any prime number $p$. Modern versions deal with varieties defined over a field $K$, which have
a $K$-rational point if and only if they have $K_{i}$ rational points for all $i$, where $\left(K_{i}\right)_{i}$ is a family of overfields of $K$.

The local-global principle does not always hold. Amongst the first counter-examples was one given by Reichardt and Lind, who showed that the equation $2 Y^{2}=X^{4}-17 Z^{4}$ has solutions over all the completions of $\mathbb{Q}$, but no rational solutions. There have since been found many other counter-examples. Determining for which fields, overfields, and varieties there is a local-global principle and studying the obstructions to this property has been an active area of research for decades (see for example [9] and [51]).

The development of arithmetic geometry brought powerful new techniques to the picture, causing the main focus to shift upon questions that have some geometrical meaning. More precisely, using the notation above, $K$ is taken to be the function field of some algebraic variety, and the family of overfields are interpreted in a geometrical setting. So far, known results cover only special cases, with the majority concerning curves (see e.g. [34] and [39]). Moreover, typically, the family of overfields is one of completions of $K$ with respect to discrete valuations (which can be read from a "fine enough" model of the curve).

A particular class of varieties that behaves well with respect to the local-global principle is the class of homogeneous varieties over certain linear algebraic groups (e.g. see [16] for a survey). We recall that given a field $F$, a variety $X / F$ is said to be homogeneous over a linear algebraic group $G / F$ if $G$ acts on $X$ and the group $G(\bar{F})$ acts transitively on the set $X(\bar{F})$, where $\bar{F}$ is an algebraic closure of $F$. For example, it was shown in [9] that, under certain additional conditions, the only obstruction to a local-global principle for homogeneous varieties is the so-called Brauer-Manin obstruction introduced by Manin in [51].

A new approach to local-global principles for homogeneous varieties over function fields of curves defined over complete discretely valued fields was introduced by Harbater, Hartmann, and Krashen in [34] via patching.

Patching. Patching techniques were introduced as one of the main approaches to inverse Galois theory. Originally of purely formal and geometric nature, this method provided a way to obtain a global Galois covering from local ones, see for example [32]. This is how the inverse Galois problem for $\mathbb{Q}_{p}(T)$, where $p$ is a prime number, was shown to have an affirmative answer. Formal patching was translated to rigid geometry by Liu in [50]. Another example is [61], where Poineau used patching on analytic curves in the Berkovich sense and consequently generalized results shown by Harbater in [30] and [31].

In [33], Harbater and Hartmann combined formal patching with algebraic patching in the sense of $[\mathbf{4 0}]$, and this way extended the technique to structures over fields, while constructing a setup of heavily algebraic flavor. Since then, patching over fields has seen many applications and is the crucial ingredient in an ongoing series of papers (see e.g. [34], [35], [39], [36], [17]).

One of the main points of focus of these works are local-global principles over function fields of algebraic curves defined over complete discretely valued fields. Namely, it was this form of patching that provided a new approach to the local-global principles of homogeneous varieties over certain linear algebraic groups (for example see [34] and [39]).

In particular, in [34], Harbater, Hartmann, and Krashen (from now on referred to as HHK) obtained local-global principles for quadratic forms and results on the $u$-invariant,
generalizing those of Parimala and Suresh [58], which were proven through different methods. Another source for results on the $u$-invariant is Leep's article [47]. In [34], the authors apply the obtained local-global principles also to central simple algebras.

Let us briefly describe the overfields appearing in the local-global principles proven in $[\mathbf{3 4}]$. Let $k$ be a complete discretely valued field, and $k^{\circ}$ the corresponding valuation ring. Let $\pi$ denote a uniformizer of $k^{\circ}$. Let $C / k$ be an algebraic curve. Let $\mathcal{C}$ be a normal irreducible projective flat model of $C$ over $k^{\circ}$ with special fiber $\mathcal{C}_{s}$. Let $F$ denote the function field of $\mathcal{C}$ (and hence of $C$ ). For any point $P \in \mathcal{C}_{s}$, set $R_{P}=\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{C}, P}$. We denote by $\widehat{R_{P}}$ the completion of the local ring $R_{P}$ with respect to its maximal ideal. Set $F_{P}=$ Frac $\widehat{R_{P}}$. Let $U$ be a strict subset of an irreducible component of $\mathcal{C}_{s}$. Set $R_{U}=\bigcap_{P \in U} R_{P}$. We denote by $\widehat{R_{U}}$ the $\pi$-adic completion of $R_{U}$. Set $F_{U}=$ Frac $\widehat{R_{U}}$.

Let $\mathcal{P}$ be any finite set of closed points of $\mathcal{C}_{s}$ containing all points at which the different irreducible components of $\mathcal{C}_{s}$ intersect. Let $\mathcal{U}$ be the set of connected components of $\mathcal{C}_{s} \backslash \mathcal{P}$. Then, the overfields in question are $\left\{F_{P}, F_{U}: P \in \mathcal{P}, U \in \mathcal{U}\right\}$. More precisely, HHK show that for a variety $X / F$ satisfying certain conditions:

$$
X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(F_{P}\right) \neq \emptyset, X\left(F_{U}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } P \in \mathcal{P}, U \in \mathcal{U}
$$

See subsection 3.3.2 for a somewhat more detailed account of the local-global principle of [34].

For a survey on the historic development of different variants of patching, see [37]. We have adapted field patching to the setting of Berkovich spaces.

Berkovich spaces. Tate's study of elliptic curves with bad reduction over $\mathbb{Q}_{p}$ in the '60s led to him developing the first approach to non-Archimedean analytic geometry, the so-called rigid geometry $([\mathbf{6 3}])$. Since $\mathbb{Q}_{p}$ is totally disconnected as a topological space, the naive approach of defining analytic functions to be locally given by convergent power series does not work because we wind up with too many analytic functions. An example of this is the function $f: \mathbb{Q}_{p} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$, given by

$$
f(x)= \begin{cases}0, & \text { if }|x|_{p} \leqslant 1 \\ 1, & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

which would be analytic. In order to avoid this issue, Tate allows only certain opens and certain covers. Consequently, rigid spaces don't possess a genuine topology, but only a Grothendieck one.

Since then, there have been several other approaches to non-Archimedean analytic geometry: Raynaud's theory of formal models, Berkovich spaces, and Huber's adic geometry.

Developped in the late '80s (see [6]), Berkovich's approach was originally motivated by questions in spectral theory. Roughly speaking, Berkovich spaces are obtained by adding points to rigid spaces. This way one obtains topological spaces with nice properties such as local compactness and local arcwise-connectedness. As a consequence, these objects can be thought of geometrically. As opposed to rigid geometry, Berkovich spaces can also be defined over trivially valued fields.

An analogy can be drawn with the classical complex setting: analytic functions over certain analytic domains are convergent power series, there is a maximum modulus principle, a principle of analytic continuation, and GAGA-type theorems. There is also an analogy with algebraic geometry in the sense that Berkovich spaces, just like schemes,
have building blocks. The latter are called affinoid spaces. The main difference between these two settings (the algebraic and Berkovich analytic one) is that the building blocks of Berkovich spaces are compact, meaning also Hausdorff, so not always open. This is also a source of many difficulties in Berkovich's theory, seeing as there isn't a basis of open neighborhoods for which the sheaf of analytic functions is easy to describe.

Since its appearance, the theory of Berkovich spaces has been extended in several directions (e.g. Berkovich spaces over $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{5 9}]$ ), and many applications have been obtained, most of which, thanks to the GAGA theorems, to arithmetic geometry. These include: dynamical systems, the theory of $p$-adic dessins d'enfants, Bruhat-Tits buildings, inverse Galois theory, etc. See [23] and [19] for more. Recently, connections have been made between Berkovich's theory and other domains such as tropical geometry (e.g. [2]) and model theory (e.g. [38]).

## Organization of the manuscript

The first chapter is dedicated to an introduction of the theory of Berkovich spaces. In Chapter 2, field patching is extended to a general formal setup that corresponds to Berkovich spaces. Chapter 3 deals with patching over Berkovich analytic curves and the corresponding applications to the local-global principle; its contents gave rise to an article titled "Patching over Berkovich Curves and Quadratic Forms", see [54]. Lastly, in Chapter 4, we show patching to be possible around certain fibers of relative analytic curves and obtain local-global principles as a consequence; the contents of this chapter will be the topic of an upcoming paper.

Here is a more detailed description of the organization of this manuscript.

## Chapter 1: Introduction to Berkovich Spaces.

This chapter is aimed at giving an introduction to the theory of Berkovich spaces with the purpose of making the manuscript more self-contained. We give an overview of the construction of these objects starting from the basic algebraic setup on which it relies. The latter is a generalization by Berkovich of the algebraic counterpart of Tate's rigid geometry (more precisely, a generalization of the theory of Tate affinoid algebras).

A point of particular focus is the case of analytic curves, which is, arguably, the class of Berkovich spaces that is best understood, and also of most interest to us. We show some properties for them that will be needed for the next chapters. In particular, their graph-like structure gives rise to nice topological properties, which we use throughout the manuscript.

Another point of focus is the sheaf of meromorphic functions, which is crucial for the work presented in this manuscript seeing as patching is interpreted as the gluing of meromorphic functions over certain Berkovich spaces. Its construction is similar to the sheaf of meromorphic functions for schemes and so are the properties it satisfies.

We also provide a detailed description of a typical example of a Berkovich space, the analytic affine line $\mathbb{A}^{1, \text { an }}$, and its points (see section 1.2 and subsection 1.8.4). For a complete ultrametric field $(k,|\cdot|), \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is the set of all the multiplicative semi-norms on $k[T]$ extending the norm of $k$. In particular, $k$ is embedded in $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ via $a \mapsto|\cdot|_{a}$, where for any polynomial $P(T) \in k[T],|P(T)|_{a}:=|P(a)|$. The set $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is endowed with a topology of pointwise convergence.

The analytic affine line has a tree-like structure with infinite branching. The following is an illustration of this Berkovich analytic space. By adding an " $\infty$ " point to the tree, we obtain the analytic projective line $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. The $k$-points are situated in the extremities of the tree, or in other words, they are leaves of the tree. Of particular importance to us will be the non-extremal points where there is no branching (an example of such a point is given by $x$ in Figure 1).


Figure 1: $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$
Most of the results of this chapter are well-known in the field and we only provide references for them. Others are more specialized and, to our knowledge, not found in the litterature, so we give proofs.

## Chapter 2: Patching.

The general abstract setup for patching is the following.
Let the diagram below be a tower of fields. Suppose we are given algebraic structures $\mathcal{A}_{1}$ and $\mathcal{A}_{2}$ over $F_{1}$ and $F_{2}$, respectively. The goal is to find conditions under which they induce an algebraic structure of the same kind over $F_{1} \cap F_{2}$. Typically, these algebraic structures are $F_{1}$, resp. $F_{2}$-rational points of some variety defined over the smaller field $F$. Another example would be zero-cycles of degree one.


We focus on the case where these algebraic structures are rational points of some variety $H / F$. If $\mathcal{A}_{1}$ and $\mathcal{A}_{2}$ are compatible over $F_{0}$, then they lift to $F_{1} \cap F_{2}$. However, if this is not the case, then we can't in general lift them to $F_{1} \cap F_{2}$. One way of approaching this problem is to find a way to render the rational points compatible on $F_{0}$.

Ideally, there exists a linear algebraic group $G / F$ acting on $H$ in such a way that these rational points (or more generally, algebraic structures) can always be altered just enough via the action of $G$ in order to be made compatible over $F_{0}$. To make this work, we need not only a special action of $G$ on $H$ (which we give in Definition 3.2.1), but also that $G$ itself satisfy certain conditions. The latter is the point of interest of this chapter; let us now make it more precise.

Let $G / F$ be a linear algebraic group. The condition we need for the setup above is the following: for any $g \in G\left(F_{0}\right)$, there exist $g_{i} \in G\left(F_{i}\right), i=1,2$, such that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0}\right)$. To see this, suppose $g$ is such that $g \cdot \mathcal{A}_{2}=\mathcal{A}_{1}$ in $H\left(F_{0}\right)$. Set $\mathcal{A}_{1}^{\prime}:=g_{1}^{-1} \cdot \mathcal{A}_{1} \in H\left(F_{1}\right)$ and $\mathcal{A}_{2}^{\prime}:=g_{2} \cdot \mathcal{A}_{2} \in H\left(F_{2}\right)$. Then, by construction, $\mathcal{A}_{1}^{\prime}=\mathcal{A}_{2}^{\prime}$ in $H\left(F_{0}\right)$, so they lift to $F_{1} \cap F_{2}$. The existence of an element $g \in G\left(F_{0}\right)$ satisfying $g \cdot \mathcal{A}_{2}=\mathcal{A}_{1}$ is at the source of a hypothesis we will adopt on the action of $G$ over $H$ (see Definition 3.2.1).

From now on, we will refer to the "matrix decomposition" property of the paragraph above as patching. The following class of linear algebraic groups will be shown to satisfy patching (with a certain choice of fields appearing in the tower above).

Definition. A linear algebraic group $G / F$ is said to be rational (over $F$ ) if there exists a Zariski open subset of $G$ isomorphic to a Zariski open subset of $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$ for some $n \in \mathbb{N}$.

We fix a general formal setup (Setting 2.1.1) over which we show the main result of this chapter (see Theorem 2.1.10). The latter is fundamental to patching. It is a generalization of [34, Theorem 3.2]. The main difference is that the objects considered in loc.cit. are defined over a complete discretely valued field, whereas we don't require the discretness assumption. A rather direct consequence is that patching is true in a Zariski neighborhood of the identity of $G$. The proof (and statement) of Theorem 2.1.10 is of very technical nature, and follows the main lines of the proof of [34, Theorem 3.2].

The interest of the formal setting over which we work is that it is realised in a natural (and very geometrical) way in Berkovich's theory.

In particular, we show that in a special case of Setting 2.1.1, which is realised by Berkovich analytic curves, Theorem 2.1.10 can be strengthened to show that patching is true in $G$ (Theorem 2.2.3). This is the fundamental tool to showing that patching is possible over Berkovich analytic curves.

## Chapter 3: Patching over Berkovich Curves and Quadratic Forms.

In this chapter we show that patching is possible over Berkovich analytic curves and that it can be interpreted as the gluing of meromorphic functions. More concretely, we show that the fields $F_{i}$ of diagram (1) can be chosen to be fields of meromorphic functions of certain parts (called analytic domains) of an analytic curve. We then use this to prove a local-global principle and provide applications to quadratic forms and the $u$-invariant. The results we obtain generalize those of [34].

Before presenting the main results of this chapter, let us introduce some terminology.
Definition (HHK). Let $K$ be a field. Let $X$ be a $K$-variety, and $G$ a linear algebraic group over $K$. We say that $G$ acts strongly transitively on $X$ if $G$ acts on $X$, and for any field extension $L / K$, either $X(L)=\emptyset$ or $G(L)$ acts transitively on $X(L)$.

In general, asking that $G$ act strongly transitively on $X$ is more restrictive than asking that $X$ be homogeneous over $G$. However, it is shown in [34, Remark 3.9] that if $G$ is a reductive linear algebraic group over $K$ and $X / K$ is a projective variety, then the two notions are equivalent.

Our main results, the local-global principles we show, are:
Theorem. Let $k$ be a complete non-trivially valued ultrametric field. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible projective $k$-algebraic curve. Denote by $F$ the function field of $C$. Let $X$ be an $F$-variety, and $G$ a connected rational linear algebraic group over $F$ acting strongly transitively on $X$.

Let $V(F)$ be the set of all non-trivial rank 1 valuations on $F$ which either extend the valuation of $k$ or are trivial when restricted to $k$.

Denote by $C^{\text {an }}$ the Berkovich analytification of $C$, so that $F=\mathscr{M}\left(C^{\text {an }}\right)$, where $\mathscr{M}$ denotes the sheaf of meromorphic functions on $C^{\text {an }}$. Then, the following local-global principles hold:

- (Theorem 3.2.11) $X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in C^{\text {an }}$.
- (Corollary 3.2.18) If char $k=0$ or $X$ is a smooth variety, then:

$$
X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(F_{v}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } v \in V(F)
$$

where $F_{v}$ denotes the completion of $F$ with respect to $v$.
The statement above remains true for affinoid curves if $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, where $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$ denotes the divisible closure of the value group $\left|k^{\times}\right|$. Being a local-global principle with respect to completions, the second equivalence evokes some resemblance to more classical versions of local-global principles. The statement can be made to include trivially valued base fields, even though in this case we obtain no new information (since at least one of the overfields will be equal to $F$ ).

Remark. In order to prove our main results, we need less than strong transitivity. More precisely, it suffices to assume that for any completion $\widehat{F}$ of $F$ with respect to a valuation extending that of $k$, either $X(\widehat{F})=\emptyset$ or the group $G(\widehat{F})$ acts transitively on the set $X(\widehat{F})$. We may even restrict to only certain completions, namely those for which $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\stackrel{k}{ }} \widetilde{\widehat{F}}=0$ and $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left|\widehat{F}^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}=1$, where $\widetilde{k}$ resp. $\widetilde{\widehat{F}}$, is the residue field of $k$, resp. $\widehat{F}$. (These are the completions with respect to the valuations induced by the type 3 points of the curve, see Definition 1.8.1).

We recall that for any finitely generated field extension $F / k$ of transcendence degree 1 , there exists a unique normal projective $k$-algebraic curve with function field $F$. Thus, the result of the theorem above is applicable to any such field $F$.

To show the local-global principles above, we construct certain covers of curves over which patching can be realised (the so-called nice covers, see Definition 3.1.6). For this, type 3 points are crucial. A type 3 point has nice topological and algebraic properties. More precisely, an analytic curve is a real graph over which a type 3 point has arity 2 ; also, the stalk of a type 3 point is a field. In Figure 1, $x$ is a type 3 point. The existence of such points is equivalent to the condition $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, which is why Theorem 3.2.11 is first shown under this hypothesis. The result is then shown in all generality by using arguments from model theory. Here is a quick outline of the proof in the case $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$.

We recall that an affinoid domain of a Berkovich analytic space is an analytic domain (meaning the structural sheaf is well-defined over it), isomorphic to an affinoid space.

Moreover, the intersection of affinoid domains of an analytic curve (and, more generally, of any separated Berkovich analytic space) is again an affinoid domain. Let us start by introducing the crucial notion of a nice cover.

Definition (Definition 3.1.6). A finite cover $\mathcal{U}$ of a $k$-analytic curve will be called nice if:
(1) the elements of $\mathcal{U}$ are connected affinoid domains with only type 3 points in their topological boundaries;
(2) for any different $U, V \in \mathcal{U}, U \cap V=\partial U \cap \partial V$, or equivalently, $U \cap V$ is a finite set of type 3 points;
(3) for any two different elements of $\mathcal{U}$, neither is contained in the other.


Figure 2: an example of a nice cover for the Berkovich projective line
For a normal irreducible projective analytic curve $C$, let $U, V$ be connected affinoid domains of $C$ such that $U \cap V$ is a single type 3 point $\{\eta\}$. (This is a special case of a nice cover.) Then, following the notation of diagram (1), set $F=\mathscr{M}(C), F_{0}=\mathscr{M}(\{\eta\})$, $F_{1}=\mathscr{M}(U), F_{2}=\mathscr{M}(V)$. We start by showing that patching is possible with this choice of fields for any rational linear algebraic group $G / F$. This is then generalized to any nice cover of the analytic projective line. To obtain the same generalization for any normal irreducible projective analytic curve $C$, we make use of the Weil restriction of scalars in order to "descend" to the case of the projective line (as HHK do in [34]).

Finally, once patching is shown to be possible, the local-global principle of Theorem 3.2.11 is a rather direct consequence.

To obtain Corollary 3.2 .18 from Theorem 3.2.11, we establish a precise connection between the points of a Berkovich analytic curve and the valuations that its function field can be endowed with. This is done in Proposition 3.2.14. The rest is then a consequence of the nice algebraic properties of the fields $\mathscr{M}_{x}, x \in C$, namely their Henselianity.

While HHK work over models of an algebraic curve, we work directly over analytic curves. Remark that we put no restrictions on the complete valued base field $k$. Apart from the framework, this is one of the fundamental differences with Theorem 3.7 of [34], where the base field needs to be complete with respect to a discrete valuation. Another difference lies in the nature of the overfields, which here are completions or fields of meromorphic
functions. Section 4 shows that the latter contain the ones appearing in HHK's article, and thus that [ $\mathbf{3 4}$, Theorem 3.7] is a direct consequence of the local-global principle stated in Theorem 3.2.11. Moreover, we show the converse is true as well provided we choose a "fine" enough model. The proof of the theorem above is based on the patching method, but used in a different setting from the one of [34].

As a consequence of our main results, in the context of quadratic forms, we obtain the following theorem, which is a generalization of [34, Theorem 4.2]. This is because the projective variety determined by a quadratic form satisfies all of the hypotheses of Theorem 3.2.11 (including the existence of a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on it).

Theorem. Let $k$ be a complete non-trivially valued ultrametric field. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible projective $k$-algebraic curve. Denote by $F$ the function field of C. Suppose $\operatorname{char}(F) \neq 2$. Let $q$ be a quadratic form over $F$ of dimension different from 2.

Let $V(F)$ be the set of all non-trivial rank 1 valuations on $F$ which either extend the valuation of $k$ or are trivial when restricted to $k$.

Let $C^{\text {an }}$ be the Berkovich analytification of $C$, so that $F=\mathscr{M}\left(C^{\mathrm{an}}\right)$, where $\mathscr{M}$ is the sheaf of meromorphic functions on $C^{\mathrm{an}}$.
(1) (Theorem 3.4.1) The quadratic form $q$ is isotropic over $F$ if and only if it is isotropic over $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ for all $x \in C^{\text {an }}$.
(2) (Corollary 3.4.2) The quadratic form $q$ is isotropic over $F$ if and only if it is isotropic over $F_{v}$ for all $v \in V(F)$, where $F_{v}$ is the completion of $F$ with respect to $v$.

As mentioned in the introduction of [34], it is expected that for a "nice enough" field $K$ the $u$-invariant remains the same after taking finite field extensions, and that it becomes $2^{d} u(K)$ after taking a finitely generated field extension of transcendence degree $d$. Since we work only in dimension one, this explains the motivation behind the following:

Definition. Let $K$ be a field.
(1) [Kaplansky] The $u$-invariant of $K$, denoted by $u(K)$, is the maximal dimension of anisotropic quadratic forms over $K$. We say that $u(K)=\infty$ if there exist anisotropic quadratic forms over $K$ of arbitrarily large dimension.
(2) [HHK] The strong $u$-invariant of $K$, denoted by $u_{s}(K)$, is the smallest real number $m$, such that:

- $u(E) \leqslant m$ for all finite field extensions $E / K$;
- $\frac{1}{2} u(E) \leqslant m$ for all finitely generated field extensions $E / K$ of transcendence degree 1 .
We say that $u_{s}(K)=\infty$ if there exist such field extensions $E$ of arbitrarily large $u$-invariant.

The theorem above leads to applications on the $u$-invariant. Let $k$ be a complete nonArchimedean valued field with residue field $\widetilde{k}$, such that $\operatorname{char}(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$. Suppose that either $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module with $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\times}\right|=: n$, or, more generally, that $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}=: n$, where $n$ is a non-negative integer. This is yet another difference with the corresponding results of HHK in [34], where the requirement on the base field is that it be complete discretely valued, i.e. that its value group be a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of rank 1 . We obtain an upper bound on the $u$-invariant of a finitely generated field extension of $k$ with transcendence
degree at most 1 , which depends only on $u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$ and $n$. More precisely, in terms of the strong $u$-invariant:

Corollary (Corollary 3.4.28). Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field. Suppose char $(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$.
(1) If $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}=: n, n \in \mathbb{Z}$, then $u_{s}(k) \leqslant 2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.
(2) If $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module with $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\times}\right|=: n, n \in \mathbb{Z}$, then $u_{s}(k) \leqslant 2^{n} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

Corollary 3.4.28 is a consequence of the local-global principle we obtained for quadratic forms (Theorem 3.4.1), and also of the very nice algebraic properties that the local rings of an analytic curve satisfy, especially Henselianity.

It is unknown to the author whether there is equality in the corollary above. This is true in the particular case of $n=1$ by using [34, Lemma 4.9], whose proof is independent of patching. This way we recover [34, Theorem 4.10], which is the main result of [34] on quadratic forms. It also provides one more proof that $u\left(\mathbb{Q}_{p}(T)\right)=8$, where $p$ is a prime number different from 2 , originally proven in [58].

Corollary (Corollary 3.4.30). Let $k$ be a complete discretely valued field such that $\operatorname{char}(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$. Then, $u_{s}(k)=2 u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

## Chapter 4: Patching over Analytic Fibers and the Local-Global Principle.

In this chapter we show that patching is possible "around" certain fibers of relative analytic curves. This is then applied to obtain a local-global principle over the field of overconvergent meromorphic functions on said fibers. We also show that the latter can be interpreted as the function field of a particular algebraic curve. As before, the local-global principles obtained are applicable to quadratic forms (provided the setting is one of characteristic different from 2).

The goal of this chapter is twofold:
(1) to establish the very first steps of a strategy for higher dimensional patching and the corresponding applications to the local-global principle;
(2) to generalize the results obtained in Chapter 3; more precisely, to show a localglobal principle over algebraic curves (i.e. their function fields) defined over a larger class of ultrametric fields (which aren't necessarily complete).
One of the main results we show is the following (see Theorem 4.6.8 for the exact statement):

Theorem (Theorem 4.6.8). Let $k$ be a complete non-trivially valued ultrametric field. Let $S, C$ be good $k$-analytic spaces such that $S$ is normal. Suppose that $\operatorname{dim} S<\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$. Suppose there exists a morphism $\pi: C \rightarrow S$ that makes $C$ a proper flat relative $S$-analytic curve. For any affinoid domain $Z$ of $S$, set $C_{Z}:=\pi^{-1}(Z)$, and $F_{Z}:=\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$, where $\mathscr{M}$ denotes the sheaf of meromorphic functions on C. Let $x \in S$ be such that $\mathcal{O}_{S, x}$ is a field. Let $\mathscr{F}_{x}$ denote the fiber of $x$ in $C$.

Assume there exists a connected affinoid neighboorhood $Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that: (1) all the fibers of $\pi$ on $Z_{0}$ are normal irreducible projective analytic curves; (2) $C_{Z_{0}}$ is normal; (3) $\pi_{\mid C_{Z_{0}}}: C_{Z_{0}} \rightarrow Z_{0}$ is algebraic.

Let $G / F_{Z_{0}}$ be a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on a variety $H / F_{Z_{0}}$. Then, the following local-global principle holds:

$$
H\left(\underset{x \in Z}{\lim _{\overparen{Z}}} F_{Z}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow H\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, u}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } u \in \pi^{-1}(x),
$$

where the direct limit is taken with respect to connected affinoid neighborhoods $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$.

Remark that the direct limit appearing on the left side of the local-global principle above is the field of germs of meromorphic functions on the fiber of $x$ in $C$.

We work only over fibers of points for which the local ring is a field. The set of such points is dense. In fact, in the case of curves, if $x$ is any point that is not rigid (see Definition 1.5.10; rigid points are those that we see in rigid spaces), then $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field. Although this might not appear explicitely during the chapter, the reason behind this hypothesis is that to make the transition from Chapter 2 to patching "around" the fiber, we need the fiber to not be a divisor.

To show Theorem 4.6.8, as fibers of an analytic relative curve are endowed with the structure of an analytic curve, we follow a similar line of reasoning as in the onedimensional case. However, there are many additional technical difficulties that appear in this relative setting. Here is a brief outline of the proof.

We construct particular covers of a neighborhood of the fiber over which patching is possible (the so-called relative nice covers); this is a relative analogue of nice covers as introduced in Chapter 3. We first treat the case of $\mathbb{P}_{S}^{1, \text { an }}$ - the relative projective analytic line over $S$. To do this, we use the notion of thickening of an affinoid domain, the idea for which (in the case of $\mathbb{P}^{1, a n}$ ) appears in some unpublished notes of Jérôme Poineau. Given an affinoid domain $U$ in the fiber $\mathscr{F}_{x}$ of $x$ in $\mathbb{P}_{S}^{1, \text { an }}$, a $Z$-thickening of $U$ is an affinoid domain $U_{Z}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ such that $U_{Z} \cap \mathscr{F}_{x}=U$, where $Z$ is an affinoid neighborhood of $x$ in $S$. Thickenings of affinoid domains of $\mathscr{F}_{x}$ exist and have good properties provided we choose $Z$ small enough.

Let $\mathcal{U}$ be any nice cover of the fiber $\mathscr{F}_{x}$. Then, there exists an affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$ such that for any $U \in \mathcal{U}$, the $Z$-thickening $U_{Z}$ of $U$ exists. Let $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ denote the set of these $Z$-thickenings of the elements of $\mathcal{U}$. We show that for a small enough $Z, \mathcal{U}_{Z}$ satisfies the necessary properties for the results of Chapter 2 to be applicable. In that case, $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ is said to be a $Z$-relative nice cover of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$. In particular, we remark that type 3 points play once again an important role. Their existence on the fiber is guaranteed by the hypothesis on the dimension of $S$. We then show that patching can be applied to relative nice covers in the case of $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$.

By using pullbacks of finite morphisms towards $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$, a notion of relative nice cover can be constructed more generally for the case of normal relative proper curves. By adding to this the Weil restriction of scalars, patching is shown to be possible over relative nice covers in this more general framework as well.

Finally, once patching is shown to be possible around the fiber, the local-global principle of Theorem 4.6.8 can be obtained as a consequence, albeit not as direct as in the one-dimensional case.

There is a connection between the points of the fiber and the valuations that the field of its overconvergent meromorphic functions can be endowed with. We make this precise in Proposition 4.6.6. As in the one-dimensional case, combined with the Henselianity of the fields $\mathscr{M}_{C, z}, \pi(z)=x$, this connection allows us to obtain a local-global principle with respect to completions. Before stating this result precisely, let us recall that the field $\mathcal{O}_{S, x}$ is naturally endowed with a valuation $|\cdot|_{x}$.

Theorem (Theorem 4.6.8'). Using the same notation as in the statement of Theorem 4.6.8 above, set $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=\underline{\lim }_{Z} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$. Let $V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$ denote the set of non-trivial rank 1 valuations on $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ which induce either $|\cdot|_{x}$ or the trivial valuation on $\mathcal{O}_{x}$. For $v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$, let $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}$ denote the completion of the field $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ with respect to $v$.

If char $k=0$ or $H$ is smooth, then the following local-global principle holds:

$$
H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)
$$

Remark that, with the same notation as in the theorem above, $\mathcal{O}_{S, x}=\underset{\rightarrow}{\lim } \mathcal{O}_{S}(Z)$, where the direct limit is taken with respect to affinoid neighborhoods $Z$ of $x$ in $S$. Using Grothendieck's work on projective limits of schemes to construct a relative algebraic curve over $\mathcal{O}(Z)$ from an algebraic curve over $\mathcal{O}_{x}$, as a consequence of the theorem above, we obtain the following generalization of Corollary 3.2.18.

Theorem (Theorem 4.6.9). Let $S$ be a good normal $k$-analytic space such that $\operatorname{dim} S<$ $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$. Let $x \in S$ be such that $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field. Let $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ be a smooth geometrically irreducible algebraic curve over the field $\mathcal{O}_{x}$. Let $\mathcal{F}_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ denote the function field of $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$.

Let $G / F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ be a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on a variety $H / F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$. Then, if char $k=0$ or $H$ is smooth:

$$
H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)
$$

where $V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$ is given as in Theorem 4.6.8' above.
A crucial element for showing Theorem 4.6.9, and more generally, to highlight the interest of this chapter, is that, in the setting of Theorem 4.6.8, meromorphic functions around the fiber of $x$ are algebraic. More precisely, the field of overconvergent meromorphic functions on the fiber of $x$ is the function field of an algebraic curve over $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ (which is basically an "algebraization" of a neighborhood of the fiber succeeded by a base change to $\mathcal{O}_{x}$; see Corollary 4.4.15). To show this non-trivial result, we use GAGA-type theorems for the sheaf of meromorphic functions (see Theorem 1.7.8).

At the end of this chapter we provide some examples of local rings of analytic spaces that are fields and over which the results above can be applied. More precisely, we calculate the stalks of the points of $\mathbb{A}^{1, a n}$ for which the corresponding local ring is a field. In addition to that, we also give a description of the stalk of a certain point of $\mathbb{A}^{n, \text { an }}, n \in \mathbb{N}$. Here is an example of such a field, corresponding to a type 3 point of the analytic affine line.

Example. Let $(k,|\cdot|)$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$. Let $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ be a multiplicative semi-norm on $k[T]$ such that $|T|_{x}=r$ (in fact, $x$ is the unique such point of $\left.\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}\right)$.

For any $r_{1}, r_{2} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$ such that $r_{1}<r<r_{2}$, set

$$
A_{r_{1}, r_{2}}:=\left\{\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n} T^{n}: a_{n} \in k, \lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{n}\right| r_{2}^{n}=0, \lim _{n \rightarrow-\infty}\left|a_{n}\right| r_{1}^{n}=0\right\} .
$$

Then, $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}, x}=\underline{\lim }_{r_{1}<r<r_{2}} A_{r_{1}, r_{2}}$.
As in Chapter 3, seeing as the projective variety determined by a quadratic form satisfies the hypotheses of the results presented, the prime example to which the statements of this chapter can be applied is the case of quadratic forms (under the assumption char $k \neq 2$ ).

## Introduction (in French)

Dans cette thèse nous utilisons le langage de la théorie de Berkovich pour démontrer des résultats sur le principe local-global et obtenons des applications aux formes quadratiques et à un invariant qui leur est lié. Pour ce faire, nous utilisons l'outil fondamental du recollement. Cette technique admet déjà plusieurs applications, et apparaît récemment comme l'ingrédient principal dans une série d'articles en cours. Nous étendons le recollement d'un cadre algébrique au cadre des espaces de Berkovich.

En adoptant ce point de vue, le recollement acquiert une nature très géométrique : il peut s'interpréter comme le recollement faisceautique de fonctions méromorphes, éclairant ainsi la stratégie globale de preuve. Ceci nous laisse penser que cette approche est propice à des généralisations futures.

Plus précisément, nous montrons que le recollement peut s'appliquer aux courbes analytiques de Berkovich, et obtenons ainsi un principe local-global sur les corps de fonctions de telles courbes, généralisant de cette façon les résultats de l'article fondateur [34]. Nous rappelons qu'une variété $X$ définie sur un corps $F$ satisfait le principe local-global s'il existe une famille $\left(F_{i}\right)_{i}$ de corps contenant $F$ (qu'on appelera des surcorps) telle que $X(F) \neq \emptyset$ si et seulement si $X\left(F_{i}\right) \neq \emptyset$ pour tout $i$. Nous définissons deux familles de surcorps : une qui apparaît très naturellement dans la théorie de Berkovich (des germes de fonctions méromorphes), et une de nature plus classique constituée de complétés du corps de fonctions. Nous établissons une connexion entre ces deux familles en rendant précis le lien qui existe entre les points d'une courbe analytique de Berkovich et les valuations dont on peut munir son corps de fonctions.

Le principe local-global obtenu peut s'appliquer aux formes quadratiques. Ceci, combiné avec les bonnes propriétés algébriques des anneaux locaux d'une courbe analytique de Berkovich, nous permet d'obtenir des application à l'u-invariant.

Comme premier pas vers des versions en dimension supérieure de cette technique, nous montrons que le recollement est possible autour de certaines fibres d'une courbe relative analytique de Berkovich. Ainsi, nous obtenons un principe local-global sur les germes de fonctions méromorphes sur ces fibres, qui peut de nouveau s'appliquer aux formes quadratiques. Comme précédemment, il y a deux familles possibles de surcorps : les germes de fonctions méromorphes en les points de la fibre, et des complétés du corps des germes méromorphes. En particulier, nous montrons que ces derniers sont algébriques.

En utilisant la théorie des limites projectives de schémas, nous obtenons aussi un principe local-global sur le corps de fonctions d'une courbe algébrique définie sur des corps ultramétriques qui ne sont pas nécessairement complets.

## Présentation des directions majeures

Principe local-global. Le principe local-global est apparu pour la première fois dans les années '20 sous le nom de principe de Hasse-Minkowski, et énonce alors qu'une forme
quadratique rationnelle a une solution non triviale sur $\mathbb{Q}$ si et seulement si elle a des solutions non triviales sur $\mathbb{R}$ et $\mathbb{Q}_{p}$ pour tout nombre premier $p$. Les versions modernes traitent plus généralement de variétés définies sur un corps $K$ qui ont un point $K$-rationnel si et seulement si elles ont des points $K_{i}$-rationnels poir tout $i$, où $\left(K_{i}\right)_{i}$ est une famille de surcorps de $K$.

Le principe local-global n'est pas toujours vrai. Parmi les premiers contre-exemples historiques, mentionnons celui obtenu par Reichardt et Lind, qui ont montré que l'équation $2 Y^{2}=X^{4}-17 Z^{4}$ a des solutions sur tous les complétés de $\mathbb{Q}$, mais pas de solutions rationnelles. Depuis, beaucoup d'autres contre-exemples ont été trouvés. Détérminer pour quels corps, surcorps et variétés il y a un principe local-global et étudier les obstructions à cette propriété a été un domaine actif de recherche depuis des décennies (cf. par exemple [9] et [51]).

Le dévelopement de la géométrie arithmétique a apporté de nouvelles techniques puissantes qui s'appliquent à l'étude du principe local-global, mettant ainsi au premier plan des questions possédant un sens géométrique. Plus précisement, en utilisant la même notation que précédemment, $K$ est le corps de fonction d'une variété algébrique, et la famille de surcorps est interprétée dans un cadre géométrique. Jusqu'à présent, les résultats connus ne couvrent que des cas spécifiques, la majorité concernant les courbes (cf. par exemple [34] et [39]). De plus, en général, la famille de surcorps considérée contient des complétés de $K$ par rapport à des valuations discrètes (qui peuvent se lire sur un modèle "assez fin" de la courbe).

Une classe particulière de variétés qui se comportent bien par rapport au principe local-global est celle des variétés homogènes sous certains groupes linéaires algébriques (voir e.g. [16] pour une brève exposition du sujet). Nous rappelons qu'étant donné un corps $F$, une variété $X / F$ est dite homogène sous un groupe linéaire algébrique $G / F$ si $G$ agit sur $X$ et si le groupe $G(\bar{F})$ agit transitivement sur l'ensemble $X(\bar{F})$, où $\bar{F}$ est une clôture algébrique de $F$. Il a été démontré dans [9] que, sous certaines conditions additionnelles, la seule obstruction au principe local-global pour les variétés homogènes est l'obstruction de Brauer-Manin introduite par Manin dans [51].

Une nouvelle approche au principe local-global pour les variétés homogènes sur des corps de fonctions de courbes définies sur des corps complets discrètement valués a été introduite par Harbater, Hartmann et Krashen dans [34] via le recollement.

Le recollement. La méthode de recollement a été introduite comme une des approches principales à la théorie inverse de Galois. Originellement de nature formelle et géométrique, cette technique a fourni une façon d'obtenir un revêtement galoisien global à partir de revêtements locaux (voir par exemple [32]). Par cette technique, il a été démontré que le problème inverse de Galois pour $\mathbb{Q}_{p}(T)$, où $p$ est un nombre premier, admet une réponse affirmative. Le recollement formel a été traduit dans le langage de la géométrie rigide par Liu dans [50]. Un autre exemple est [61], où Poineau utilise le recollement sur des courbes analytiques au sens de Berkovich et généralise ainsi les résultats montrés par Harbater dans [30] et [31].

Dans [33], Harbater et Hartmann ont combiné le recollement formel avec le recollement algébrique au sens de [40], et ont ainsi étendu la technique aux structures définies sur des corps, en construisant un cadre de nature très algébrique. Depuis, le recollement sur les corps a trouvé de nombreuses applications et est l'ingrédient crucial dans une série d'articles en cours (voir par exemple [34], [35], [39], [36], [17]).

Parmi les principaux problèmes abordés dans ces travaux, on retrouve les principes locaux-globaux sur des corps de fonctions de courbes algébriques définies sur des corps complets discrètement valués. C'est cette forme de recollement qui a fourni une nouvelle approche au principe local-global pour les variétés homogènes sous certains groupes linéaires algébriques (voir par exemple [34] et [39]).

En particulier, dans [34], Harbater, Hartmann et Krashen (abrégé par la suite en HHK) obtiennent un principe local-global pour les formes quadratiques et des résultats sur l' $u$-invariant, généralisant ainsi ceux de Parimala et Suresh [58], qui ont été montrés en utilisant d'autres méthodes. Une autre source pour des résultats sur l'u-invariant est l'article [47] de Leep. Dans [34], les auteurs appliquent aussi les résultats locaux-globaux obtenus aux algèbres centrales simples.

Décrivons brièvement les surcorps qui apparaissent dans les principes locaux-globaux démontrés dans [34]. Soit $k$ un corps complet discrètement valué, et $k^{\circ}$ l'anneau de valuation correspondant. Soit $\pi$ une uniformisante de $k^{\circ}$. Soit $C / k$ une courbe algébrique. Soit $\mathcal{C}$ un modèle plat normal irréductible projectif de $C$ sur $k^{\circ}$ avec fibre spéciale $\mathcal{C}_{s}$. On note avec $F$ le corps de fonctions de $\mathcal{C}$ (et donc de $C$ ). Pour tout point $P \in \mathcal{C}_{s}$, soit $R_{P}=\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{C}, P}$. On note par $\widehat{R_{P}}$ le complété de l'anneau local $R_{P}$ par rapport à son idéal maximal. Soit $F_{P}=$ Frac $\widehat{R_{P}}$. Soit $U$ un sous-ensemble propre d'une composante irréductible de $\mathcal{C}_{s}$. Soit $R_{U}=\bigcap_{P \in U} R_{P}$. On note $\widehat{R_{U}}$ le complété $\pi$-adique de $R_{U}$. Soit $F_{U}=\operatorname{Frac} \widehat{R_{U}}$.

Soit $\mathcal{P}$ un ensemble fini de points fermés de $\mathcal{C}_{s}$ contenant tous les points d'intersection des composantes irréductibles de $\mathcal{C}_{s}$. Soit $\mathcal{U}$ l'ensemble des composantes connexes de $\mathcal{C}_{s} \backslash \mathcal{P}$. Alors les surcorps en question sont $\left\{F_{P}, F_{U}: P \in \mathcal{P}, U \in \mathcal{U}\right\}$. Plus précisement, HHK montrent que pour une variété $X / F$ satisfaisant certaines conditions :

$$
X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(F_{P}\right) \neq \emptyset, X\left(F_{U}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { pour tout } P \in \mathcal{P}, U \in \mathcal{U}
$$

Voir la sous-section 3.3.2 pour plus de détails sur le principe local-global de [34].
Pour un survol sur le développement historique des différentes versions du recollement, voir [37]. Nous avons adapté le recollement sur les corps au cadre des espaces de Berkovich.

Les espaces de Berkovich. L'étude de Tate des courbes elliptiques avec mauvaise réduction sur $\mathbb{Q}_{p}$ dans les années ' 60 a mené au développement d'une première approche à la géométrie analytique non-archimédienne, appelée géométrie rigide ([63]). Comme $\mathbb{Q}_{p}$ est totalement discontinu en tant qu'espace topologique, l'approche naïve de définir une fonction analytique comme étant localement développable en série entière ne fonctionne pas : on obtiendrait trop de fonctions. Par exemple, la fonction $f: \mathbb{Q}_{p} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$, définie par

$$
f(x)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
0, \text { si }|x|_{p} \leqslant 1 \\
1, \text { sinon }
\end{array}\right.
$$

serait alors analytique. Pour éviter ce problème, Tate ne permet que certains ouverts et recouvrements. Par conséquent, les espaces rigides ne sont pas dotés d'une vraie topologie, mais seulement d'une topologie de Grothendieck.

Depuis, il y a eu plusieurs autres approches à la géométrie analytique non-archimédienne : la théorie de Raynaud des modèles formels, les espaces de Berkovich et la géométrie adique de Huber.

Developpée à la fin des années ' 80 (voir [6]), l'approche de Berkovich a originellement été motivée par des question de théorie spectrale. Grossièrement, les espaces de Berkovich
sont obtenus en ajoutant des points aux espaces rigides. De cette manière on obtient des espaces topologiques avec de bonnes propriétés comme la compacité locale et la connexité par arcs locale. Par conséquent, on peut penser à ces objets géométriquement. Contrairement à la géométrie rigide, les espaces de Berkovich peuvent aussi être définis sur des corps trivialement valués.

Une analogie peut être établie avec le cadre classique complexe : les fonctions analytiques sur certains domaines analytiques sont des séries entières convergentes, il existe un principe de prolongement analytique, ainsi que des théorèmes du type GAGA. On peut aussi observer un parallèle avec la géométrie algébrique dans le sens où les espaces de Berkovich, comme les schémas, sont construits à partir de blocs de base. Ces derniers sont appelés espaces affinoïdes. La différence principale entre ces deux cadres (algébrique et Berkovich) est que les blocs de base des espaces de Berkovich sont compacts, donc aussi Hausdorff, et par conséquent pas toujours ouverts. Ceci est une source de nombreuses difficultés dans la théorie de Berkovich, puisqu'il n'y a pas de base d'ouverts pour lesquels on peut décrire facilement le faisceau de fonctions analytiques.

Depuis son apparition, la théorie des espaces de Berkovich a trouvé plusieurs applications, la plupart, grâce aux théorèmes GAGA, à la géométrie arithmétique, et a été étendue dans plusieurs directions (par exemple les espaces de Berkovich sur $\mathbb{Z}[59]$ ). Celles-ci incluent : les systèmes dynamiques, la théorie des dessins d'enfants $p$-adiques, les immeubles de Bruhat-Tits, la théorie inverse de Galois, etc. Voir [23] et [19] pour plus d'exemples. Récemment, des connexions ont été établies entre la théorie de Berkovich et d'autres domaines comme la géométrie tropicale (e.g. [2]) et la théorie de modèles (e.g. [38]).

## Organisation du manuscrit

Le premier chapitre est dédié à l'introduction de la théorie des espaces de Berkovich. Dans le chapitre 2 , le recollement sur les corps est étendu à un cadre général formel qui correspond aux espaces de Berkovich. Le chapitre 3 traite du recollement sur les courbes analytiques de Berkovich et de ses applications au principe local-global ; son contenu a donné lieu à un article intitulé "Patching over Berkovich Curves and Quadratic Forms", voir [54]. Finalement, dans le chapitre 4, nous montrons que le recollement est possible autour de certaines fibres de courbes analytiques relatives et en déduisons des principes locaux-globaux ; le contenu de ce chapitre sera le sujet d'un futur article.

Voici une description plus détaillée de l'organisation de ce manuscrit.
Chapitre 1 : Introduction aux espaces de Berkovich.
Ce chapitre a comme but de donner une introduction à la théorie des espaces de Berkovich afin de rendre le manuscrit plus auto-suffisant. Nous donnons un rappel rapide de la construction des principaux objets qui interviennent dans cette théorie en commençant par le cadre algébrique sur lequel elle se base. Ce dernier est une généralisation par Berkovich du pendant algébrique de la géométrie rigide de Tate (plus précisement, une généralisation de la théorie des algèbres affinoïdes de Tate).

Nous nous attardons particulièrement sur le cas des courbes analytiques, qui est sans doute la famille d'espaces de Berkovich la mieux comprise, ainsi que celle qui présente le plus d'intérêt pour nous. Nous en montrons quelques propriétés qui nous seront nécessaires dans les chapitres suivants. En particulier, leur structure de graphe est source de nombreuses bonnes propriétés topologiques, que nous utiliserons dans ce manuscrit.

Un autre point important que nous traitons est le faisceau des fonctions méromorphes, qui est crucial pour le travail presenté ici vu que le recollement est interprété comme le recollement de fonctions méromorphes sur certains espaces de Berkovich. Sa construction, ainsi que les propriétés qu'il satisfait, sont similaires à celles du faisceau de fonctions méromorphes sur les schémas.

Nous donnons aussi une description d'un exemple typique d'espace de Berkovich, la droite analytique affine $\mathbb{A}^{1, \text { an }}$, et de ses points (voir la section 1.2 et la sous-section 1.8.4). Pour un corps ultramétrique complet $(k,|\cdot|), \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text {,an }}$ est l'ensemble des semi-normes multiplicatives sur $k[T]$ qui étendent la norme de $k$. En particulier, $k$ se plonge dans $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text {,an }}$ via $a \mapsto|\cdot|_{a}$, où pour tout polynôme $P(T) \in k[T],|P(T)|_{a}:=|P(a)|$. L'ensemble $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ est muni d'une topologie de convergence simple.

La droite analytique affine a une structure d'arbre infiniment branché. La Figure 3 est une illustration de cet espace de Berkovich. En ajoutant un point " $\infty$ " à cet arbre, nous obtenons la droite analytique projective $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Les $k$-points sont situés aux extrémités de l'arbre, ce sont des feuilles de l'arbre. Un rôle particulièrement important pour nous est joué par les points non extrémaux où il n'y a pas de branchement (un exemple d'un tel point est donné par $x$ dans la Figure 3).


Figure $3: \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text {,an }}$
La plupart des résultats de ce chapitre sont bien connus dans le domaine et nous nous contentons de donner des références pour leurs preuves. Certains autres, plus spécialisés, ne sont à notre connaissance pas présents dans la littérature, nous en proposons donc des démonstrations.

## Chapitre 2: Le recollement.

Le cadre général abstrait pour le recollement est le suivant.
Considérons la tour de corps illustrée dans le diagramme (2) ci-dessous. Supposons qu'on a des structures algébriques $\mathcal{A}_{1}$ et $\mathcal{A}_{2}$ sur $F_{1}$ et $F_{2}$, respectivement. Le but est de trouver des conditions sous lesquelles elles induisent une structure algébrique du même
type sur $F_{1} \cap F_{2}$. Typiquement, ces structures algébriques sont des points rationnels sur $F_{1}$, respectivement $F_{2}$, d'une variété définie sur un corps plus petit $F$. Un autre exemple est le cas des zéro-cycles de degré un.


Nous nous concentrons sur le cas où ces structures algébriques sont des points rationnels sur une variété $H / F$. Si $\mathcal{A}_{1}$ et $\mathcal{A}_{2}$ sont compatibles sur $F_{0}$, alors elles se relèvent sur $F_{1} \cap F_{2}$. Si ce n'est pas le cas, on ne peut pas généralement les relever à $F_{1} \cap F_{2}$. Une manière d'approcher ce problème est de trouver une façon de rendre ces points rationnels compatibles sur $F_{0}$.

Idéalement, il existe un groupe linéaire algébrique $G / F$ qui agit sur $H$ de façon à ce que ces points rationnels (ou, plus généralement, ces structures algébriques) puissent toujours être déplacés par l'action de $G$ et rendus compatibles sur $F_{0}$. Pour que cette idée fonctionne, il nous faut à la fois une action particulière de $G$ sur $H$ (donnée dans la définition 3.2.1), et des conditions sur le groupe $G$. Ces conditions font l'objet principal de ce chapitre.

Plus précisément, soit $G / F$ un groupe linéaire algébrique. La condition dont nous avons besoin est la suivante : pour tout $g \in G\left(F_{0}\right)$, il existe $g_{i} \in G\left(F_{i}\right), i=1,2$, tels que $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ dans $G\left(F_{0}\right)$. En effet, supposons que $g$ est tel que $g \cdot \mathcal{A}_{2}=\mathcal{A}_{1}$ dans $H\left(F_{0}\right)$. Soit $\mathcal{A}_{1}^{\prime}:=g_{1}^{-1} \cdot \mathcal{A}_{1} \in H\left(F_{1}\right)$ et $\mathcal{A}_{2}^{\prime}:=g_{2} \cdot \mathcal{A}_{2} \in H\left(F_{2}\right)$. Alors, par construction, $\mathcal{A}_{1}^{\prime}=\mathcal{A}_{2}^{\prime}$ dans $H\left(F_{0}\right)$, donc elles peuvent se relever sur $F_{1} \cap F_{2}$. L'existence d'un élément $g \in G\left(F_{0}\right)$ qui satisfait $g \cdot \mathcal{A}_{2}=\mathcal{A}_{1}$ est à l'origine de l'hypothèse que nous adoptons sur l'action de $G$ sur $H$ (voir la définition 3.2.1).

Par la suite, nous appellerons la propriété de "décomposition matricielle" décrite dans le paragraphe précédent recollement. Nous montrerons que la famille suivante de groupes linéraires algébriques satisfait le recollement (avec un certain choix de corps dans la tour du diagramme (2)).

DÉfinition. Un groupe linéaire algébrique $G / F$ est dit rationnel (sur $F$ ) s'il existe un ouvert de Zariski de $G$ isomorphe à un ouvert de Zariski de $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$ pour un certain $n \in \mathbb{N}$.

Nous fixons un cadre général formel (Setting 2.1.1) sur lequel nous montrons le résultat principal de ce chapitre (voir le théorème 2.1.10). Ce dernier est fondamental pour le recollement. Il est une généralisation de [34, Theorem 3.2]. La différence principale est que les objets considérés dans loc.cit. sont définis sur un corps complet discrètement valué, alors que nous ne demandons pas aux valuations d'être discrètes. Une conséquence assez directe est que le recollement est vrai sur un voisinage de Zariski de l'identité de $G$. La preuve (ainsi que l'enoncé) du théorème 2.1.10 est très technique, et suit les lignes principales de la preuve de [34, Theorem 3.2].

L'intérêt du cadre formel sur lequel on travaille est qu'il est réalisé de façon naturelle (et très géométrique) dans la théorie de Berkovich.

En particulier, nous montrons que dans un cas particulier du Setting 2.1.1, realisé par les courbes analytiques de Berkovich, le théorème 2.1.10 peut se généraliser pour montrer que le recollement est vrai dans $G$ (théorème 2.2.3). Ceci est l'outil fondamental pour obtenir un recollement sur les courbes analytiques de Berkovich.

## Chapitre 3 : Recollement sur les courbes de Berkovich et formes quadra-

 tiques.Dans ce chapitre nous montrons que le recollement est possible sur les courbes analytiques de Berkovich et qu'il peut s'interpréter comme le recollement de fonctions méromorphes. Plus concrètement, nous montrons que les corps $F_{i}$ du diagramme (2) peuvent être choisis comme les corps de fonctions méromorphes de certaines parties (appelées domaines analytiques) d'une courbe analytique. Nous utilisons ensuite ce résultat pour démontrer un principe local-global et donner des applications aux formes quadratiques et à l'u-invariant. Les résultats obtenus généralisent ceux de [34].

Avant de présenter les résultats principaux de ce chapitre, nous introduisons un peu de terminologie.

Définition. Soit $K$ un corps. Soit $X$ une $K$-variété et $G$ un groupe linéaire algébrique sur $K$. On dit que $G$ agit fortement transitivement sur $X$ si $G$ agit sur $X$ et que pour toute extension de corps $L / K$, soit $X(L)=\emptyset$ soit $G(L)$ agit transitivement sur $X(L)$.

En général, demander que $G$ agisse fortement transitivement sur $X$ est plus restrictif que demander que $X$ soit homogène sous $G$. En revanche, il est montré dans [34, Remark 3.9] que si $G$ est un groupe linéaire algébrique sur $K$ et $X / K$ est une variété projective, alors les deux notions sont équivalentes.

Nos résultats principaux, les principes locaux-globaux que nous montrons, sont :
Théorème. Soit $k$ un corps ultramétrique complet non trivialement valué. Soit $C$ une courbe $k$-algébrique normale irréductible projective. On note $F$ le corps de fonctions de $C$. Soit $X$ une $F$-variété et $G$ un groupe linéaire algébrique connexe rationnel sur $F$ qui agit fortement transitivement sur $X$.

Soit $V(F)$ l'ensemble de toutes les valuations non triviales de rang 1 sur $F$ qui ou bien prolongent la valuation de $k$ ou bien sont triviales sur $k$.

Soit $C^{\text {an }}$ l'analytifié au sens de Berkovich de $C$; alors $F=\mathscr{M}\left(C^{\text {an }}\right)$, où $\mathscr{M}$ désigne le faisceau de fonctions méromorphes sur $C^{\mathrm{an}}$. Alors les principes locaux-globaux suivants sont vrais :

- (Theorem 3.2.11) $X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ pour tout $x \in C^{\text {an }}$.
- (Corollary 3.2.18) Si car $k=0$ ou $X$ est une variété lisse, alors :

$$
X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(F_{v}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { pour tout } v \in V(F)
$$

où $F_{v}$ désigne le complété de $F$ par rapport à $v$.
L'énoncé ci-dessus reste vrai pour les courbes affinoïdes si $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, où $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$ est la clôture divisible du groupe des valeurs $\left|k^{\times}\right|$de $k$. Étant un principe local-global par rapport aux complétés, la deuxième équivalence ressemble à des versions plus classiques de principes locaux-globaux. L'énoncé peut se formuler de façon à inclure les corps de base trivialement valués, même si cela ne nous donnerait pas de nouvelles informations puisqu'au moins un des surcorps serait alors égal à $F$.

Remarque. Pour démontrer nos résultats principaux, nous avons besoin de moins que la transitivité forte. Plus précisement, il suffit de supposer que pour tout complété $\widehat{F}$ de $F$ par rapport à une valuation qui prolonge celle de $k$, soit $X(\widehat{F})=\emptyset$ soit le groupe $G(\widehat{F})$ agit transitivement sur l'ensemble $X(\widehat{F})$. Nous pouvons même nous restreindre à certains de ces complétés, notamment à ceux pour lesquels $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{\widehat{F}}=0$ et $\operatorname{rang}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left|\widehat{F}^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}=1$, où $\widetilde{k}$, respectivement $\widetilde{\widehat{F}}$, est le corps résiduel de $k$, respectivement $\widehat{F}$. (Ce sont les complétés par rapport aux valuations induites par les points de type 3 de la courbe, voir la définition 1.8.1).

Nous rappelons que pour toute extension de corps $F / k$ finiment engendrée de degré de transcendance 1, il existe une unique courbe normale projective algébrique sur $k$ avec corps de fonctions $F$. Donc, le résultat du théorème ci-dessus s'applique à tout tel corps $F$.

Pour montrer les principes locaux-globaux énoncés ci-dessus, nous construisons des recouvrements particuliers des courbes sur lesquels le recollement peut se réaliser (appelés bons recouvrements, voir la définition 3.1.6). Lors de cette étape, les points de type 3 sont cruciaux. Un point de type 3 a de bonnes propriétés topologiques et algébriques. Plus précisément, une courbe analytique est un graphe réel sur laquelle un point de type 3 est d'arité 2 ; de plus, l'anneau local du faisceau structural d'un point de type 3 est un corps. Dans la Figure 3, $x$ est un point de type 3. L'existence de tels points est équivalente à la condition $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$; ceci est la raison pour laquelle le théorème 3.2.11 est d'abord montré sous cette hypothèse. Le résultat est ensuite démontré dans toute sa généralité en utilisant des arguments de théorie des modèles. Voici un bref résumé de la preuve dans le cas où $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$.

Nous rappelons qu'un domaine affinoïde d'un espace analytique de Berkovich est un domaine analytique (i.e. le faisceau structural y est bien défini), isomorphe à un espace affinoïde. De plus, une intersection finie de domaines affinoïdes d'une courbe analytique (et plus généralement, de tout espace de Berkovich séparé) est encore un domaine affinoïde. Nous commençons par introduire la notion cruciale de bon recouvrement.

Définition (Definition 3.1.6). Un recouvrement fini $\mathcal{U}$ d'une courbe $k$-analytique est appelé bon si :
(1) les éléments de $\mathcal{U}$ sont des domaines affinoïdes ne contenant que des points de type 3 dans leur bord topologique ;
(2) pout tous $U, V \in \mathcal{U}, U \neq V, U \cap V=\partial U \cap \partial V$, ou, de façon équivalente, $U \cap V$ est un ensemble fini de points de type 3 ;
(3) aucun élément de $\mathcal{U}$ n'est contenu dans un autre élément de $\mathcal{U}$.

Voir la Figure 4 ci-dessous pour un exemple de bon recouvrement de la droite analytique projective.

Pour une courbe normale irréductible projective $k$-analytique $C$, soient $U, V$ des domaines affinoïdes connexes de $C$ tels que $U \cap V$ soit un seul point de type 3 , noté $\{\eta\}$. (Ceci est un cas particulier d'un bon recouvrement.) Alors, en suivant les notations du diagramme $(2)$, on note $F:=\mathscr{M}(C), F_{0}:=\mathscr{M}(\{\eta\}), F_{1}:=\mathscr{M}(U), F_{2}:=\mathscr{M}(V)$. Nous commençons par montrer que le recollement est possible avec ce choix de corps pour tout groupe linéaire algébrique rationnel $G / F$. Ceci est ensuite généralisé à un bon recouvrement quelconque de la droite analytique projective. Pour étendre le résultat à toute courbe analytique normale irréductible projective $C$, nous utilisons la restriction des scalaires de

Weil pour "descendre" au cas de la droite analytique projective (cette idée est aussi employée par HHK dans [34]).


Figure 4 : exemple d'un bon recouvrement pour $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$
Finalement, après avoir démontré que le recollement est possible, le principe localglobal du théorème 3.2.11 est obtenu comme conséquence relativement directe du recollement.

Pour obtenir le corollaire 3.2 .18 à partir du théorème 3.2.11, nous établissons une connexion précise entre les points d'une courbe analytique de Berkovich et les valuations dont on peut munir son corps de fonctions. Ceci est l'objet de la proposition 3.2.14. Le reste est alors une conséquence des bonnes propriétés algébriques des corps $\mathscr{M}_{x}, x \in C$, notamment de leur henselianité.

À la différence de HHK qui travaillent sur des modèles d'une courbe algébrique, nous travaillons directement sur des courbes analytiques. Remarquons que nous n'imposons pas de conditions supplémentaires au corps complet ultramétrique de base $k$. Ceci est une des différences fondamentales avec le Theorem 3.7 de [34], où le corps de base doit être complet par rapport à une valuation discrète. Une autre différence est dans la nature des surcorps, qui ici sont des complétés ou des corps de fonctions méromorphes. La section 3.4 montre que ces derniers contiennent ceux qui apparaissent dans l'article de HHK, et donc que [34, Theorem 3.7] est une conséquence du principe local-global énoncé dans le théorème 3.2.11. De plus, nous montrons que l'inverse est aussi vrai si on choisit un modèle "assez fin". La preuve du théorème ci-dessus est basé sur la méthode de recollement, mais utilisé dans un cadre différent de celui de [34].

Comme conséquence de nos résultats principaux, dans le contexte des formes quadratiques, nous obtenons le théorème suivant, qui généralise [34, Theorem 4.2]. Il est un corollaire direct des principes locaux-globaux mentionnés précédemment car la variété projective définie par une forme quadratique satisfait toutes les hypothèses du théorème 3.2.11 (en particulier l'existence d'un groupe linéaire algébrique connexe rationnel qui agit fortement transitivement sur elle).

Théorème. Soit $k$ un corps ultramétrique complet non trivialement valué. Soit $C$ une courbe normale irréductible projective algébrique sur $k$. On note $F$ le corps de fonctions
de C. Supposons que $\operatorname{car}(F) \neq 2$. Soit $q$ une forme quadratique sur $F$ de dimension différente de 2.

Soit $V(F)$ l'ensemble de toutes les valuations non triviales de rang 1 sur $F$ qui soit prolongent la valuation de $k$ soit sont triviales sur $k$.

Soit $C^{\text {an }}$ l'analytifié au sens de Berkovich de $C$. Alors $F=\mathscr{M}\left(C^{\mathrm{an}}\right)$, où $\mathscr{M}$ est le faisceau de fonctions méromorphes sur $C^{\mathrm{an}}$.
(1) (Theorem 3.4.1) La forme quadratique $q$ est isotrope sur $F$ si et seulement si elle est isotrope sur $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ pout tout $x \in C^{\text {an }}$.
(2) (Corollary 3.4.2) La forme quadratique $q$ est isotrope sur $F$ si et seulement si elle est isotrope sur $F_{v}$ pour tout $v \in V(F)$, où $F_{v}$ est le complété de $F$ par rapport à $v$.

Comme mentionné dans l'introduction de [34], on s'attend à ce que pour des corps assez "gentils" $K$, l' $u$-invariant reste le même pour les extensions finies, et devienne $2^{d} u(K)$ pour les extensions finiment engendrées de degré de transcendence $d$. Puisque nous ne travaillons qu'en dimension 1 ici, ceci explique la motivation derrière la définition suivante :

Définition. Soit $K$ un corps.
(1) (Kaplansky) L'u-invariant de $K$, noté $u(K)$, est la dimension maximale des formes quadratiques anisotropes sur $K$. On dit que $u(K)=\infty$ s'il existe des formes quadratiques anisotropes sur $K$ de dimension arbitrairement grande.
(2) (HHK) L'u-invariant fort de $K$, noté $u_{s}(K)$, est le plus petit nombre réel $m$ tel que:

- $u(E) \leqslant m$ pour toute extension finie de corps $E / K$;
- $\frac{1}{2} u(E) \leqslant m$ pour toute extension de corps finiment engendrée $E / K$ de degré de transcendance 1.
On dit que $u_{s}(K)=\infty$ s'il existe de telles extensions $E / K$ d' $u$-invariant arbitrairement grand.

Le théorème ci-dessus mène à des applications sur l' $u$-invariant. Soit $k$ un corps ultramétrique complet avec corps résiduel $\widetilde{k}$ tel que $\operatorname{car}(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$. On suppose que soit $\left|k^{\times}\right|$ est un $\mathbb{Z}$-module libre avec $\operatorname{rang}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\times}\right|=: n$, ou, plus généralement, que $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}=: n$, où $n$ est un entier naturel. Ceci est encore une différence avec les résultats correspondants de HHK dans [34], où l'hypothèse sur le corps de base est qu'il soit complet par rapport à une valuation discrète, c'est-à-dire que son groupe de valeurs soit un $\mathbb{Z}$-module libre de rang 1. Nous obtenons une borne supérieure sur l'u-invariant d'une extension finiment engendrée de $k$ de degré de transcendance au plus 1 , qui ne dépend que de $u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$ et $n$. Plus précisement, en terme de l' $u$-invariant fort :

Corollatre (Corollary 3.4.28). Soit $k$ un corps ultramétrique complet. Supposons que $\operatorname{car}(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$.
(1) Si $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}=: n, n \in \mathbb{Z}$, alors $u_{s}(k) \leqslant 2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.
(2) Si $\left|k^{\times}\right|$est un $\mathbb{Z}$-module libre avec $\mathrm{rang}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\times}\right|=: n, n \in \mathbb{Z}$, alors $u_{s}(k) \leqslant 2^{n} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

Le corollaire 3.4.28 est une conséquence du principe local-global obtenu pour les formes quadratiques (théorème 3.4.1) et des bonnes propriétés algébriques que les anneaux locaux d'une courbe analytique satisfont, notamment l'hensélianité.

L'auteure ignore s'il y a égalité dans le corollaire ci-dessus. Ceci est vrai dans le cas particulier où $n=1$ en utilisant [34, Lemma 4.9], dont la preuve n'utilise pas le
recollement. De cette manière nous obtenons [34, Theorem 4.10], qui est un des résultats principaux de [34] sur les formes quadratiques. Ceci est une nouvelle preuve du fait que $u\left(\mathbb{Q}_{p}(T)\right)=8$, où $p$ est un nombre premier différent de 2 , originellement démontré dans [58].

Corollaire (Corollary 3.4.30). Soit $k$ un corps complet par rapport à une valuation discrète tel que $\operatorname{car}(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$. Alors $u_{s}(k)=2 u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

Chapitre 4 : Recollement sur des fibres analytiques et le principe localglobal.
Dans ce chapitre nous montrons que le recollement est possible "autour" de certaines fibres d'une courbe analytique relative. Ceci est ensuite appliqué pour obtenir un principe local-global sur le corps des fonctions méromorphes surconvergentes sur ces fibres. Nous montrons aussi que ce dernier peut s'interpréter comme le corps de fonctions d'une certaine courbe algébrique. Comme précédemment, les principes locaux-globaux obtenus peuvent s'appliquer aux formes quadratiques (si le corps de base est de caractéristique différente de 2).

Ce chapitre a deux objectifs principaux :
(1) établir un premier pas vers une stratégie pour le recollement en dimension supérieure et les applications correspondantes au principe local-global ;
(2) généraliser les résultats obtenus dans le Chapitre 3 ; plus précisément, démontrer un principe local-global sur des courbes algébriques (c'est-à-dire leurs corps de fonctions) définies sur une famille plus grande de corps ultramétriques (qui ne sont pas nécessairement complets).
Les résultats principaux que nous démontrons sont les suivants (voir le théorème 4.6.8 pour l'énoncé précis) :

ThÉORÈME (Theorem 4.6.8). Soit $k$ un corps ultramétrique complet non trivialement valué.

Soient $S, C$ deux bons espaces $k$-analytiques tels que $S$ soit normal. On suppose que $\operatorname{dim} S<\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$. On suppose qu'il existe un morphisme $\pi: C \rightarrow S$ tel que $C$ est une courbe propre plate relative sur $S$. Pour tout domaine affinoïde $Z$ de $S$, on pose $C_{Z}:=\pi^{-1}(Z)$ et $F_{Z}:=\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$, où $\mathscr{M}$ désigne le faisceau des fonctions méromorphes sur $C$. Soit $x \in S$ tel que $\mathcal{O}_{S, x}$ soit un corps. On désigne par $\mathscr{F}_{x}$ la fibre de $x$ dans $C$.

Supposons qu'il existe un voisinage connexe affinoïde $Z_{0}$ de $x$ tel que : (1) toutes les fibres de $\pi$ sur $Z_{0}$ sont des courbes analytiques projectives normales irréductibles ; (2) $C_{Z_{0}}$ est normale ; (3) $\pi_{\mid C_{Z_{0}}}: C_{Z_{0}} \rightarrow Z_{0}$ est algébrique.

Soit $G / F_{Z_{0}}$ un groupe linéaire algébrique connexe rationnel qui agit fortement transitivement sur une variété $H / F_{Z_{0}}$. Alors le principe local-global suivant est vrai :

$$
H\left(\underset{x \in Z}{\lim _{\vec{Z}}} F_{Z}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow H\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, u}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { pour tout } u \in \pi^{-1}(x),
$$

où la limite directe est prise sur tous les voisinages affinoïdes connexes $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ de $x$.
Nous remarquons que la limite directe qui apparaît à gauche du principe local-global est le corps des germes de fonctions méromorphes sur la fibre de $x$ dans $C$.

Nous ne travaillons que sur les fibres de points en lesquels l'anneau local est un corps. L'ensemble de tels points est toujours dense. En particulier, dans le cas des courbes, si $x$
est un point qui n'est pas rigide (voir la définition 1.5 .10 ; les points rigides sont ceux qu'on voit dans les espaces rigides), alors $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ est un corps. Même si cela n'apparaît pas explicitement pendant le chapitre, la raison derrière cette hypothèse est que pour pouvoir appliquer les résultats du Chapitre 2 et recoller "autour" de la fibre, nous avons besoin que la fibre ne soit pas un diviseur.

Pour montrer le théorème 4.6.8, comme les fibres d'une courbe analytique relative sont munies d'une structure de courbe analytique, nous suivons un raisonnement similaire à celui du cas de dimension un. Cependant, beaucoup de difficultés techniques apparaissent dans ce cadre relatif. Voici un bref résumé de la preuve.

Nous construisons des recouvrements particuliers d'un voisinage de la fibre sur lesquels le recollement est possible (qu'on appelle bons recouvrements relatifs) ; ils représentent l'analogue relatif des bons recouvrements introduits dans le Chapitre 3. Nous traitons d'abord le cas de $\mathbb{P}_{S}^{1, \text { an }}$ - la droite analytique projective relative sur $S$. Pour ce faire, nous utilisons la notion d'épaississement d'un domaine affinoïde, dont l'idée apparaît dans un texte non publié de Jérôme Poineau. Si $U$ est un domaine affinoïde de la fibre $\mathscr{F}_{x}$ de $x$ dans $\mathbb{P}_{S}^{1, \text { an }}$, un $Z$-épaississement de $U$ est un domaine affinoïde $U_{Z}$ de $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ tel que $U_{Z}^{\cap} \mathscr{F}_{x}=U$, où $Z$ est un voisinage affinoïde de $x$ dans $S$. Les épaississements des domaines affinoïdes de $\mathscr{F}_{x}$ existent et ont de bonnes propriétés si $Z$ est choisi assez petit.

Soit $\mathcal{U}$ un bon recouvrement de la fibre $\mathscr{F}_{x}$. Alors, il existe un voisinage affinoïde $Z$ de $x$ tel que pour tout $U \in \mathcal{U}$, le $Z$-épaississement $U_{Z}$ de $U$ existe. Soit $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ l'ensemble de tous ces $Z$-épaississements d'éléments de $\mathcal{U}$. Nous montrons que pour $Z$ assez petit, $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ satisfait les propriétés pour que les résultats du Chapitre 2 puissent s'appliquer. Dans ce cas, $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ est dit être un bon recouvrement $Z$-relatif de $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$. En particulier, nous remarquons que les points de type 3 jouent encore un rôle très important. Leur existence dans la fibre est garantie par l'hypothèse sur la dimension de $S$. Nous montrons alors que le recollement peut s'appliquer aux bons recouvrements relatifs dans le cas de $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$.

En utilisant des tirés en arrière de morphismes finis vers $\mathbb{P}^{1, a n}$, une notion de bon recouvrement relatif peut se construire plus généralement dans le cas des courbes normales propres relatives. En rajoutant à ceci la restriction des scalaires à la Weil, on montre que le recollement est possible sur des bons recouvrements relatifs dans ce cadre plus général.

Finalement, après avoir démontré que le recollement est possible autour de la fibre, le principe local-global du théorème 4.6 .8 peut être démontré. Ceci nécessite toutefois plus de travail que dans le cas de la dimension un.

Il existe une connexion entre les points d'une fibre et les valuations dont son corps de fonctions méromorphes surconvergentes peut être muni. Nous rendons cela précis dans la proposition 4.6.6. Comme dans le cas de la dimension un, combiné avec l'hensélianité des $\operatorname{corps} \mathscr{M}_{C, z}, \pi(z)=x$, cette connexion nous permet d'obtenir un principe local-global par rapport aux complétés. Avant d'énoncer ce résultat, nous rappelons que le corps $\mathcal{O}_{S, x}$ est naturellement muni d'une valuation $|\cdot|_{x}$.

ThÉORÈME (Theorem 4.6.8'). Avec les mêmes notations que dans l'énoncé du théorème 4.6.8, on note $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=\lim _{Z} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$. Soit $V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$ l'ensemble des valuations non triviales de rang 1 sur $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ qui induisent ou bien $|\cdot|_{x}$ ou bien la valuation triviale sur $\mathcal{O}_{x}$. Pour $v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$, soit $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}$ le complété de $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ par rapport à $v$.

Si car $k=0$ ou $H$ est lisse, alors le principe local-global suivant est vrai :

$$
H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { pour tout } v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)
$$

Nous remarquons que, avec les mêmes notations que dans le théorème ci-dessus, $\mathcal{O}_{S, x}=\lim _{Z} \mathcal{O}_{S}(Z)$, où la limite directe est prise sur les voisinages affinoïdes $Z$ de $x$ dans $S$. En utilisant les travaux de Grothendieck sur les limites projectives de schémas pour construire une courbe relative algébrique sur $\mathcal{O}(Z)$ à partir d'une courbe algébrique sur $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ et comme conséquence du théorème ci-dessus, nous obtenons la généralisation suivante du corollaire 3.2.18.

Théorème (Theorem 4.6.9). Soit $S$ un bon espace normal $k$-analytique tel que $\operatorname{dim} S<$ $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$. Soit $x \in S$ tel que $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ soit un corps. Soit $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ une courbe algébrique lisse géométriquement irréductible sur le corps $\mathcal{O}_{x}$. On note $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ le corps de fonctions de $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$.

Soit $G / F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ un groupe linéaire algébrique connexe rationnel qui agit fortement transitivement sur une variété $H / F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$. Si car $k=0$ ou $H$ est lisse, alors :

$$
H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { pour tout } v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right),
$$

où $V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$ est comme dans le théorème 4.6.8' ci-dessus.
Un élément crucial pour démontrer le théorème 4.6.9, et plus généralement, pour mettre en valeur l'interêt de ce chapitre, est que, dans le cadre du théorème 4.6.8, les fonctions méromorphes autour de la fibre de $x$ sont algébriques. Plus précisement, le corps des fonctions méromorphes surconvergentes sur la fibre de $x$ est le corps de fonctions d'une courbe algébrique sur $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ (qui est l'algébrisation d'un voisinage de la fibre suivi par un changement de base à $\mathcal{O}_{x}$; voir le corollaire 4.4.15). Pour montrer ce résultat non trivial, nous utilisons un théorème du type GAGA pour le faisceau des fonctions méromorphes (voir le théorème 1.7.8).

À la fin de ce chapitre nous calculons quelques exemples d'anneaux locaux des espaces analytiques de Berkovich qui sont des corps et auxquels les résultats ci-dessus peuvent s'appliquer. Plus précisément, nous calculons les anneaux locaux en les points de $\mathbb{A}^{1, \text { an }}$ pour lesquels l'anneau local correspondant est un corps. De plus, nous donnons une description de l'anneau local en certains points de $\mathbb{A}^{n, \text { an }}, n \in \mathbb{N}$. Voici un exemple d'un tel corps, qui correspond à un point de type 3 d'une droite analytique affine.

Exemple. Soit $(k,|\cdot|)$ un corps ultramétrique complet. Soit $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$. Soit $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ une semi-norme multiplicative sur $k[T]$ telle que $|T|_{x}=r$ (en fait, $x$ est le seul tel point de $\left.\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}\right)$.

Pour tous $r_{1}, r_{2} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$ tels que $r_{1}<r<r_{2}$, on pose

$$
A_{r_{1}, r_{2}}:=\left\{\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n} T^{n}: a_{n} \in k, \lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{n}\right| r_{2}^{n}=0, \lim _{n \rightarrow-\infty}\left|a_{n}\right| r_{1}^{n}=0\right\} .
$$

Alors, $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}, x}=\lim _{r_{1}<r<r_{2}} A_{r_{1}, r_{2}}$.
Comme dans le Chapitre 3, puisque la variété projective définie par une forme quadratique satisfait les hypothèses des résultats présentés, l'exemple naturel auquel les énoncés de ce chapitre peuvent s'appliquer est celui des formes quadratiques (sous l'hypothèse car $k \neq 2$ ).

## CHAPTER 1

## Introduction to Berkovich Spaces

The aim of this chapter is to give an overview of the construction of Berkovich spaces and prove certain properties for them that we need for the next parts of the manuscript. The content of the first six sections is classical, so we only provide references for most of the results. The exposition follows [6], [42], and [64]. The last two sections are more specialized, containing for the most part results (including proofs) that will be applied in the next chapters.

We start by presenting the algebraic setting on which Berkovich's theory is founded. Since the objects in question are analytic, their algebraic counterparts will be rings endowed with some norm structure with respect to which they are complete (i.e. Banach rings). We make this more precise in Section 1.1, where the notion of (semi-)norm is defined and some of its properties are presented. Finally, we give the notion of Berkovich analytic spaces over Banach rings. More precisely, the analogue of the affine spectrum, called Berkovich spectrum, is discussed.

In Section 1.2, we give a classical example (on a topological level) of a Berkovich space, the analytic affine line. This is one of the most understood objects in the theory, and its properties are a good indicator of the kind of properties that analytic curves satisfy.

Like schemes, Berkovich spaces have "building blocks", called affinoid spaces. Roughly, affinoid spaces are to Berkovich spaces (or at least a certain subclass thereof known as good Berkovich spaces) what finite type affine schemes are to a finite type scheme. One fundamental difference between the two is that affinoid spaces are compact (meaning Hausdorff and hence not necessarily open), which is the cause of many technical difficulties in the Berkovich setting. Another particularity is that there are several notions of boundary for affinoid spaces. These objects are the topic of Section 1.4. We start with their algebraic counterpart, affinoid algebras (which are a generalization of Tate's affinoid algebras) in Section 1.3, and continue with the construction of the structural sheaf.

In Section 1.5, good analytic spaces and some of their main properties are presented. Local properties as being reduced, normal, regular, etc., exist for Berkovich analytic spaces and are briefly discussed in this section. Several classes of morphisms in the category of good Berkovich spaces and their main properties are presented. Most of these notions are similar to their algebraic counterparts, but not all; this is due to the (sometimes) bad behaviour of boundary points. Berkovich spaces possess very nice topological properties (such as being locally arcwise-connected).

An analytification functor and GAGA-type theorems exist for Berkovich spaces and are the main tool for applying Berkovich's theory to arithmetic geometry. A topology is induced from a scheme to its Berkovich analytification, called the Zariski topology with respect to which the notion of irreducibility can be obtained. This is coarser than the Berkovich topology, but behaves quite nicely with respect to GAGA-principles. These facts are the topic of Section 1.6.

In Section 1.7, we discuss a somewhat less classical topic, the sheaf of meromorphic functions for Berkovich spaces. The definition and main properties resemble those of the sheaf of meromorphic functions for schemes. Seeing as later on we interpret patching as the gluing of meromorphic functions, this notion is crucial to our work. In particular, we give a detailed proof of a GAGA-type result coming from a MathOverflow thread (see [57]).

Finally, in Section 1.8, a more detailed account of analytic curves is given, seeing as it is the case of most interest to us. It includes some general results on curves (most of which shown in $[\mathbf{2 0}]$ ), and some specific statements that we will need later. This is arguably the class of Berkovich spaces that is best understood and most studied: in [20], Ducros shows that Berkovich analytic curves have a(n infinite) graph-like structure; many of the notions defined on Berkovich spaces are much better behaved in the case of curves than in general (e.g. boundaries); an algebraic classification of points can be given, and it is usually possible to interpret it topologically. At the end of this section, we give a description of the points of the analytic affine line.

### 1.1. Banach rings and the Berkovich spectrum

All rings considered here are assumed to be commutative with unity.
1.1.1. Valued Fields. Let $k$ be a field.

Definition 1.1.1. An absolute value on $k$ is a function $|\cdot|: k \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \geqslant 0$ such that:
(1) $|1|=1$,
(2) for $x \in k,|x|=0$ if and only if $x=0$,
(3) $\forall x, y \in k,|x y|=|x||y|$,
(4) $\forall x, y \in k,|x-y| \leqslant|x|+|y|$.

We will say that $(k,|\cdot|)$ is a field endowed with an absolute value.
If instead of (4), the following stronger condition is satisfied,
(4') $\forall x, y \in k,|x-y| \leqslant \max (|x|,|y|)$,
then we say that $|\cdot|$ is a non-Archimedean or ultrametric absolute value on $k$. In that case, we will say that $(k,|\cdot|)$ is a non-Archimedean valued (or ultrametric) field. When there is no risk of ambiguity, we will simply say that $k$ is an ultrametric field.

An absolute value which is not ultrametric will be called Archimedean.
Example 1.1.2. (1) For any field $k$, the function $|\cdot|_{0}: k \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, x \mapsto 1$ if $x \neq 0$, and $x \mapsto 0$ otherwise, determines an absolute value on $k$. We call $|\cdot|_{0}$ the trivial valuation on $k$. Remark that $|\cdot|_{0}$ is ultrametric. The trivial valuation is the only absolute value with which a finite field can be endowed.
(2) The standard Euclidean norm $|\cdot|_{\infty}$ is an absolute value in $\mathbb{C}$. It is Archimedean.
(3) Let $p$ be a prime number. For $x \in \mathbb{Q}^{\times}$, let $a_{x}, b_{x}$ be the unique integers such that $b_{x}>0,\left(a_{x}, b_{x}\right)=1$, and $x=\frac{a_{x}}{b_{x}}$. Then, the function $|\cdot|_{p}: \mathbb{Q} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}$,

$$
x \mapsto \begin{cases}p^{-\left(v_{p}\left(a_{x}\right)-v_{p}\left(b_{x}\right)\right)} & \text { if } x \neq 0, \\ 0 & \text { otherwise },\end{cases}
$$

where for $c \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}, c=p^{v_{p}(c)} \cdot d$ and $p \nmid d$, is a non-Archimedean absolute value on $\mathbb{Q}$. It is said to be the $p$-adic valuation on $\mathbb{Q}$.
(4) Let $p$ be a prime number. Then, the function $|\cdot|_{T}: \mathbb{F}_{p}(T) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, 0 \mapsto 0$, and $x \mapsto \alpha^{-v_{T}(x)}$ for $x \neq 0$, where $\alpha>1$ and $v_{T}(x)$ is the largest integer $n$ for which $x \in(T)^{n}$, is a non-Archimedean absolute value on $\mathbb{F}_{p}(T)$.

The following tells us how to distinguish between Archimedean and non-Archimidean absolute values.

Proposition 1.1.3. An absolute value $|\cdot|$ on $k$ is non-Archimedean if and only if $|n| \leqslant 1$ for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}$.

Remark that an absolute value on $k$ determines a metric, and thus a topology on $k$. The following definition gives a criterion for when two absolute values induce the same topology on the underlying field.

Definition 1.1.4. Two absolute values $|\cdot|_{1},|\cdot|_{2}$ are said to be equivalent if there exists $\alpha>0$ such that $|\cdot|_{1}=|\cdot|_{2}^{\alpha}$.

Ostrowski's Theorem (see e.g. [44, Theorem 1, Section 1.2]) tells us that, up to equivalence, $\mathbb{Q}$ can only be endowed with the following absolute values: $|\cdot|_{0},\left.\right|_{\infty}$, and $|\cdot|_{p}, p$ a prime number.

Let $|\cdot|$ be an absolute value on $k$. We will say that $k$ is complete with respect to $|\cdot|$ (or simply complete when there is no risk of ambiguity) if it is complete with respect to the metric $|\cdot|$ induces on $k$. As usual, one can define the completion $(\widehat{k},|\cdot|)$ of $(k,|\cdot|)$ by using the Cauchy sequence construction. Then, $(\widehat{k},|\cdot|)$ is complete.

Example 1.1.5. (1) The field $k$ is complete with respect to its trivial absolute valuation $1 \cdot{ }_{0}$.
(2) The field $\mathbb{C}$ is complete with respect to $|\cdot|_{\infty}$. By the Gelfand-Mazur theorem (cf. [15], VI, $6, \mathrm{n}^{\circ} 4$, Théorème 1 ), the only complete fields with respect to Archimedean absolute values are $\mathbb{R}$ and $\mathbb{C}$.
(3) Let $p$ be a prime number. We denote the completion of $\left(\mathbb{Q},|\cdot|_{p}\right)$ by $\mathbb{Q}_{p}$. It is called the field of $p$-adic numbers.
(4) Let $p$ be a prime number. Then, the completion of $\left(\mathbb{F}_{p}(T),|\cdot|_{T}\right)$ is the field $\mathbb{F}_{p}((T))$ of Laurent series over $\mathbb{F}_{p}$.

Theorem 1.1.6. Let $(k,|\cdot|)$ be a complete field. Let us fix an algebraic closure $\bar{k}$ of $k$.
(1) The absolute value $|\cdot|$ can uniquely be extended to $\bar{k}$.
(2) The completion $\widehat{\bar{k}}$ of $(\bar{k},|\cdot|)$ is a complete algebraically closed field.

For a prime number $p$, we will denote by $\mathbb{C}_{p}$ the field $\widehat{\widehat{\mathbb{Q}_{p}}}$. It is the $p$-adic analogue of $\mathbb{C}$.

Finally, let us mention a few topological particularities of non-Archimedean valued fields.

Proposition 1.1.7. Let $(k,|\cdot|)$ be a non-Archimedean valued field.
(1) For any $x, y \in k$ such that $|x| \neq|y|$, one has $|x+y|=\max (|x|,|y|)$.
(2) A closed disc of positive radius in $k$ is open.
(3) For any $a \in k$ and $r \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}$, let $B(a, r)$ denote the closed disc in $k$ centered at $a$ and of radius $r$. Then, for any $b \in B(a, r)$, one has $B(a, r)=B(b, r)$.
(4) The field $k$ is a totally disconnected topological space (with respect to the topology induced by $|\cdot|)$.

Notation 1.1.8. For any field $k$ endowed with an absolute value $|\cdot|$, we denote by $|k|$ the set $\left\{r \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}: \exists a \in k,|a|=r\right\}$. Set $\left|k^{\times}\right|=\{r \in|k|: r \neq 0\}$. This is a multiplicative subgroup of $\mathbb{R}_{>0}$. We denote by $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$its divisible closure.

Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field. We will say that $K / k$ is a complete ultrametric field extension if: (1) $K$ is a field extension of $k$; (2) $K$ is complete with respect to an absolute value that extends that of $k$.
1.1.2. Semi-normed rings. Let $A$ be a ring.

Definition 1.1.9. A semi-norm on $A$ is a function $|\cdot|: A \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \geqslant 0$ such that
(1) $|0|=0,|1|=1$,
(2) $\forall x, y \in A,|x y| \leqslant|x||y|$,
(3) $\forall x, y \in A,|x-y| \leqslant|x|+|y|$.

If condition (2) is strengthened: $\forall x, y \in A,|x y|=|x||y|$, we will say that $|\cdot|$ is a multiplicative semi-norm on $A$.

If ker $|\cdot|=\{0\}$, we will say that $|\cdot|$ is a norm on $A$. If $|\cdot|$ is a multiplicative semi-norm and a norm, we will say that it is a multiplicative norm on $A$.

If instead of condition (3) we take the following stronger hypothesis:
(3') $\forall x, y \in A,|x-y| \leqslant \max (|x|,|y|)$,
then $|\cdot|$ is said to be non-Archimedean.
We will sometimes say that $A$ is a (semi-)normed ring.
Example 1.1.10. (1) The function $|\cdot|_{0}: A \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, x \mapsto 1$ if $x \neq 0$, and $x \mapsto 0$ otherwise, determines an multiplicative norm on $A$, called the trivial norm.
(2) The Euclidean norm $|\cdot|_{\infty}$ is a multiplicative norm on $\mathbb{Z}$. For a prime number $p$, the $p$-adic absolute value $|\cdot|_{p}$ determines a non-Archimedean multiplicative norm on $\mathbb{Z}$.
(3) Let $(k,|\cdot|)$ be a field endowed with an absolute value. Let $a \in k$. Then, the function $|\cdot|_{a}: k[T] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, P(T) \mapsto|P(a)|$, is a multiplicative semi-norm on $k[T]$. It is non-Archimedean if $|\cdot|$ is so.
(4) Let $M_{n}(\mathbb{C})$ be the ring of $n \times n$ matrices over $\mathbb{C}$. Let $\|\|\cdot\|\|: M_{n}(\mathbb{C}) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}$ be the function given by $M \mapsto \sup _{v \in \mathbb{C}^{n} \backslash\{0\}} \frac{\|M v\|}{\|v\|}$, where $\|\cdot\|: \mathbb{C}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}$ is the Euclidean norm, i.e. $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{n}\right) \mapsto \sqrt{\left|t_{1}\right|_{\infty}^{2}+\left|t_{2}\right|_{\infty}^{2}+\cdots\left|t_{n}\right|_{\infty}^{2}}$. Then, $|||\cdot|||$ is a norm on $M_{n}(\mathbb{C})$.

As before, a semi-norm $|\cdot|$ on $A$ determines a topology on $A$. Remark that this topology is Hausdorff if and only if $|\cdot|$ is a norm. A sufficient condition for two semi-norms to induce the same topology on $A$ is given by the following:

Definition 1.1.11. Two semi-norms $|\cdot|_{1},|\cdot|_{2}$ on $A$ are said to be equivalent if there exist real numbers $C_{1}, C_{2}>0$ such that $C_{1}|\cdot|_{1} \leqslant|\cdot|_{2} \leqslant C_{2}|\cdot|_{1}$.

In particular, remark that $\operatorname{ker}|\cdot|_{1}=\operatorname{ker}|\cdot|_{2}$, so $|\cdot|_{1}$ is a norm if and only if $|\cdot|_{2}$ is a norm.

Lemma 1.1.12. A multiplicative semi-norm $|\cdot|$ on $A$ is non-Archimedean if and only if $\mathbb{Z}$ is bounded.

Let $I$ be an ideal of $A$. Then, any semi-norm $|\cdot|$ on $A$ induces a semi-norm on $A / I$ via $x+I \rightarrow \inf \{|y|: x-y \in I\}$, called the quotient semi-norm on $A / I$ induced by $|\cdot|$. If $|\cdot|$ is non-Archimedean, then so is the quotient semi-norm.

Let us introduce the class of morphisms between semi-normed rings that will be of interest to us.

Definition 1.1.13. Let $\left(A,|\cdot|_{A}\right),\left(B,|\cdot|_{B}\right)$ be two semi-normed rings (i.e. rings endowed with semi-norms). A morphism $f: A \rightarrow B$ is said to be bounded (with respect
to these semi-norms on $A, B$, respectively) if there exists a real number $C>0$, such that for any $a \in A,|f(a)|_{B} \leqslant C \cdot|a|_{A}$.

The morphism $f$ is said to be admissible if the quotient semi-norm on $A / \operatorname{ker} f$ induced by $|\cdot|_{A}$ is equivalent to the semi-norm induced on $\operatorname{Im}(f)$ by $|\cdot|_{B}$.

Let $|\cdot|$ be a norm on $A$. As usual, we will say that $(A,|\cdot|)$ is complete if any Cauchy sequence in $A$ has a limit in $A$ (with respect to $|\cdot|$ ). In that case, $A$ is said to be a Banach ring. In Berkovich's theory, Banach rings plays a role analoguous to commutative rings in algebraic geometry.

In Example 1.1.10, $\left(\mathbb{Z},|\cdot|_{\infty}\right),\left(M_{n}(\mathbb{C}),|\||\cdot|| \mid\right)$ are Banach rings.
Definition 1.1.14. Let $\left(A,|\cdot|_{A}\right),\left(B,|\cdot|_{B}\right)$ be Banach rings, such that $B$ is an $A$ algebra. We say that $\left(B,|\cdot|_{B}\right)$ is a Banach $A$-algebra if the morphism $A \rightarrow B$ is bounded.

Lemma 1.1.15. Let $I$ be a closed ideal of $A$. If $|\cdot|$ is a norm on $A$, then the quotient semi-norm $|\cdot|_{A / I}$ on $A / I$ induced by $|\cdot|$ is a norm on $A / I$. Moreover, if $(A,|\cdot|)$ is a Banach ring, then so is $\left(A / I,|\cdot|_{A / I}\right)$.

If $|\cdot|$ is merely a semi-norm on $A$, it does not make sense to speak of completeness seeing as the Cauchy sequences in $A$ may have more than one accumulation point. There is, however, a notion of completion.

Theorem 1.1.16. Let $(A,|\cdot|)$ be a semi-normed ring. The set of equivalence classes of Cauchy sequences in $A$ forms a ring $\widehat{A}$ naturally endowed with a norm $|\cdot|^{\prime}$. Then, $\left(\widehat{A},|\cdot|^{\prime}\right)$ is a Banach ring, and there is a natural admissible morphism $A \rightarrow \widehat{A}$ such that the image of $A$ is dense. Moreover, $|\cdot|$ is non-Archimedean if and only if $|\cdot|^{\prime}$ is non-Archimedean.

We will say that $\left(\widehat{A},|\cdot|^{\prime}\right)$ is the completion (in some texts referred to as separated completion) of $(A,|\cdot|)$. The admissible morphism $A \rightarrow \widehat{A}$ is an embedding if and only if $|\cdot|$ is a norm. It is an isomorphism if and only if $(A,|\cdot|)$ is a Banach ring. Remark that $\left(\widehat{A},|\cdot|^{\prime}\right)$ is the completion of $A / \operatorname{ker}|\cdot|$ with respect to the quotient semi-norm.
1.1.3. The spectral radius. Let $(A,|\cdot|)$ be a Banach ring. We present here a canonical way to obtain from $|\cdot|$ a semi-norm with particularly nice properties (e.g. as close as possible to being multiplicative).

Lemma 1.1.17 (Fekete's Lemma). Let $x \in A$. Then, $\rho_{A}(x):=\lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|x^{n}\right|^{1 / n}$ exists. Moreover, $\rho_{A}(x)=\inf _{n \in \mathbb{N}}\left|x^{n}\right|^{1 / n}$.

Definition 1.1.18. For any $x \in A, \rho_{A}(x)$ is called the spectral radius of $x$.
Lemma 1.1.19. (1) $\rho_{A}(1)=1$;
(2) $\forall x, y \in A, \rho_{A}(x-y) \leqslant \rho_{A}(x)+\rho_{A}(y)$;
(3) $\forall x, y \in A, \rho_{A}(x y) \leqslant \rho_{A}(x) \rho_{A}(y)$;
(4) $\forall n \in \mathbb{N}, \forall x \in A, \rho_{A}\left(x^{n}\right)=\rho_{A}(x)^{n}$. If $A$ is non-Archimedean, then $\forall x, y \in A, \rho_{A}(x-y) \leqslant \max \left(\rho_{A}(x), \rho_{A}(y)\right)$.

We will call $\rho_{A}$ the spectral semi-norm of $A$.
Another important property of the spectral semi-norm is that it remains the same even if $|\cdot|$ is replaced by an equivalent norm.
1.1.4. Semi-normed modules. Let $(A,|\cdot|)$ be a ring endowed with a semi-norm. Let $M$ be an $A$-module.

Definition 1.1.20. A semi-norm on the $A$-module $M$ is a function $\|\cdot\|: M \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \geqslant 0$, satisfying:
(1) $\forall x, y \in M,\|x-y\| \leqslant\|x\|+\|y\|$;
(2) there exists a real number $C>0$ such that $\forall a \in A, \forall m \in M,\|a m\| \leqslant C|a|\|m\|$.

If ker $\|\cdot\|=0$, we will say that $\|\cdot\|$ is a norm on $M$.
If condition (1) is strengthened to: $\forall x, y \in M,\|x-y\| \leqslant \max (\|x\|,\|y\|)$, then $\|\cdot\|$ is said to be non-Archimedean.

Remark that for any semi-norm $\|\cdot\|$ on $M,\|0\|=0$ (because of condition (2) above and the fact that $|0|=0)$.

A semi-norm $\|\cdot\|$ defines a topology on $M$, which is Hausdorff if and only if $\|\cdot\|$ is a norm. There is once again a notion of equivalent semi-norms which gives a sufficient condition for semi-norms to induce the same topology on $M$ : two semi-norms $\|\cdot\|_{1},\|\cdot\|_{2}$ are said to be equivalent if there exist positive real numbers $C_{1}, C_{2}$ such that $C_{1}\|\cdot\|_{1} \leqslant\|\cdot\|_{2} \leqslant C_{2}\|\cdot\|_{1}$.

Hence, $\|\cdot\|$ can be replaced by an equivalent semi-norm for which in condition (2) of Definition 1.1.20 we can take $C=1$.

Let $M^{\prime}$ be an $A$-submodule of $M$. Then, a (non-Archimedean) semi-norm $\|\cdot\|$ on $M$ induces a (non-Archimedean) semi-norm on $M / M^{\prime}$ via $x+M^{\prime} \mapsto \inf \left\{\|y\|: x-y \in M^{\prime}\right\}$, called the quotient semi-norm.

We can define in the same way as in Definition 1.1.13 the notion of bounded and admissible morphisms between semi-normed $A$-modules.

Let $\|\cdot\|$ be a norm on $M$. Then, $M$ is said to be complete with respect to $\|\cdot\|$ if any Cauchy sequence in $M$ has a limit in $M$. In that case, we will say that $(M,\|\cdot\|)$ is a Banach A-module.

Lemma 1.1.21. Let $M^{\prime}$ be a closed $A$-submodule of $M$. If $\|\cdot\|$ is a norm on $M$, then the quotient semi-norm $\|\cdot\|_{M / M^{\prime}}$ on $M / M^{\prime}$ induced by $\|\cdot\|$ is a norm on $M / M^{\prime}$. Moreover, if $(M,\|\cdot\|)$ is a Banach $A$-module, then so is $\left(M / M^{\prime},\|\cdot\|_{M / M^{\prime}}\right)$.

With the same remarks as in the case of semi-normed rings, there is a notion of completion.

Theorem 1.1.22. Let $(M,\|\cdot\|)$ be a semi-normed $A$-module. The set of equivalence classes of Cauchy sequences in $M$ forms an $\widehat{A}$-module $\widehat{M}$ naturally endowed with a norm $\|\cdot\|^{\prime}$. Then, $\left(\widehat{M},\|\cdot\|^{\prime}\right)$ is a Banach module over both $A$ and $\widehat{A}$, and there is a natural admissible morphism $M \rightarrow \widehat{M}$ such that the image of $M$ is dense. Moreover, $\|\cdot\|$ is non-Archimedean if and only if $\|\cdot\|^{\prime}$ is non-Archimedean.

We will say that $\left(\widehat{M},\|\cdot\|^{\prime}\right)$ is the completion (in some texts referred to as separated completion) of $(M,\|\cdot\|)$. The admissible morphism $M \rightarrow \widehat{M}$ is an embedding if and only if $\|\cdot\|$ is a norm. It is an isomorphism if and only if $(M,\|\cdot\|)$ is a Banach $A$-module. Remark that $\left(\widehat{M},\|\cdot\|^{\prime}\right)$ is the completion of $M /$ ker $\|\cdot\|$ with respect to the quotient semi-norm.
1.1.5. Complete tensor product of modules in the non-Archimedean case. Let $(A,|\cdot|)$ be a non-Archimedean normed ring. Let $\left(M,|\cdot|_{M}\right),\left(N,|\cdot|_{N}\right)$ be two normed
non-Archimedean $A$-modules. We can endow the tensor product $M \otimes_{A} N$ with the seminorm

$$
\|x\|:=\inf \left\{\max _{i=1, \ldots, n}\left|m_{i}\right|_{M}\left|n_{i}\right|_{N}: x=\sum_{i=1}^{n} m_{i} \otimes n_{i}\right\} .
$$

Definition 1.1.23. The complete tensor product of $M$ and $N$, denoted $M \widehat{\otimes}_{A} N$, is the completion of $M \otimes_{A} N$ with respect to the semi-norm $\|\cdot\|$. It is a Banach module over both $A$ and $\widehat{A}$.

The complete tensor product satisfies a universal property.
Definition 1.1.24. Let $\left(P_{1},|\cdot|_{1}\right),\left(P_{2},|\cdot|_{2}\right),\left(P_{3},|\cdot|_{3}\right)$ be normed $A$-modules. A morphism $\varphi: P_{1} \times P_{2} \rightarrow P_{3}$ of $A$-modules is said to be a bounded bilinear morphism if there exists $C>0$ such that for any $x \in P_{1}, y \in P_{2},|\varphi(x, y)|_{3} \leqslant C|x|_{1}|y|_{2}$.

Proposition 1.1.25 ([11, 2.1.7/1]). Let $P$ be a Banach $A$-algebra. Any bounded bilinear morphism $M \times N \rightarrow P$ is uniquely factorised through $M \widehat{\otimes}_{A} N$.

Other useful properties of this construction that we need are the following (non-trivial) results:

Theorem 1.1.26 ([29], Section 3, Thm. 1(4)). Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $M, N$ be non-Archimedean $k$-Banach vector spaces. Then, the canonical map $M \otimes_{k}$ $N \rightarrow M \widehat{\otimes}_{k} N$ is an embedding with a dense image.

Theorem 1.1.27. [41, Appendix D.4.2] Let A be a non-Archimedean Banach ring. Let $M, N, M^{\prime}, N^{\prime}$ be Banach $A$-modules. If there exist $A$-linear maps $\varphi: M \rightarrow M^{\prime}$ and $\psi: N \rightarrow N^{\prime}$ that are surjective and admissible, then $\varphi \widehat{\otimes}_{A} \psi: M \widehat{\otimes}_{A} N \rightarrow M^{\prime} \widehat{\otimes}_{A} N^{\prime}$ is surjective and admissible.

For a detailed treatment of complete tensor products, see [11, 2.1.7].
1.1.6. The Berkovich spectrum. All rings considered here are assumed to be commutative with unity. We now define and explore the Berkovich analogue of the affine spectrum, defined in [6, Section 1.2].

Definition 1.1.28. Let $(A,\|\cdot\|)$ be a ring endowed with a semi-norm. A semi-norm $|\cdot|$ on $A$ is said to be $\|\cdot\|$-bounded if there exists a positive real number $C$, such that $|\cdot| \leqslant C\|\cdot\|$.

When there is no risk of ambiguity, we will simply say that $|\cdot|$ is a bounded semi-norm on $A$.

Definition 1.1.29 (The Berkovich Spectrum). Let $(A,\|\cdot\|)$ be a Banach ring. The Berkovich spectrum of $A$, denoted $\mathcal{M}(A)$, is the set of all bounded multiplicative seminorms on $A$.

We endow $\mathcal{M}(A)$ with the coarsest topology for which the function $v_{y}: \mathcal{M}(A) \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \geqslant 0$, $|\cdot| \mapsto|f|$, is continuous for all $f \in A$.

Remark 1.1.30. For any $|\cdot| \in \mathcal{M}(A),|\cdot| \leqslant\|\cdot\|$. To see this, fix $|\cdot| \in \mathcal{M}(A)$, and let $C>0$ be such that $|\cdot| \leqslant C\|\cdot\|$. Then, for any $a \in A$ and any $n \in \mathbb{N}$, we have $|a|^{n}=\left|a^{n}\right| \leqslant C\left\|a^{n}\right\| \leqslant C\|a\|^{n}$, so $|a| \leqslant \sqrt[n]{C}\|a\|$. By taking $n \rightarrow+\infty$, we obtain $|a| \leqslant\|a\|$, so $|\cdot| \leqslant\|\cdot\|$.

Remark that because of their multiplicativity, $\mathcal{M}(A)$ does not contain equivalent seminorms. Also, $\mathcal{M}(A)$ does not change if we replace $\|\cdot\|$ by an equivalent norm.

Convention 1.1.31. For a point $x$ of the space $\mathcal{M}(A)$, we will also use the notation $|\cdot|_{x}$ when considering it as a semi-norm on $A$.

Example 1.1.32. (1) Let $(k,|\cdot|)$ be a complete ultrametric field. Then, $\mathcal{M}(k)$ is the single point $\{|\cdot|\}$.
(2) Let us briefly describe $\mathcal{M}(\mathbb{Z})$, where $\mathbb{Z}$ is endowed with $|\cdot|_{\infty}$. This can be done using Ostrowski's theorem on the classification, up to equivalence, of all absolute values that $\mathbb{Q}$ can be endowed with.

Let $|\cdot|_{x}$ be a multiplicative norm on $\mathbb{Z}$. Then, this defines an absolute value on $\mathbb{Q}$, so we have the following possibilities:

- $|\cdot|_{x}=|\cdot|_{0}$-the trivial norm on $\mathbb{Z}$;
- $|\cdot|_{x}=|\cdot|_{\infty}^{\alpha}$ for some $\alpha>0$, and in order for this to be an absolute value on $\mathbb{Q}$, $\alpha \in(0,1]$;
- there exists a prime number $p$ such that $|\cdot|_{x}=|\cdot|_{p}^{\beta}$ for some $\beta>0$; here $\beta \in(0,+\infty)$.
Suppose that $|\cdot|_{x}$ is a multiplicative semi-norm on $\mathbb{Z}$ that is not a norm. Then, ker $|\cdot|_{x}$ determines a non-zero prime ideal $P_{x}$ of $\mathbb{Z}$. Consequently, there exists a prime number $p \in \mathbb{Z}$, such that $P_{x}=p \mathbb{Z}$. The quotient semi-norm on $\mathbb{Z} / p \mathbb{Z}=\mathbb{F}_{p}$ is a norm, so it is trivial. Consequently, $|\cdot|_{x}=|\cdot|_{p, 0}$, where $|x|_{p, 0}:=1$ if $p \nmid x$, and $|x|_{p, 0}:=0$ otherwise. (Remark that, informally, " $\lim _{\beta \rightarrow+\infty}|\cdot|_{p}^{\beta}=|\cdot|_{p, 0}$ ".)


Finally, $\mathcal{M}(\mathbb{Z})=\left\{|\cdot|_{0},|\cdot|_{\infty}^{\alpha},|\cdot|_{p}^{\beta},|\cdot|_{p, 0}: 0<\alpha \leqslant 1, \beta>0, p-\right.$ prime $\}$. This gives us the following "tree-like" illustration of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbb{Z})$. For any prime $p$, there is a "branch" associated to it that is homeomorphic to an interval. There is an additional branch associated to the Euclidean norm $|\cdot|_{\infty}$, which is also homeomorphic to an interval. All of these branches come together at the "central" point of the tree, corresponding to the trivial valuation. The open neighborhoods of $|\cdot|_{0}$ have only finitely many boundary points, meaning they contain all but a finite amout of the branches of the tree.

We will see other important examples later. Berkovich spaces will be defined over a complete ultrametric field, for which the space $\mathcal{M}(k)$ will be relevant. There also exist Berkovich spaces defined over $\mathbb{Z}$ (i.e. over $\mathcal{M}(\mathbb{Z})$ ), which include at the same time elements of the Archimedean and non-Archimedean worlds (see [59]). This is an area of research that is in the rise.

Let $A$ be a Banach ring, and $x \in \mathcal{M}(A)$. Then, ker $|\cdot|_{x}$ is a closed and prime ideal of $A$, so $x$ induces a semi-norm $|\cdot|_{x}^{\prime}$ on the domain $A / \mathrm{ker}|\cdot|_{x}$. Moreover, for any $f, g \in A$ such that $|f-g|_{x}=0$, we have that $|f|_{x}=|g|_{x}$. Thus, $|f|_{x}=|\widetilde{f}|_{x}^{\prime}$, where $\tilde{f}$ is the image of $f$ in $A / \mathrm{ker}|\cdot|_{x}$. Consequently, the quotient semi-norm in $A / \mathrm{ker}|\cdot|_{x}$ is a multiplicative norm, and can thus be extended to Frac $\left(A / \operatorname{ker}|\cdot|_{x}\right)$.

Definition 1.1.33. Let $A$ be a Banach ring. For any $x \in \mathcal{M}(A)$, let us denote by $\mathcal{H}(x)$ the completion of $\operatorname{Frac}\left(A / \operatorname{ker}|\cdot|_{x}\right)$ with respect to the quotient norm. We call it the completed residue field of $x$.

Remark that there is a canonical isometric embedding $k \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}(x)$, implying $\mathcal{H}(x)$ is a complete ultrametric field.

The completed residue fields are important objects in Berkovich's theory. These are the fields where analytic functions take their values.

Before stating the main properties of the Berkovich spectrum, let us present another construction of it, which draws an analogy with the affine spectrum.

Definition 1.1.34. Let $A$ be a Banach ring. Let $K, L$ be two complete ultrametric fields, such that there exist bounded maps $\phi_{K}: A \rightarrow K, \phi_{L}: A \rightarrow L$.

The morphisms $\phi_{K}, \phi_{L}$ are said to be equivalent if there exists a complete field $M$, a bounded morphism $A \rightarrow M$, and embeddings $M \hookrightarrow L, M \hookrightarrow K$ corresponding to complete ultrametric field extensions, such that the following diagram commutes.


Lemma 1.1.35. [6, Remark 1.2.2(ii)] Let $A$ be a Banach ring. The points of $\mathcal{M}(A)$ are the equivalence classes (Definition 1.1.34) of bounded morphisms $A \rightarrow K$, where $K$ is a complete ultrametric field.

For a proof of Lemma 1.1.35, see [41, pg. 7, Algebraic Characters].
A crucial property of the Berkovich spectrum is the following:
Theorem 1.1.36. [6, Theorem 1.2.1] Let $A$ be a Banach ring. Then, $\mathcal{M}(A)$ is a non-empty compact space.

Remark 1.1.37. In this text, compact will always mean quasi-compact and Hausdorff.
The fact that $\mathcal{M}(A)$ is compact (and hence Hausdorff) is one of the main differences with the algebraic setting. As we will later see, the spectra of certain Banach rings form the building blocks of Berkovich spaces, and the fact that the building blocks are compact is a source of technical difficulties. Namely, the structural sheaf of analytic functions will be defined over these building blocks and will be "nice" there, but this will generally not be the case for opens.

Another very important property is the following:
Theorem 1.1.38 (The maximum modulus principle, [6, Theorem 1.3.1]). Let $A$ be a Banach ring. Then, for any $a \in A, \rho_{A}(a)=\max _{x \in \mathcal{M}(A)}|a|_{x}$, where $\rho_{A}$ is the spectral radius associated to the norm on $A$.

Information can be obtained on the Banach ring $A$ by looking at the infinite vector $\left(|\cdot|_{x}\right)_{x \in \mathcal{M}(A)}$. Here is an example.

Lemma 1.1.39 ([42, Corollary 3.15]). Let $A$ be a Banach ring. An element $a \in A$ is invertible if and only if $|a|_{x} \neq 0$ for all $x \in \mathcal{M}(A)$.

Let us finish the construction of a functor from the category of Banach rings to the category of topological spaces $(A \mapsto \mathcal{M}(A))$ by giving the class of morphisms that we consider.

Lemma 1.1.40. Let $A, B$ be Banach rings. Any bounded morphism $A \rightarrow B$ gives rise to a continuous map $\varphi: \mathcal{M}(B) \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(A)$.

For a proof, see [41, pg. 8, Induced maps].
Remark 1.1.41. Let $f: A \rightarrow B$ be a bounded morphism of Banach rings. Let $\varphi: \mathcal{M}(B) \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(A)$ be the induced continuous morphism of their spectra. For any $x \in$ $\mathcal{M}(B)$, there exists a natural isometric embedding $\mathcal{H}(y) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}(x)$, where $y:=\varphi(x)$.

Here is a description of the fibers of these morphisms.
Lemma 1.1.42. Let $A, B$ be Banach rings. Let $f: A \rightarrow B$ be a bounded morphism, and $\varphi: \mathcal{M}(B) \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(A)$ the induced morphism of their spectra. Then, for any $x \in \mathcal{M}(A)$, the fiber $\varphi^{-1}(x)$ is homeomorphic to $\mathcal{M}\left(B \widehat{\otimes}_{A} \mathcal{H}(x)\right)$.

For a proof, see [41, pg. 14, Fibers].
Finally, the following important result will be very useful.
Proposition 1.1.43 ([6, Corollary 1.3.6]). Let $k$ be a complete field. Let $A$ be $a$ Banach $k$-algebra. Set $G=\operatorname{Gal}\left(k^{s} / k\right)$, where $k^{s}$ is the separable closure of $k$. Then, $G$ acts on $\widehat{\bar{k}}$ and $\mathcal{M}\left(A \widehat{\otimes}_{k} \widehat{\bar{k}}\right)$. Moreover, there is a homeomorphism $\mathcal{M}\left(A \widehat{\otimes}_{k} \widehat{\bar{k}}\right) / G \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(A)$.

### 1.2. The Analytic Affine Line

Before continuing with an overview on the construction of Berkovich spaces, we make a digression in order to describe in detail (only as a topological space) a fundamental example of these objects. As we will later see, said example illustrates well the main geometric properties of Berkovich analytic curves. The objects presented here were originally defined in [6, Section 1.5].
1.2.1. The analytic affine space. Let $A$ be a Banach ring. Set
$\mathbb{A}_{A}^{n, \text { an }}=\left\{\right.$ multiplicative semi-norms on $A\left[T_{1}, T_{2}, \ldots, T_{n}\right]$ that are bounded on $\left.A\right\}$.
We endow the above set with the coarsest topology for which the map $\mathbb{A}_{A}^{n, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, x \mapsto|f|_{x}$, is continuous for all $f \in A\left[T_{1}, T_{2}, \ldots, T_{n}\right]$.

The space $\mathbb{A}_{A}^{n, \text { an }}$ is called the $n$-dimensional analytic affine space over $A$. If $n=1$, we say that $\mathbb{A}_{A}^{1, \text { an }}$ is the analytic affine line over $A$. The analytic affine space has nice topological properties ( $c f$. [59, Théorème 1.1.13]).

Example 1.2.1. If $A$ is $\mathbb{C}$ endowed with $|\cdot|_{\infty}$, then by the Gelfand-Mazur theorem we obtain the usual complex affine $n$-dimensional space $\mathbb{A}_{\mathbb{C}}^{n, \text { an }}$ homeomorphic to $\mathbb{C}^{n}$.

The case of most interest to us is when $A$ is a complete ultrametric field $k$ and $n=1$. Arguably, these are the (non-trivial) Berkovich spaces that can be described the best. We now focus on that.

Definition 1.2.2. For any $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$, let $\mathcal{H}(x)$ be the completion of $\operatorname{Frac}\left(k[T] / \operatorname{ker}|\cdot|_{x}\right)$ with respect to the quotient semi-norm. Remark that $\mathcal{H}(x)$ is a complete ultrametric field and there is a canonical isometric embedding $k \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}(x)$. We denote by $\widetilde{k}$, resp. $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)}$, the residue field of $k$, resp. $\mathcal{H}(x)$.
1.2.2. $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, a n}$ : the trivially valued case. Let $k$ be a trivially valued field. For any $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$, let $p_{x}:=\operatorname{ker}|\cdot|_{x}$.

If $p_{x} \neq 0$, then there exists an irreducible polynomial $P(T) \in k[T]$ such that $p_{x}=(P)$. Then, $\mathcal{H}(x)=k[T] /(P)$, and since $k$ is trivially valued, we obtain that $\mathcal{H}(x)$ is trivially valued. Consequently, $x$ determines the following semi-norm on $k[T]: Q \mapsto 0$ if $P \mid Q$, and $Q \mapsto 1$ otherwise. We denote $\eta_{P, 0}:=x$.

Suppose $p_{x}=0$. Then, $|\cdot|_{x}$ is a multiplicative norm on $k[T]$ (and hence on $k(T)$ ) which when restricted to $k$ is the trivial norm. This implies that $|\cdot|_{x}$ is non-Archimedean (see Lemma 1.1.12).

- If $|T|_{x} \leqslant 1$, then for any polynomial $P$ over $k,|P|_{x} \leqslant 1$. Let $m_{x}:=\{P \in k[T]:$ $\left.|P|_{x}<1\right\}$. If $m_{x}=0$, then $x$ is the trivial norm on $k[T]$, which we denote by $\eta_{T, 1}$. If $m_{x} \neq 0$, then there exists an irreducible polynomial $Q$ over $k$, such that $m_{x}=(Q)$. Set $r:=|Q|_{x} \in(0,1)$. Then, for any $P \in k[T] \backslash\{0\},|P|_{x}=r^{v_{Q}(P)}$, where $v_{Q}(P)$ is the largest $n \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $Q^{n} \mid P$. We will denote this point by $\eta_{Q, r}$. Remark that $\mathcal{H}\left(\eta_{Q, r}\right)$ is the completion of $k[T]$ with respect to the $Q$-adic valuation.
- Suppose $|T|_{x}>1$, and set $s:=|T|_{x}>1$. Then, for any $P \in k[T] \backslash\{0\},|P|_{x}=$ $s^{\operatorname{deg} P}$. We denote this point by $\eta_{T, s}$. The field $\mathcal{H}\left(\eta_{T, s}\right)$ is then isomorphic to the field of Laurent series $k\left(\left(T^{-1}\right)\right)$.


Figure 1: $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ for $k$-trivially valued
We obtain the above "tree-like" illustration of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. To each irreducible polynomial over $k$, a branch homeomorphic to an interval is associated. There is an additional branch corresponding to $\eta_{T, s}, s>1$, which is also homeomorphic to an interval. They all come together at the "central point" $\eta_{T, 1}$ - the trivial valuation. An open neighborhood of $\eta_{T, 1}$ contains all but a finite number of these branches (i.e. it has finite boundary).
1.2.3. $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ : the algebraically closed case $([\mathbf{6}, 1.4 .4])$. Let $(k,|\cdot|)$ be a complete non-trivially valued ultrametric field that is algebraically closed.

- For any $a \in k$, let $\eta_{T-a, 0}: k[T] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, P(T) \mapsto|P(a)|$. This determines a multiplicative semi-norm on $k[T]$ extending the absolute value on $k$, so $\eta_{T-a, 0}$ is a point of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$; it is said to be a type 1 point. Remark that $\mathcal{H}(x)=k$. We will sometimes denote this point by $\eta_{a, 0}$.
- For any $a \in k$ and $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, let $\eta_{T-a, r}: k[T] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, P(T)=\sum_{n} a_{n}(T-a)^{n} \mapsto$ $\max _{n}\left|a_{n}\right| r^{n}$. This is a multiplicative norm on $k[T]$ extending the absolute value on $k$, so $\eta_{T-a, r} \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text {,an }}$. Remark that $\eta_{T-a, r}$ does not depend on $a$, but only on the closed disc $B(a, r)$ in $k$ centered at $a$ and of radius $r$ (i.e. for any $b \in B(a, r)$, $\left.\eta_{T-b, r}=\eta_{T-a, r}\right)$. We will sometimes simply denote $\eta_{a, r}$.

These kinds of points behave differently depending on $r$. If $r \in\left|k^{\times}\right|, \eta_{a, r}$ is said to be a type 2 point. In that case, $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)} \cong \widetilde{k}(T)$ and $|\mathcal{H}(x)|=|k|$.

If $r \notin|k|$, then $\eta_{a, r}$ is said to be a type 3 point. If that is the case, then $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)}=\widetilde{k}$, and $\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|$is generated by $\left|k^{\times}\right|$and $r$.
Let $\mathscr{B}:=\left(B_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ be a sequence of decreasing closed discs in $k$, i.e. $B_{n+1} \subseteq B_{n}$ for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$. Let $a_{n} \in k$ and $r_{n} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$ be such that $B_{n}=B\left(a_{n}, r_{n}\right)$. Let us denote by $|\cdot|_{B_{n}}$ the (unique) point $\eta_{a_{n}, r_{n}}$ of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ determined by $B_{n}$ as above. Then, $\mathscr{B}$ determines a point of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ as follows: $|\cdot|_{\mathscr{B}}: k[T] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, P(T) \mapsto \inf _{n}|P(T)|_{B_{n}}$.

Berkovich showed that all of the points of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ are of the form described above. In particular, remark that: (1) if $\bigcap_{n} B_{n}$ is a single point $a \in k$, then $|\cdot|_{\mathscr{B}}$ is the type 1 point $\eta_{a, 0} ;(2)$ if $\bigcap_{n} B_{n}$ is a closed disc centered at $a \in k$ and of radius $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, then $|\cdot|_{\mathscr{B}}$ is the point $\eta_{a, r}$, which is of type 2 or 3 depending on the nature of $r$.

However, this does not always cover all of the possibilites. Namely, it could happen that $\bigcap_{n} B_{n}=\emptyset$, in which case we say that the field $k$ is spherically complete. If this is the case, $\mathscr{B}$ gives rise to a point said of type 4 (these are in general the most complicated points to work with). Let $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ be a type 4 point. By $[\mathbf{6}, 1.4 .4],|\mathcal{H}(x)|=|k|$, and $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)}=\widetilde{k}$.

The above is an illustration of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ in this case. Remark that it is an "infinitely branched tree". The types of points can be read in the drawing. Namely:

- type 2 points are the points of branching in the tree (e.g. $\eta_{T, 1}=\eta_{T-1,1}$ );
- type 3 points are those where there is no branching (e.g. $\eta_{T, r}$ with $\left.r \notin|k|\right)$;
- type 1 and 4 points are the "leaves" of the tree.

The topology on $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text {,an }}$ is quite complicated. All of the injective "paths" are isomorphic to a segment. For points of type 2, neighborhoods resemble somewhat to the neighborhoods of the "central" point in the trivially valued case.
1.2.4. $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ : the general case. Suppose $k$ is a complete ultrametric field (not necessarily algebraically closed).

There is a canonical continuous open surjective morphism $\varphi: \mathbb{A}_{\widehat{\widehat{k}}}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Moreover, let $G$ denote the absolute Galois group of $k$, i.e. $G=\operatorname{Gal}\left(k^{s} / k\right)$, where $k^{s}$ is the separable closure of $k$. Then, $G$ acts on $\mathbb{A}_{\frac{\mathbb{k}}{1, a n}}^{1,}$ preserving the types of points, and by Proposition 1.1.43, there is an isomorphism $\mathbb{A}_{\overline{\bar{k}}}^{1, \text { an }} / G \cong \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$.


Figure 2: $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ for $k$ algebraically closed

A point $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is said to be of type $i$ if there exists $y \in \varphi^{-1}(x)$ that is of type $i$, $i=1,2,3,4$. (This is well defined seeing as then all of the points of $\varphi^{-1}(x)$ will be of type $i$.)

For any $a \in k$ and any $r \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}$, we denote by $\eta_{a, r}$ the point $\varphi\left(\eta_{a, r}\right)$ of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$.
Definition 1.2.3. A point $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text {,an }}$ is said to be rigid if $\mathcal{H}(x) / k$ is a finite field extension.

Lemma 1.2.4. There is a bijection between the rigid points of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ and the irreducible polynomials over $k$ (up to multiplication by an element of $k^{\times}$), given by $x \mapsto k e r|\cdot|{ }_{x}$.

Proof. By their definition, the rigid points of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text {,an }}$ are exactly the ones that determine semi-norms on $k[T]$ of non-zero kernel. Let $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ be a rigid point. Then, $\operatorname{ker}|\cdot|_{x}$ is a non-zero proper prime ideal of $k[T]$, and as such is generated by a (unique up to multiplication by an element of $k^{\times}$) irreducible polynomial $P_{x}$ over $k$.

Let $P \in k[T]$ be an irreducible polynomial. Let $\alpha \in \widehat{\bar{k}}$ be a root of $P$. Then, $|P|_{\varphi\left(\eta_{\alpha, 0}\right)}=0$, so $x_{P}:=\varphi\left(\eta_{\alpha, 0}\right) \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is a rigid point, and $\operatorname{ker}|\cdot|_{x_{P}}=(P)$.

For any irreducible polynomial $P$ over $k$, let us denote the unique rigid point $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ such that $|P|_{x}=0$ by $\eta_{P, 0}$. By the lemma above, the set of rigid points of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is given by $\left\{\eta_{P, 0}: P\right.$ an irreducible polynomial over $\left.k\right\}$.

The illustration of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text { an }}$ in the general case is very similar to that in the algebraically closed case. It is an infinitely branched tree, where type 2 points are the branching ones,
type 3 points the non branching ones, and type 1 and 4 the "leaves". In particular, $\eta_{P, 0}$ is a leaf of the tree for any irreducible polynomial $P$ over $k$.

Remark 1.2.5. With the terminology introduced here, remark that in the trivially valued case, the only type 2 point is $\eta_{0,1}$. The type 1 points are the rigid points, and all the rest are type 3 points of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$.

Also, remark that in the algebraically closed case, the type 1 points are the rigid points. This is only true if $k$ is algebraically closed or trivially valued.

We give a more detailed description of the points of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ in part 1.8.4.

### 1.2.5. The analytic projective line.

Definition 1.2.6. As usual, one can obtain the $n$-dimensional projective analytic space over $k$, denoted $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{n \text {,an }}$, by gluing $n+1$ copies of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$, or equivalently, compactifying $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$.

In particular, for $n=1$, the projective analytic line over $k$ is obtained by adding an $\infty$ point to $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$.

The $\infty$ point of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is a rigid (even rational) point (it is the unique point for which $|1 / T|=0$ ). We will say that $\infty$ is a type 1 point of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. For any other point $x \in \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$, we will say that $x$ is of type $i$ if it is of type $i$ as a point of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}, i=1,2,3,4$.

We give a more detailed description of the points of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ (and thus of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ ) in 1.8.4.

### 1.3. Affinoid Algebras

Affinoid algebras in Berkovich's theory are the analogue of finite type algebras in algebraic geometry. Throughout this section, let $(k,|\cdot|)$ denote a complete ultrametric field.

### 1.3.1. Definition and some properties.

Definition 1.3.1. Let $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $r_{1}, r_{2}, \ldots, r_{n} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. We denote

$$
k\left\{r_{1}^{-1} T_{1}, r_{2}^{-1} T_{2}, \ldots, r_{n}^{-1} T_{n}\right\}:=\left\{\sum_{l \in \mathbb{N}^{n}} a_{l} \underline{T}^{l}: a_{l} \in k, \lim _{|l| \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{l}\right| \underline{\underline{l}}^{l}=0\right\}
$$

where for any $l=\left(l_{1}, l_{2}, \ldots, l_{n}\right) \in \mathbb{N}^{n},|l|:=l_{1}+l_{2}+\cdots+l_{n}$, and for any $n$-tuple $\underline{\alpha}:=\left(\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}\right), \underline{\alpha}^{l}:=\prod_{i=1}^{n} \alpha_{i}^{l_{i}}$. We sometimes use the notation $k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}$ for $k\left\{r_{1}^{-1} T_{1}, r_{2}^{-1} T_{2}, \ldots, r_{n}^{-1} T_{n}\right\}$. This is a $k$-algebra.

For $r_{1}=r_{2}=\cdots=r_{n}=1$, we obtain the so-called Tate affinoid algebra $k\{\underline{T}\}$.
Lemma 1.3.2. For any $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and any $\underline{r} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{n}$, the map $\|\cdot\|: k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}$, $\sum_{l \in \mathbb{N}^{n}} a_{l} \underline{T}^{l} \mapsto \max _{l \in \mathbb{N}^{n}}\left|a_{l}\right| \underline{\underline{r}}^{l}$, defines a non-Archimedean multiplicative norm on $k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}$, which satisfies $\|\cdot\|_{\mid k}=|\cdot|$. Moreover, $\left(k\left\{\underline{\underline{r}}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\},\|\cdot\|\right)$ is a Banach $k$-algebra.

For a proof, see [42, Lemma 4.8]. In fact, $k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}$ is the completion of $k[\underline{T}]$ with respect to the norm $\|\cdot\|$ introduced in Lemma 1.3.2.

Definition 1.3.3. A Banach $k$-algebra $A$ is said to be a $k$-affinoid algebra if there exist $n \in \mathbb{N}, \underline{r} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{n}$, and a surjective admissible morphism $k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\} \rightarrow A$.

The Banach $k$-algebra $A$ is said to be a strict $k$-affinoid algebra if there exist $n \in \mathbb{N}$, and a surjective admissible morphism $k\{\underline{T}\} \rightarrow A$.

Before anything else, let us note that for any complete ultrametric field extension $K$ of $k$, the Banach $K$-algebra $A \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K$ is a $K$-affinoid algebra. Also, the completed tensor product of two $k$-affinoid algebras is also a $k$-affinoid algebra (for both of these statements, recall Theorem 1.1.27).

Remark that the norm of an affinoid algebra always has a representative in its equivalence class that is non-Archimedean. Before saying anything else about affinoid algebras, let us remark the following.

LEMMA 1.3.4. Let $(A,\|\cdot\|)$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra, where we suppose that $\|\cdot\|$ is the norm obtained from some surjective admissible morphism $k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\} \rightarrow$ A. The norm $\|\cdot\|$ is $k$-linear, meaning: $\forall a \in k, \forall x \in A,\|a x\|=|a|\|x\|$. Moreover, $\|\cdot\|_{\mid k}=|\cdot|$.

In practice, when working with $k$-affinoid algebras, we usually (in this text, always) only encounter norms obtained like the one in Lemma 1.3.2.

Strict affinoid algebras are the central algebraic object in Tate's rigid geometry (where they are simply called "affinoid algebras"). As a consequence, they have been extensively studied (e.g. in [11]). They share many algebraic properties with finite type algebras, e.g. there is a Nullstellensatz and a Noether Normalization Lemma (meaning for any strict $k$-affinoid algebra $A$, there exists a finite bounded morphism $\left.k\left\{T_{1}, T_{2}, \ldots, T_{n}\right\} \hookrightarrow A\right)$.

Lemma 1.3.5 ([11, 6.1.5/4]). A $k$-affinoid algebra $A$ is strict if and only if there exist $n \in \mathbb{N}, r_{i} \in \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, and a surjective admissible morphism $k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\} \rightarrow A$.

There is a "trick" to study affinoid algebras by using known information on strict affinoid algebras. The following example gives us the main tool for this trick.

ExAmple 1.3.6 ([6, pg. 21], [22, 1.2]). Let $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\underline{r} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{n}$. Let $K_{\underline{r}}$ denote the $k$-algebra

$$
\left\{\sum_{l \in \mathbb{Z}^{n}} a_{l} \underline{T}^{l}: a_{l} \in k, \lim _{|l| \rightarrow \infty}\left|a_{l}\right| \underline{r}^{l}=0\right\}
$$

The map $\|\cdot\|: \sum_{l \in \mathbb{Z}^{n}} a_{l} \underline{T}^{l} \mapsto \max _{l}\left|a_{l}\right| \underline{r}^{l}$ determines a multiplicative norm on $K_{\underline{r}}$.
Moreover, there is an isometric isomorphism of $k$-algebras $K_{\underline{r}} \cong k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{X}, \underline{r} \underline{Y}\right\} /\left(X_{i} Y_{i}-1\right)_{i}$, where the norm on the right is the quotient one, so $K_{r}$ is a $k$-affinoid algebra.

If $r_{1}, r_{2}, \ldots, r_{n}$ are linearly independent over $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$, then $K_{\underline{r}}$ is a field.
The construction above can be obtained by starting with $\bar{n}=1$ and then iterating. This is because $K_{\underline{r}} \cong K_{r_{1}} \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K_{r_{2}} \widehat{\otimes}_{k} \cdots \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K_{r_{n}}$.

LEmma 1.3.7. For any $k$-affinoid algebra $A$, there exists a non-trivially field $K_{\underline{r}}$ constructed as in Example 1.3.6, such that $A \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K_{\underline{r}}$ is a strict $K_{\underline{r}}$-affinoid algebra.

For a proof of the above, see [41, pg. 30].
Proposition 1.3.8 ([6, Proposition 2.1.2]). Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra and $r \notin \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$.
(1) The $\operatorname{map} A \rightarrow A \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K_{r}$ is an isometric embedding.
(2) Let $B, C$ be two $k$-affinoid algebras. Then, $A \rightarrow B \rightarrow C$ is exact and admissible if and only if $A \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K_{r} \rightarrow B \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K_{r} \rightarrow C \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K_{r}$ is exact and admissible.
For a proof, see [41, pg. 29, Proof of Proposition 2.1.2].
A few of the most important algebraic properties of affinoid algebras are the following:

Theorem 1.3.9. (1) Any ideal of a $k$-affinoid algebra is closed.
(2) A $k$-affinoid algebra is Noetherian and excellent.

For the Noetherianity and the fact that all ideals are closed, see [6, Proposition 2.1.3]. The property of being excellent was shown to be true more recently, in [21, Théorème 2.13].

In particular, part (1) of Theorem 1.3.9 tells us that for any $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\underline{r} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{n}$, the $k$-algebra $k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\} / I$, where $I$ is an ideal of $k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}$, is a $k$-affinoid algebra (with respect to the quotient norm). More generally, any quotient of a $k$-affinoid algebra is a $k$-affinoid algebra with respect to the quotient norm. (We will see later, in Section 4.2, that a $k$-affinoid algebra can be endowed with the structure of a Banach $k$-algebra in a unique way. This is proven for strict affinoid algebras in [11, 6.1.3/2]. The general case follows quickly from that.)

The set of $k$-affinoid algebras endowed with bounded morphisms forms a category.
Definition 1.3.10. For a $k$-affinoid algebra $(A,|\cdot|), n \in \mathbb{N}$, and $\underline{r} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{n}$, let $A\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}:=\left\{\sum_{l \in \mathbb{N}^{n}} a_{l} \underline{T}^{l}: a_{l} \in A, \lim _{|l| \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{l}\right| \underline{\underline{r}}^{l}=0\right\}$.

We endow this $k$-algebra with the norm:

$$
\left\|\sum_{l \in \mathbb{N}^{n}} a_{l} \underline{T}^{l}\right\|=\max _{l \in \mathbb{N}^{n}}\left|a_{l}\right| \underline{\underline{l}}^{l},
$$

which makes it a Banach $A$-algebra.
Definition 1.3.11. Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. A Banach $A$-algebra is said to be an $A$-affinoid algebra if there exist $n \in \mathbb{N}, \underline{r} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{n}$, and a surjective admissible morphism $A\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\} \rightarrow B$.

The following is a consequence of Theorem 1.1.27.
Lemma 1.3.12. Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. Any $A$-affinoid algebra is a $k$-affinoid algebra.

Another useful result is the following:
Lemma 1.3.13 ([6, Corollary 2.1.5]). Let $K_{1}, K_{2}$ be two complete ultrametric field extensions of $k$. Let $f: A \rightarrow B$ be a bounded $k$-linear morphism going from a $K_{1}$-affinoid algebra to a $K_{2}$-affinoid algebra.

Let $b_{i} \in B$ and $r_{i} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, such that $\rho_{B}\left(b_{i}\right) \leqslant r_{i}$ for all $i$, where $\rho_{B}$ is the spectral semi-norm on $B$. There exists a unique bounded morphism $g: A\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\} \rightarrow B$ extending $f$, such that $T_{i} \mapsto b_{i}$ for all $i$.
1.3.2. Affinoid algebras and the spectral radius. As we saw in Subsection 1.1.3, the spectral radius $\rho_{A}$ of a Banach ring $A$ determines naturally a non-Archimedean seminorm on $A$ (which doesn't depend on the representative of the equivalence class of the norm on $A$ ).

Proposition 1.3.14 ([6, Corollary 2.1.6]). A $k$-affinoid algebra $A$ is strict if and only if $\rho_{A}(a) \in \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \cup\{0\}$ for all $a \in A$.

The following is a good example of why the spectral semi-norm is very useful.
Proposition 1.3.15. Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra, and $\rho_{A}$ the corresponding spectral semi-norm.
(1) $\left[\mathbf{3}\right.$, Proposition 2.7.3(2)] Let $f \in A$. Then, $\rho_{A}(f)=0$ if and only if $f$ is nilpotent. The spectral semi-norm $\rho_{A}$ on $A$ is a norm if and only if $A$ is reduced.
(2) [42, Proposition 9.13] If $A$ is reduced, then $\rho_{A}$ is equivalent to the norm on $A$.

### 1.3.3. Finite modules/algebras over a $k$-affinoid algebra.

Definition 1.3.16. Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. A Banach $A$-module $M$ is said to be finite if there exists a surjective admissible morphism $A^{n} \rightarrow M$.

A Banach $A$-algebra $B$ is said to be finite if it is a finite $A$-module.
THEOREM 1.3.17 ([6, Proposition 2.1.9]). Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. The forgetful functor induces an isomorphism between the categories of finite Banach A-modules (with bounded $A$-linear maps) and finite $A$-modules (with $A$-linear maps).

The same result remains true when replacing module by algebra (see [6, Proposition 2.1.12]). The following are properties that we will use in the next chapters.
Proposition 1.3.18 ([6, Proposition 2.1.14(i)]). A $k$-affinoid algebra that is an integral domain is Japanese.

Proposition 1.3.19. Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. Any finite $A$-algebra is a $k$-affinoid algebra.

The above is shown for strict affinoid algebras in [11, 6.1.3, Proposition 4]. The general case can be deduced from [6]: Proposition 2.1.11 and Corollary 2.1.8.

REMARK 1.3.20. As there is a Banach Open Mapping Theorem for any non-trivially valued complete ultrametric field $k$, if $A, B$ are $k$-affinoid algebras, any bounded surjective morphism $A \rightarrow B$ is admissible.

### 1.4. Affinoid Spaces

Throughout this section, let $\left(k,|\cdot|_{k}\right)$ be a complete ultrametric field.
1.4.1. A first definition. In order to simplify the terminology we will soon use, let us, for now, fix the following (we hold off on making this a definition until the construction of the sheaf of analytic functions):

Convention 1.4.1. A $k$-affinoid space is the Berkovich spectrum of a $k$-affinoid algebra.

A $k$-affinoid space $X$ is said to be strict if there exists a strict $k$-affinoid algebra $A$ such that $X=\mathcal{M}(A)$.

A morphism $X \rightarrow Y$ of $k$-affinoid spaces is one induced by a bounded $k$-linear morphism $A_{Y} \rightarrow A_{X}$ of the corresponding $k$-affinoid algebras.

Lemma 1.4.2. Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. For any $x \in \mathcal{M}(A)$, the multiplicative semi-norm $|\cdot|_{x}$ is non-Archimedean. Moreover, $|\cdot|_{x \mid k}=|\cdot|_{k}$.
1.4.2. Affinoid domains. The goal here is to present, for Berkovich spaces, the analogue of an open affine subscheme. This is also a crucial step for the construction of the structural sheaf. Historically, the notion of an affinoid domain appears in Tate's rigid geometry. The main difference is that here these are closed subsets (even compact), whereas in rigid geometry they are open.

Convention 1.4.3. Let $\psi: A \rightarrow B$ be a bounded morphism of Banach rings. From now on, we will denote by $\psi^{\prime}$ the induced continuous morphism $\mathcal{M}(B) \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(A)$.

Let $(k,|\cdot|)$ be a complete ultrametric field.
Definition 1.4.4. Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra, and $X$ the corresponding $k$-affinoid space. An affinoid domain in $X$ is a pair $\left(V, A_{V}\right)$ such that:
(1) $V$ is a closed subset of $X$, and $A_{V}$ is a $k$-affinoid algebra;
(2) there exists a bounded morphism $\phi: A \rightarrow A_{V}$, such that $\phi^{\prime}\left(\mathcal{M}\left(A_{V}\right)\right) \subseteq V$;
(3) the following universal property is satisfied: for any bounded $k$-linear morphism $\varphi: A \rightarrow B$ such that $\varphi^{\prime}(\mathcal{M}(B)) \subseteq V$, where $B$ is a $K$-affinoid algebra for some complete ultrametric field extension $K / k$, there exists a unique bounded morphism $A_{V} \rightarrow B$ such that the following diagram is commutative.


We will say that $\left(V, A_{V}\right)$ is a strict affinoid domain in $X$ if $A_{V}$ is a strict $k$-affinoid algebra.
We start by giving important examples of these objects (that come from rigid geometry). Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra, and $X$ the corresponding $k$-affinoid space.

Example 1.4.5 (Weierstrass domains). Let $n \in \mathbb{N}, f_{1}, f_{2}, \ldots, f_{n} \in A$, and $r_{1}, r_{2}, \ldots, r_{n} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. Then, $V:=\left\{x \in X:\left|f_{i}\right|_{x} \leqslant r_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n\right\}$ is called a Weierstrass domain of $X$. Set $A_{V}:=A\left\{\underline{q}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\} /\left(T_{i}-f_{i}\right)_{i}$. This is an $A$-affinoid algebra with respect to the quotient norm (and thus also a $k$-affinoid algebra).

We will see in Lemma 1.4.8 that ( $V, A_{V}$ ) is an affinoid domain in $X$.
Example 1.4.6 (Laurent domains). Let $m, n \in \mathbb{N}, f_{i}, g_{j} \in A$, and $r_{i}, s_{j} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}, i=$ $1,2, \ldots, n, j=1,2, \ldots, m$. The set $V:=\left\{x \in X:\left|f_{i}\right|_{x} \leqslant r_{i},\left|g_{j}\right|_{x} \geqslant r_{j}, i, j\right\}$ is called a Laurent domain of $X$. Set $A_{V}:=A\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}, \underline{s} S\right\} /\left(T_{i}-f_{i}, g_{j} S_{j}-1\right)_{i, j}$. This is an $A$-affinoid algebra with respect to the quotient norm (and thus also a $k$-affinoid algebra).

We will see in Lemma 1.4.8 (by applying Lemma 1.4.9) that $\left(V, A_{V}\right)$ is an affinoid domain in $X$. Remark that a Weierstrass domain is a Laurent domain.

Laurent domains form a basis of neighborhoods of the topology on $X$. To see this, recall that the topology on $X$ is the coarsest one for which the map $X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, x \mapsto|a|_{x}$, is continuous for all $a \in A$.

Example 1.4.7 (Rational domains). Let $n \in \mathbb{N}, g, f_{i} \in A, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, be such that $\left(g, f_{1}, \ldots, f_{n}\right)=A$. Let $r_{i} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$. Then, the set $V:=\left\{x \in X:\left|f_{i}\right|_{x} \leqslant\right.$ $\left.r_{i}|g|_{x}, i=1,2, \ldots, n\right\}$ is said to be a rational domain in $X$. Set $A_{V}:=A\left\{\underline{r T^{-1}}\right\} /\left(g T_{i}-f_{i}\right)_{i}$. This is an $A$-affinoid algebra with respect to the quotient norm (and thus also a $k$-affinoid algebra). We will soon see that Laurent (and hence Weierstrass) domains are rational domains.

Lemma 1.4.8. The pair $\left(V, A_{V}\right)$ from Example 1.4 .7 is an affinoid domain in $X$.
Proof. The subset $V$ is clearly closed (again, recall the topology on $X$ ). Let the morphism $\phi: A \rightarrow A_{V}$ be the canonical one. Then, for any $x \in \mathcal{M}\left(A_{V}\right),|g|_{x}\left|T_{i}\right|_{x}=\left|f_{i}\right|_{x}$ for all $i$. Let $\|\cdot\|$ denote the (quotient) norm on $A_{V}$. Then, $\left\|T_{i}\right\| \leqslant r_{i}$ for all $i$, so $\left|T_{i}\right|_{x} \leqslant r_{i}$
for all $x \in \mathcal{M}\left(A_{V}\right)$, implying $\left|f_{i}\right|_{x}=\left|T_{i}\right|_{x}|g|_{x} \leqslant r_{i}|g|_{x}$. Consequently, $\left|f_{i}\right|_{\phi^{\prime}(x)} \leqslant r_{i}|g|_{\phi^{\prime}(x)}$ for all $i$, so $\phi^{\prime}(x) \in V$, and $\phi^{\prime}\left(\mathcal{M}\left(A_{V}\right)\right) \subseteq V$.

Let $\varphi: A \rightarrow B$ be a bounded $k$-linear morphism such that $\varphi^{\prime}(\mathcal{M}(B)) \subseteq V$, where $B$ is a $K$-affinoid algebra for some complete ultrametric field extension $K / k$. This means that for any $x \in \mathcal{M}(B),\left|\varphi\left(f_{i}\right)\right|_{x} \leqslant r_{i}|\varphi(g)|_{x}$ for all $i$. In turn, this implies that $\varphi(g)$ is invertible in $B$ : otherwise, by Lemma 1.1.39, there would exist $y \in \mathcal{M}(B)$ such that $|\varphi(g)|_{y}=0$, implying $\left|\varphi\left(f_{i}\right)\right|_{y}=0$ for all $i$. Thus, $|g|_{\varphi^{\prime}(y)}=\left|f_{i}\right|_{\varphi^{\prime}(y)}=0$ for all $i$, which contradicts the assumption $\left(g, f_{1}, \ldots, f_{n}\right)=A$. Hence, $\varphi(g)$ is invertible in $B$, and $\frac{\varphi\left(f_{i}\right)}{\varphi(g)} \in B$ for all $i$. Remark that for any $x \in \mathcal{M}(B),\left|\frac{\varphi\left(f_{i}\right)}{\varphi(g)}\right|_{x} \leqslant r_{i}$, so $\rho_{B}\left(\frac{\varphi\left(f_{i}\right)}{\varphi(g)}\right) \leqslant r_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$. By Lemma 1.3.13, there is a unique bounded morphism $A\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\} \rightarrow B, T_{i} \mapsto \frac{\varphi\left(f_{i}\right)}{\varphi(g)}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, extending the morphism $A \rightarrow B$. Clearly, this factorizes through $A_{V}$ via bounded morphisms: $A\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\} \rightarrow A_{V} \rightarrow B$. The uniqueness of the obtained morphism $A_{V} \rightarrow B$ is clear from the construction.

Lemma 1.4.9. A Laurent domain is a rational domain.
The proof comes down to showing that the intersection of rational domains is a rational domain. For this, see [11, 7.2.3/7].

Let us describe precisely the relationship between $V$ and $A_{V}$.
Proposition 1.4.10 ([6, Proposition 2.2.4]). Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra and $X$ the corresponding $k$-affinoid space. Let $\left(V, A_{V}\right)$ be an affinoid domain in $X$.
(1) The morphism $\mathcal{M}\left(A_{V}\right) \rightarrow X$ is injective with image $V$. In other words, $\mathcal{M}\left(A_{V}\right)=V$. In particular, the morphism $A \rightarrow A_{V}$ is uniquely determined by $V$.
(2) The morphism $A \rightarrow A_{V}$ is flat.

Affinoid domains behave well (these can be checked using the definition):
Proposition 1.4.11. (1) Let $\phi^{\prime}: X \rightarrow Y$ be a morphism of $k$-affinoid spaces, where $X=\mathcal{M}(B)$ and $Y=\mathcal{M}(A)$. Let $\left(V, A_{V}\right)$ be an affinoid domain in $Y$. Then, $\left(\phi^{\prime-1}(V), A_{V} \widehat{\otimes}_{A} B\right)$ is an affinoid domain in $X$.
(2) Let $X$ be a $k$-affinoid space and $A$ its corresponding $k$-algebra. Let $\left(U, A_{U}\right),\left(V, A_{V}\right)$ be affinoid domains in $X$. Then, $\left(U \cap V, A_{U} \widehat{\otimes}_{A} A_{V}\right)$ is an affinoid domain in $X$.
(3) Let $X$ be a $k$-affinoid space. Let $\left(U, A_{U}\right)$ be an affinoid domain in $X$. Let $\left(V, A_{V}\right)$ be an affinoid domain in $U$. Then, $\left(V, A_{V}\right)$ is an affinoid domain in $X$.

The first two parts of the statement above remain true when replacing affinoid by Weierstrass or Laurent or rational. The third one remains true for Weierstrass and rational domains, but not always for Laurent ones.

As a direct consequence of the universal property for affinoid domains, we can show that the completed residue field of a point does not depend on the affinoid domain containing it.

Lemma 1.4.12. Let $X$ be a $k$-affinoid space. Let $\left(V, A_{V}\right)$ be an affinoid domain in $V$. For any $x \in V$, let us denote by $\mathcal{H}(x)$ (resp. $\mathcal{H}_{V}(x)$ ) the completed residue field of $x$ when considering $x$ as a point in $X$ (resp. $V$ ). Then, there is an isometric isomorphism $\mathcal{H}(x) \rightarrow \mathcal{H}_{V}(x)$.

Remark 1.4.13. From now on, we will denote an affinoid domain simply by $V$ (instead of $\left.\left(V, A_{V}\right)\right)$. This causes no ambiguity considering Proposition 1.4.10.

The following outstanding result is used to simplify the construction of the structural sheaf (it had not yet been shown when Tate wrote [63]). In the rigid case it was proven by Gerritzen and Grauert, and it was generalized to the setting of Berkovich spaces by both Ducros and Temkin (see e.g. [65]).

Theorem 1.4.14 (Gerritzen-Grauert). Let $X$ be a $k$-affinoid space. Any affinoid domain in $X$ is a finite union of rational domains.

The following two results will be useful to us in the next chapters.
Proposition 1.4.15 ([6, Proposition 2.2.3(iii)]). Suppose $k$ is non-trivially valued. Let $X$ be a strict $k$-affinoid space. Then, the strict affinoid domains in $X$ form a basis of neighborhoods of the topology on $X$.

Lemma 1.4.16 ([6, Corollary 2.2.10]). Let $V \rightarrow X$ be a morphism of $k$-affinoid spaces such that $V$ is a rational domain in $X$. Let us denote by $A_{V}$, resp. $A_{X}$, the corresponding $k$-affinoid algebras. Set $S_{V}:=\left\{a \in A_{X}:|a|_{x} \neq 0\right.$ for all $\left.x \in V\right\}$. Then, $S_{V}^{-1} A_{X}$ is dense in $A_{V}$.
1.4.3. The structural sheaf. Recall that $(k,|\cdot|)$ denotes a complete ultrametric field. Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra and $X$ the corresponding $k$-affinoid space.

The Gerritzen-Grauert Theorem is a very useful tool for proving the next results as it allows one to reduce to the case of rational domains.

Theorem 1.4.17 (Tate's Acyclicity Theorem, [6, Proposition 2.2.5]). Let ( $\left.V_{i}, A_{V_{i}}\right)_{i=1}^{n}$ be a cover of $X$, where $\left(V_{i}, A_{V_{i}}\right)$ is an affinoid domain in $X$ for all $i$. The following $\dot{C}$ ech complex is exact and admissible:

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 \longrightarrow & \prod_{i} A_{V_{i}} \longrightarrow \\
& \left(f_{i}\right)_{i} \mapsto\left(\left(f_{i}-f_{j}\right)_{\mid A_{V_{i}} \cap A_{V_{j}}}\right)_{i, j} \mapsto \cdots
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $S(X)$ denote the family of finite unions of affinoid domains in $X$. An element $V$ of $S(X)$ is said to be a special subset of $X$. Then, the special subsets of $X$ determine a $G$-topology on $X$, and Tate's Acyclicity theorem allows us to construct a sheaf for it.

Corollary 1.4.18 ([6, Corollary 2.2.6]). For any $V \in S(X)$, set

$$
A_{V}:=\operatorname{ker}\left(\prod_{i} A_{V_{i}} \rightarrow \prod_{i, j} A_{V_{i} \cap V_{j}}\right)
$$

where $\left(V_{i}\right)_{i=1}^{n}$ is a finite cover by affinoid domains of $V$. Then:

- $A_{V}$ is a Banach $k$-algebra which does not depend on the affinoid cover $\left(V_{i}\right)_{i=1}^{n}$ of $V$;
- $V \mapsto A_{V}$ determines a sheaf on the $G$-topology of $X$;
- $V$ is an affinoid domain if and only if $A_{V}$ is a $k$-affinoid algebra and $V \cong \mathcal{M}\left(A_{V}\right)$.

Let us mention one result that will be important for the next chapters. As we will see later, it is true in much more generality in the case of analytic curves.

Corollary 1.4.19 ([6, Corollary 2.2.7]). Let $U, V$ be closed disjoint subsets of $X$. Then, $W:=U \cup V$ is an affinoid domain in $X$ if and only if $U$ and $V$ are affinoid domains. In that case, the corresponding affinoid algebras satisfy: $A_{W} \cong A_{U} \times A_{V}$.

We are finally in a position to give the following:
Definition 1.4.20. For any open $U \subseteq X$ (with respect to the Berkovich topology), set

$$
\mathcal{O}_{X}(U):=\lim _{\substack{V \subseteq U \\ V-\text { special }}} A_{V}
$$

in the category of $k$-algebras. This determines a sheaf on $X$ which we call the sheaf of analytic functions on $X$.

Remark that any $f \in \mathcal{O}_{X}(U)$ can be seen as a function in the sense $f: U \rightarrow \prod_{x \in U} \mathcal{H}(x)$, $x \mapsto\left(|f|_{x}\right)_{x \in U}$.
1.4.4. The stalks. As before, $X$ denotes a $k$-affinoid space.

LEmmA 1.4.21. (1) For any $x \in X, \mathcal{O}_{X, x}=\lim _{\rightarrow x \in V} A_{V}$, where the limit is taken over neighborhoods $V$ of $x$ that are affinoid domains in $X$. The ring $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ inherits a multiplicative semi-norm induced by the point $x$ on $A_{V}$, with $V$ as above. We will continue to denote it by $|\cdot|_{x}$.
(2) The ring $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ is local with maximal ideal $m_{x}:=\left\{f \in \mathcal{O}_{X, x}:|f|_{x}=0\right\}$.

Proof. The first part is a consequence of the fact that Laurent (hence affinoid) domains form a basis of neighborhoods of the Berkovich topology on $X$.

For the second part, clearly $m_{x}$ is a proper ideal of $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ (for instance, $|1|_{x}=1$ ). It suffices to show that for any $f \in \mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ such that $|f|_{x} \neq 0, f$ is invertible.

Let $g \in \mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ be such that $|g|_{x} \neq 0$. There exists a neighborhood $\left(W, A_{W}\right)$ of $x$ that is an affinoid domain such that $g \in A_{W} \backslash\{0\}$. Let $r>0$ be such that $|g|_{x}>r$. Then, the Laurent domain $W^{\prime}:=\left\{y \in W:|g|_{y} \geqslant r\right\}$ of $W$ contains $x$. Remark that $A_{W^{\prime}}:=\mathcal{O}_{X}\left(W^{\prime}\right)=A_{W}\{r T\} /(g T-1)$, and $g \in A_{W^{\prime}}$ is invertible. Consequently, $g$ is invertible in $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$.

The field $\kappa(x):=\mathcal{O}_{X, x} / m_{x}$ is said to be the residue field of $x$.
Another very important property for the next chapters is the relationship between $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ and $\mathcal{H}(x)$, which is a direct consequence of Lemmas 1.4.12 and 1.4.21 (recall also Definition 1.1.33).

LEmMA 1.4.22. For any $x \in X$, there is a canonical embedding $\kappa(x) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}(x)$. Moreover, $\kappa(x)$ is dense in $\mathcal{H}(x)$.

The stalks of $\mathcal{O}_{X}$ are crucial for our work in the next chapters. In Section 4.7, we will see some examples of them. For now, let us mention that they have very nice algebraic properties.

Theorem 1.4.23. For any $x \in X, \mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ is a Noetherian, Henselian, and excellent local ring.

Noetherianity is shown in [4, Theorem 2.1.4], and Henselianity in [4, Theorem 2.1.5]. The property of being excellent was shown more recently in [21, Théorème 2.13].
1.4.5. Back to affinoid spaces. We may now revisit Convention 1.4.1.

Definition 1.4.24. A $k$-affinoid space $X$ is the Berkovich spectrum of a $k$-affinoid algebra endowed with the sheaf $\mathcal{O}_{X}$ constructed above. The space $X$ is said to be strict if there exists a strict $k$-affinoid algebra $A$ such that $X=\mathcal{M}(A)$.

These are the building blocks of good Berkovich spaces. Remark that for any $k$-affinoid space $X$, there exists a canonical morphism $X \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k)$.

Example 1.4.25. Let $n$ be a positive integer, and $\underline{r} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. Then, $\mathcal{M}\left(k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}\right)$ is said to be the closed Berkovich polydisc of polyradius $\underline{r}$.

In particular, if $n=1$, then we obtain the closed Berkovich disc of radius $r$.
Definition 1.4.26. A morphism of $k$-affinoid spaces $\left(Y, \mathcal{O}_{Y}\right) \rightarrow\left(X, \mathcal{O}_{X}\right)$ is a morphism of $k$-locally ringed spaces which comes from a bounded morphism of the corresponding $k$-affinoid algebras.

Remark that the category of $k$-affinoid spaces (endowed with the morphisms above), denoted $k$-aff, is the opposite of the category of $k$-affinoid algebras with respect to bounded $k$-linear morphisms.

The category $k$-aff admits fiber products (the relationship between fiber products and completed tensor products for $k$-affinoid spaces in Berkovich's theory is the same as that of fiber products and tensor products for affine schemes in algebraic geometry).

Definition 1.4.27. One can also define the category aff-k, where the objects are $K$ affinoid spaces over a complete ultrametric field extension $K / k$, and the morphisms are those of locally ringed spaces induced by a bounded $k$-linear morphism of the corresponding affinoid algebras.

For an object of aff- $k$, we will say that it is an affinoid $k$-space. For $X, Y \in a f f-k$, and a morphism $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ of the same category, we will simply say that $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ is a morphism of affinoid $k$-spaces.

The category aff- $k$ admits base change by complete ultrametric field extensions of $k$. However, it does not in general admit fiber products.
1.4.6. The boundaries of an affinoid space. Since affinoid spaces are compact (so closed), we want to have a notion of boundary for them.
1.4.6.1. Relative interior and boundary. These are amongst the rare notions that are exclusive to Berkovich's theory, meaning there is no analogue in rigid/complex/algebraic geometry. See [6, 2.5] for more details.

Definition 1.4.28. Let $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ be a morphism of $k$-affinoid spaces, where $X=$ $\mathcal{M}\left(A_{1}\right)$ and $Y=\mathcal{M}\left(A_{2}\right)$. The Berkovich relative interior of $\varphi$, $\operatorname{denoted}_{\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / X) \text {, is the }}$ set of points $y \in Y$ such that there exist $n \in \mathbb{N}, r_{i} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, and a surjective admissible $A_{1}$-linear morphism $\psi: A_{1}\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\} \rightarrow A_{2}$ satisfying $\left|\psi\left(T_{i}\right)\right|_{y}<r_{i}$ for all $i$.

The set $Y \backslash \operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / X)$ is called the Berkovich relative boundary of $\varphi$, and is denoted by $\partial_{B}(Y / X)$. We say that $\varphi$ is boundaryless if $\partial_{B}(Y / X)=\emptyset$ (Berkovich calls this closed).

If $Y \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k)$ is the canonical morphism, then we denote by $\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\partial_{B}(Y)\right)$ the set $\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / \mathcal{M}(k))\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\partial_{B}(Y / X)\right)$, and call it the Berkovich interior (resp. Berkovich boundary) of $Y$. If $\partial_{B}(Y)=\emptyset$, then $Y$ is said to be boundaryless.

Remark that in the litterature these objects are called relative interior, relative boundary, and absolute interior, absolute boundary, respectively, and are denoted as above but without the index " $B$ ".

As Temkin remarks in [64, Remark 3.4.10], the geometric interpretation of the definition above is that the morphism $\psi$ induces a closed immersion of $Y$ into the closed polydisc over $A_{1}$ of polyradius $\underline{r}$ (i.e. into $\mathcal{M}\left(A_{1}\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}\right)$ ) such that the image of $Y$ is contained
in the open polydisc over $A_{1}$ of polyradius $\underline{r}$ (i.e. in $\left\{x \in \mathcal{M}\left(A_{1}\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}\right):\left|T_{i}\right|_{x}<r_{i}, i=\right.$ $1,2, \ldots, n\}$ ).

Here are some of the main properties of these notions. The first one is immediate from the definition.

Theorem 1.4.29. Let $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ be a morphism of $k$-affinoid spaces.
(1) $\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / X)$ is open, and $\partial_{B}(Y / X)$ is closed in $Y$.
(2) [6, Prop. 2.5.8(iii)] Let $\phi: Z \rightarrow Y$ be a morphism of $k$-affinoid spaces. This induces a morphism $\varphi \circ \phi: Z \rightarrow X$. Then, $\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Z / X)=\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Z / Y) \cap \phi^{-1}\left(\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / X)\right)$.
(3) $\left[6\right.$, Cor. 2.5.13(i)] $\partial_{B}(Y / X)=\emptyset$ if and only if $\varphi$ is finite, i.e. the corresponding morphism $A_{1} \rightarrow A_{2}$ is finite.
(4) [6, Cor. 2.5.13(ii)] If $Y$ is an affinoid domain of $X$, then $\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / X)$ is the topological interior of $Y$ in $X$.
Remark that by part (3) of Theorem 1.4.29, a $k$-affinoid space is boundaryless if and only if the corresponding $k$-affinoid algebra is a finite $k$-algebra.
1.4.6.2. Shilov boundary. As usual, let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field, and $A$ a $k$-affinoid algebra. Set $X=\mathcal{M}(A)$.

A closed subset $\Gamma$ of $X$ is said to be a boundary of $X$ if any element $f \in A$ attains its maximum at a point of $\Gamma$. The set of boundaries of $X$ forms a partially ordered set (via inclusion). By Zorn's Lemma, there exist minimal boundaries of $X$. If there exists a unique minimal boundary, then it is said to be the Shilov boundary of $X$, and is denoted by $\Gamma(X)$.

Proposition 1.4.30 ([6, Corollary 2.4.5]). The Shilov boundary $\Gamma(X)$ of $X$ exists and is finite.

In particular, this means that for any $f \in A, \rho_{A}(f)=\max _{x \in \Gamma(X)}|f|_{x}$, where $\rho_{A}$ denotes the spectral semi-norm of $A$.

The following is a useful property (see the proof of [22, Lemme 2.1]):
Lemma 1.4.31. If $A$ is integral, then for any $f \in A \backslash\{0\},|f|_{x} \neq 0$ for any $x \in \Gamma(X)$.
The two kinds of boundaries we have just seen are related as follows:
Proposition 1.4.32 ([6, Proposition 2.5.20]). For any affinoid domain $\left(V, A_{V}\right)$ of $X$,

$$
\Gamma(X) \cap V \subseteq \Gamma(V) \subseteq \partial_{B}(V / X) \cup(\Gamma(X) \cap V)
$$

We will later see (Lemma 1.8.8) that in the case of curves the Berkovich and Shilov boundaries coincide for a $k$-affinoid space.
1.4.7. The reduction map. The notion of the reduction map will be very useful to us for comparing our results from Chapter 3 to others in the litterature.

Recall that $(k,|\cdot|)$ is a complete ultrametric field. Let $A, B$ be two Banach $k$-algebras. Let $\varphi: A \rightarrow B$ be a bounded morphism. Let $\rho_{A}$ (resp. $\rho_{B}$ ) denote the spectral radius of $A$ (resp. $B)$. Then, for any $a \in A, \rho_{B}(\varphi(a)) \leqslant \rho_{A}(a)$.

Set $A^{\circ}=\left\{a \in A: \rho_{A}(a) \leqslant 1\right\}$ and $A^{\circ \circ}=\left\{a \in A: \rho_{A}(a)<1\right\} ; A^{\circ}$ is a subring of $A$, and $A^{\circ \circ}$ is an ideal of $A^{\circ}$. Set $\widetilde{A}=A^{\circ} / A^{\circ \circ}$. Let $B^{\circ}$, resp. $B^{\circ \circ}$, resp. $\widetilde{B}$, be the analoguous notations for $B$. By the paragraph above, the morphism $\varphi: A \rightarrow B$ induces canonically morphisms $\varphi^{\circ}: A^{\circ} \rightarrow B^{\circ}$ and $\widetilde{\varphi}: \widetilde{A} \rightarrow \widetilde{B}$. In the case of $k$-affinoid algebras, a lot of information can be obtained on $\varphi$ through $\widetilde{\varphi}$ and vice-versa ( $c f$. $[\mathbf{6}, 2.4]$ ).

In particular, for any $x \in \mathcal{M}(A)$, the canonical morphism $\chi_{x}: A \rightarrow \mathcal{H}(x)$ induces a morphism $\widetilde{\chi_{x}}: \widetilde{A} \rightarrow \widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)}$. Clearly, ker $\widetilde{\chi_{x}}$ is a prime ideal of $\widetilde{A}$. This gives rise to a map $r: \mathcal{M}(A) \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \widetilde{A}, x \mapsto \operatorname{ker} \widetilde{\chi_{x}}$.

Definition 1.4.33. Suppose $A$ is a Banach $k$-algebra. Then, the map $r: \mathcal{M}(A) \rightarrow$ Spec $\widetilde{A}$ constructed as above is called the reduction map of $A$.

Proposition 1.4.34 ([6, Proposition 2.4.4]). Let $A$ be a strict $k$-affinoid algebra.
(1) The reduction map $r$ of $A$ is surjective and anticontinuous.
(2) $r^{-1}\left((\text { Spec } \widetilde{A})_{\text {gen }}\right)=\Gamma(\mathcal{M}(A))$, where $(\text { Spec } \widetilde{A})_{\text {gen }}$ is the set of generic points of the irreducible components of Spec $\widetilde{A}$.

Temkin generalized this to any affinoid space using what is referred to in the litterature as Temkin's graded reduction [66]. The (graded) reduction map does not have nice gluing properties, so it is only defined over affinoid spaces.

### 1.5. Good Berkovich analytic spaces

Throughout this section, let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field.

### 1.5.1. The category of good analytic spaces.

Definition 1.5.1 (Non-rigorous). A good $k$-analytic space is a locally ringed space $\left(X, \mathcal{O}_{X}\right)$, where each point has a neighborhood isomorphic to a $k$-affinoid space. The structural sheaf $\mathcal{O}_{X}$ is said to be the sheaf of analytic functions on $X$.

The analytic space $X$ is said to be strict if any point has a neighborhood isomorphic to a strict $k$-affinoid space.

The morphisms between good $k$-analytic spaces are the morphisms of locally ringed spaces induced by morphisms of $k$-affinoid spaces. Remark there is a canonical morphism $X \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k)$.

The good $k$-analytic spaces with the above morphisms form a category, which we denote by $k-A n$.

The precise definition requires a condition (which we will continue to omit without consequences) on the $G$-topology we mentioned before.

The fiber product exists in the category of good $k$-analytic spaces seeing as it exists for $k$-affinoid spaces.

The fact that affinoid spaces are compact (hence closed) is the reason why the definition above is not enough for all Berkovich spaces (in the sense that there are rigid spaces that don't have a Berkovich analogue). In general, it can happen that a point does not have a neighborhood isomorphic to an affinoid space, but is only contained in the boundary of subsets isomorphic to affinoid spaces. The theory of general Berkovich spaces was developed by Berkovich afterwards, in [4]. We will later see that analytic curves are always good analytic spaces.

Example 1.5.2. Remark that for any $n \in \mathbb{N}$, and $\underline{r} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{n}$, we have an embedding $\mathcal{M}\left(k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}\right) \subseteq \mathbb{A}_{k}^{n \text {,an }}$. To see this, recall that $\left(k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\},\|\cdot\|\right)$ (with $\|\cdot\|$ defined as in Lemma 1.3.2) is the completion of $k[\underline{T}]$. On the other hand, because of the same reason, for any $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{n \text {,an }}$, if $\left|T_{i}\right|_{x}=s_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, then $x \in \mathcal{M}\left(k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}\right)$ for any $\underline{r} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{n}$ such that $r_{i} \geqslant s_{i}$ for all $i$. Consequently, $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}=\bigcup_{\underline{r} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{n}} \mathcal{M}\left(k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}\right)$.

For the compatibility of topologies, it is direct from the definition that the set-wise embedding $\iota_{\underline{r}, n}: \mathcal{M}\left(k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$ is continuous. It is also a direct consequence of the definition that $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$ is a Hausdorff space. Thus, $\iota_{r, n}$ is an injective continuous morphism from a compact space to a Hausdorff one. Consequently, it is a homeomorphism onto its image.

The two paragraphs above can be used to endow $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n \text { an }}$ (and hence $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$ ) with the structure of a good $k$-analytic space. Moreover, if $k$ is non-trivially valued, by Lemma 1.3.5, these spaces are also strict.

A full classification of points of Berkovich closed discs can thus be deduced from that of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ (see part 1.2.4).

Remark 1.5.3. Using the universal property for affinoid domains, one can show that the notation $\mathcal{H}(x)$ as introduced in Definition 1.2.2 for the points of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is coherent with the one of completed residue fields.

As in the affinoid case, one can also define a larger category:
Definition 1.5.4. Let $A n-k$ denote the category whose objects are good $K$-analytic spaces, where $K$ is a complete ultrametric field extension $K / k$, and the morphisms are morphisms of $k$-locally ringed spaces induced by those of the category aff- $k$. An object of An- $k$ will be said to be a good analytic $k$-space.

For $X, Y \in A n-k$, and a morphism $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ of the same category, we will simply say that $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ is a morphism of good analytic $k$-spaces or sometimes just a morphism of good analytic spaces when there is no risk of ambiguity.

The category $A n-k$ admits base change by complete ultrametric field extensions of $k$, but does not in general admit fiber products (as in the case of aff-k).

The following is a class of subsets of $X$ over which the structural sheaf is defined (examples are opens and affinoid domains).

Definition 1.5.5. A morphism of good $k$-analytic spaces $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ is said to be an analytic domain in $X$ if $\varphi$ induces a homeomorphism of $Y$ with its image in $X$, and for any morphism of good analytic $k$-spaces $\psi: Z \rightarrow X$ such that $\psi(Z) \subseteq \varphi(Y)$, there exists a unique morphism of good analytic $k$-spaces $\sigma: Z \rightarrow Y$ such that $\psi=\varphi \circ \sigma$.

If $Y$ is isomorphic to a (strict) $k$-affinoid space, then $Y$ is said to be a (strict) affinoid domain of $X$.

We identify an analytic domain with its image in the corresponding analytic space. It is clear from the definition that the property of being an analytic (resp. affinoid) domain is transitive.

Let $X$ be a good $k$-analytic space. By definition, for any $x \in X$, there exists a neighborhood of $x$ isomorphic to $\left(\mathcal{M}(A), \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{M}(A)}\right)$ for some $k$-affinoid algebra $A$. Remark that the affinoid domains of $\mathcal{M}(A)$ are affinoid domains of $X$. Hence, affinoid domains form a basis of neighborhoods for the topology of any good $k$-analytic space.

Remark 1.5.6. Let $\varphi: X \rightarrow Y$ be a morphism of good $k$-analytic spaces. Let $U$ be an analytic domain in $Y$. Then, the topological space $\varphi^{-1}(U)$ is homeomorphic to $U \times_{Y} X$, and the two can be identified. It is shown as a direct application of Definition 1.5.5 that $\varphi^{-1}(U)$ is an analytic domain of $X$.

Similarly, if $V, W$ are analytic domains of the good $k$-analytic space $Z, U \cap V$ is identified with the good $k$-analytic space $V \times_{Z} W$ which is an analytic domain of $X$.

Along the same lines (and very useful for the next chapters):
Proposition 1.5.7. Let $\varphi: X \rightarrow Y$ be a morphism of good $k$-analytic spaces. Let $y \in Y$. The fiber product $X_{y}:=X \times_{Y} \mathcal{M}(\mathcal{H}(y))$ exists in the category Aff-k, and is homeomorphic to $\varphi^{-1}(y)$.

Remark 1.5.8. It can be shown from the universal property of fiber products that $X_{y} \cong\left(X \times_{k} \mathcal{M}(\mathcal{H}(y))\right) \times_{Y \times_{k} \mathcal{M}(\mathcal{H}(y))} \mathcal{M}(\mathcal{H}(y))$, so $X \times_{Y} \mathcal{M}(\mathcal{H}(x))$ exists as a good $\mathcal{H}(x)$ analytic space. Consequently, the fiber of any point $y \in Y$ can be endowed with the structure of a good $\mathcal{H}(y)$-analytic space. From now on, we will always identify the two.

Remark 1.5.9. More generally, let $Y \rightarrow X$ be a morphism of good $k$-analytic spaces, and $Z \rightarrow X$ a morphism of good analytic spaces in the category $A n-k$. Suppose $Z$ is a good $K$-analytic space, where $K / k$ is a complete ultrametric field extension. Then, $Y \times_{X} Z$ exists as a good $K$-analytic space. To show this, one can check via the universal property of fiber products that $Y \times_{X} Z \cong\left(Y \times_{k} K\right) \times_{X_{x_{k}} K} Z$, and the latter exists.

From now on, we will usually denote $X \times_{Y} \mathcal{H}(x)$ (resp. $X \times_{k} Y$ ) instead of $X \times_{Y}$ $\mathcal{M}(\mathcal{H}(x))\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.X \times_{\mathcal{M}(k)} Y\right)$.

Definition 1.5.10. Let $X$ be a good $k$-analytic space. A point $x \in X$ is said to be rigid if the field extension $\mathcal{H}(x) / k$ is finite.

Rigid points are those that we see when considering Tate's rigid spaces.
Proposition 1.5.11 ([6, Proposition 2.1.15]). Suppose $k$ is non-trivially valued. The set of rigid points of a strict $k$-affinoid space is dense. Consequently, the set of rigid points in a strict good $k$-analytic space is dense.

Convention 1.5.12. We will say that a neighborhood of a point which is an affinoid domain is an affinoid neighborhood of the point. A cover $\mathcal{U}$ of a good analytic space is said to be affinoid if for any $U \in \mathcal{U}, U$ is an affinoid domain thereof.
1.5.2. Examples of affinoid domains. Let us give a few examples of affinoid domains in $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$ and $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$.

Example 1.5.13. By Example 1.5.2, for any $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and any $\underline{r} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}{ }^{n}$, the closed polydisc $\mathcal{M}\left(k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}\right)$ of polyradius $\underline{r}$ can be identified with $\left\{x \in \overline{\mathbb{A}}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}:\left|T_{i}\right|_{x} \leqslant r_{i}, i=\right.$ $1,2, \ldots, n\}$, and its ring of analytic functions with $k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}\right\}$. The closed polydisc of polyradius $\underline{r}$ is an affinoid domain in $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$.

The open subspace $\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}:\left|T_{i}\right|_{x}<r_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n\right\}$ of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$ is said to be a Berkovich polydisc of polyradius $\underline{r}$. If $n=1$, it is said to be a Berkovich disc of radius $r$.

Let $\underline{s} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{n}$ be such that $s_{i} \leqslant r_{i}$ for all $i=1,2, \ldots, n$. Again, using Example 1.5.2 we obtain that $\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}: s_{i} \leqslant\left|T_{i}\right|_{x} \leqslant r_{i}\right\}$ is an affinoid domain in $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$. It can be identified with $\mathcal{M}\left(k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}, \underline{s} \underline{S}\right\} /\left(S_{i} T_{i}-1\right)_{i}\right)$, and its ring of analytic functions with the $k$-affinoid algebra $k\left\{\underline{r}^{-1} \underline{T}, \underline{s} \underline{S}\right\} /\left(S_{i} T_{i}-1\right)_{i}$. Remark that if $s_{i}=r_{i}$ for all $i$, this coincides with $K_{\underline{r}}$ from Example 1.3.6.

Since these subsets are contained in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$, all of the above remains true when replacing $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$ by $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$. For $n=1$, let us fix the following notations: $\mathbb{D}(0, r):=\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$, and $C(0 ; s, r):=$ $\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}: s \leqslant|T|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}: s \leqslant|T|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$. The affinoid space $C(0 ; s, r)$ is said to be the closed Berkovich annulus of inner radius $s$ and outer radius $r$.

The open subspace $\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text {,an }}: s<|T|_{x}<r\right\}$ is said to be a Berkovich annulus of inner radius $s$ and outer radius $r$.

Example 1.5.14. Let $P \in k[T]$. Also, let $r, s \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$ be such that $s \leqslant r$. Set $D_{1}=$ $\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$ and $D_{2}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}: s \leqslant|P|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$.

Seeing as $P$ is bounded in these sets, $T$ has to be so as well. Consequently, there exists $t>0$ such that $D_{1}, D_{2} \subseteq \mathbb{D}(0, t)$. By Example 1.4.6, $D_{1}, D_{2}$ are affinoid domains in $\mathbb{D}(0, t)$, so they are affinoid domains in $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$.

As $D_{1}, D_{2} \subseteq \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$, all of the above remains true when replacing $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ by $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$.
In Section 4.2, we will see that $\mathcal{O}\left(D_{1}\right)=k\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}[X] /(P(T)-X)$ and $\mathcal{O}\left(D_{2}\right)=$ $k\left\{r^{-1} T, s S\right\}[X] /(T S-1, P(T)-X)$.

Example 1.5.15. Let $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. Let us fix a copy of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text {,an }}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ so that we have a coordinate $T$. The subset $\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{x} \geqslant r\right\}$ is an affinoid domain in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$.

To see this, remark that $\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{x} \geqslant r\right\}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|1 / T|_{x} \leqslant 1 / r\right\}$, which is an affinoid domain in the copy of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ with coordinate $1 / T$. Consequently, it is an affinoid domain in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$.

The isomorphism $k[T] \rightarrow k[1 / T]$ induces an isomorphism between the corresponding analytic affine lines (with coordinate $T$, resp. $1 / T$ ), which induces an isomorphism between $\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{x} \leqslant 1 / r\right\}$ and $\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|1 / T|_{x} \leqslant 1 / r\right\}$. Taking this into account, we obtain that $\mathcal{O}\left(\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{x} \geqslant r\right\}\right)=k\left\{r T^{-1}\right\}$, where $k\left\{r T^{-1}\right\}$ is the $k$-affinoid algebra $\left\{\sum_{n} \frac{a_{n}}{T^{n}}: a_{n} \in k, \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|a_{n}\right| r^{-n}=0\right\}$.

Example 1.5.16. Let $P(T) \in k[T]$, and $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. Set $D=\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{x} \geqslant r\right\}$. The finite morphism $k[T] \rightarrow k[T], T \mapsto P(T)$, induces a finite morphism $\varphi: \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ such that $\varphi^{-1}\left(\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}:|T|_{x} \geqslant r\right\}\right)=D$. By Example 1.5.15 and Proposition 1.5.34(1), we obtain that $D$ is an affinoid domain in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. We will talk about its corresponding $k$-affinoid algebra in detail in Section 4.2.
1.5.3. Local properties and dimension of good analytic spaces. Most of the notions that exist for schemes also exist for Berkovich analytic spaces. We will mostly focus on defining those that we use in the next chapters. Recall that $k$ is a complete ultrametric field.

Definition 1.5.17. Let $X$ be a good $k$-analytic space. Let $x \in X$. Then, $x$ is said to be a reduced (resp. normal, Cohen-Macaulay, regular) point if $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ is a reduced (resp. normal, Cohen-Macaulay, regular) ring.

The analytic space $X$ is said to be reduced (resp. normal, Cohen-Macaulay, regular) if for any $x \in X, x$ is reduced (resp. normal, Cohen-Macaulay, regular).

Remark 1.5.18. In [21, Théorème 3.4], it is shown that an analytic domain of a reduced (resp. normal, Cohen-Macaulay, regular) good analytic space is also reduced (resp. normal, Cohen-Macaulay, regular).

Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. Using Noether's Normalization Lemma for strict affinoid algebras, one obtains that for any complete ultrametric field extension $K / k$ such that $A \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K$ is a strict $K$-affinoid algebra (by Lemma 1.3.7, such a $K$ exists), the Krull dimension of $A \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K$ is constant [22, 1.5].

Definition 1.5.19. The dimension of $X:=\mathcal{M}(A)$, denoted $\operatorname{dim}(X)$, is the Krull dimension of the ring $A \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K$.

The dimension of any good $k$-analytic space $Y$ is denoted by $\operatorname{dim}(Y)$, and defined to be $\sup _{V} \operatorname{dim}(V)$, where the supremum is taken with respect to all the affinoid domains $V$ in $Y$.

For any $x \in Y$, the dimension of $x$ in $Y$, denoted $\operatorname{dim}_{x}(Y)$, is $\inf _{x \in V} \operatorname{dim}(V)$, where the infimum is taken with respect to all affinoid domains $V$ in $Y$ that are neighborhoods of $x$.

The space $Y$ is said to be pure-dimensional if $\operatorname{dim}_{x}(Y)=\operatorname{dim}(Y)$ for all $x \in Y$.
Dimension is invariant with respect to base change by a complete ultrametric field extension.

Example 1.5.20. The following is an example showing the necessity of base change to calculate the dimension of a $k$-affinoid space: for $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$, let $D:=\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{x}=r\right\}$. Recall that $\mathcal{O}(D)=K_{r}$ - the field of Example 1.3.6. Then, the Krull dimension of $K_{r}$ is 0 , whereas the dimension of $D$ is 1 .

The notion of dimension brings us to the introduction of very important invariants of points.

Definition 1.5.21. Let $X$ be a good $k$-analytic space. Recall that for any $x \in X$, there is a canonical isometric embedding $k \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}(x)$. For any $x \in X$, set $s_{x}:=\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)}$ and $t_{x}:=\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$, where $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)}$ (resp. $\widetilde{k}$ ) denotes the residue field of $\mathcal{H}(x)$ (resp. $k$ ).

Lemma 1.5.22 ([4, Lemma 2.5.2], [22, 1.14]). Let $X$ be a good $k$-analytic space. Then, $\operatorname{dim} X=\sup _{x \in X}\left(s_{x}+t_{x}\right)$.

Definition 1.5.23 (Abhyankar points). Let $X$ be a good $k$-analytic space. Then, $x \in X$ is said to be an Abhyankar point if $s_{x}+t_{x}=\operatorname{dim}_{x}(X)$.

In Example 3.2.10 of [18], it is shown that if $x \in X$ is an Abhyankar point, then $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ is Artinian. Consequently, if $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ is reduced (for example if $X$ is reduced), then it is a field.

Proposition 1.5.24 ([60, Proposition 4.7]). Let $X$ be a $k$-affinoid space. Then, any point of the Shilov boundary of $X$ is an Abhyankar point. In particular, Abhyankar points are dense in $X$.

Definition 1.5.25. Let $\varphi: X \rightarrow Y$ be a morphism of good analytic spaces. For any $y \in Y$, the relative dimension of $\varphi$ at $y$ is the dimension of $\varphi^{-1}(y)$ as a good $\mathcal{H}(y)$-analytic space.

We will say that $X$ is a relative curve over $Y$ if $\varphi^{-1}(y)$ is of pure dimension 1 as an $\mathcal{H}(y)$-analytic space for all $y \in Y$ (we use this in Chapter 4).

The notions of dimension and relative dimension of a morphism are extensively studied by Ducros in [22].
1.5.4. Morphisms, relative boundary and interior. We briefly mention some classes of morphisms between good analytic spaces, and a generalization of the notions of relative boundary and interior.

Definition 1.5.26. Let $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ be a morphism of good $k$-analytic spaces. The Berkovich relative interior of $\varphi$, denoted $\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / X)$, is the set of points $y \in Y$, such that there exist affinoid neighborhoods $Y^{\prime}$ of $y$ and $X^{\prime}$ of $\varphi(x)$ with $\varphi\left(Y^{\prime}\right) \subseteq X^{\prime}$ and $y \in$ $\operatorname{Int}_{B}\left(Y^{\prime} / X^{\prime}\right)$. The Berkovich relative boundary of $\varphi$, denoted $\partial_{B}(Y / X)$ is the complement of $\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / X)$ in $Y$. If $\partial_{B}(Y / X)=\emptyset, \varphi$ is said to be boundaryless.

If $X=\mathcal{M}(k)$, then we write $\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y)$, resp. $\partial_{B}(Y)$, and call them the Berkovich interior, resp. Berkovich boundary, of $Y$. If $\partial_{B}(Y)=\emptyset, Y$ is said to be boundaryless.

Theorem 1.5.27 ([4, Prop. 1.5.5]). Let $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ be a morphism of good $k$-analytic spaces.
(1) Let $\phi: Z \rightarrow Y$ be a morphism of good $k$-analytic spaces. This induces a morphism $\varphi \circ \phi: Z \rightarrow X$. Then, $\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Z / X)=\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Z / Y) \cap \phi^{-1}\left(\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / X)\right)$.
(2) If $Y$ is an analytic domain of $X$, then $\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / X)$ is the topological interior of $Y$ in $X$.
Example 1.5.28. By Example 1.5.2, for any $n \in \mathbb{N}, \mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$ (and hence $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$ ) is a boundaryless space. For any $r, s \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}, r<s, \partial_{B}(\mathbb{D}(0, r))=\left\{\eta_{0, r}\right\}$, and $\partial_{B}(C(0 ; r, s))=$ $\left\{\eta_{0, r}, \eta_{0, s}\right\}$ (see $[\mathbf{2 0}, 3.6 .4 .1,3.6 .4 .3]$ ).

Definition 1.5.29 (Immersions). A morphism of good $k$-analytic spaces $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ is an open immersion if it induces an isomorphism of $Y$ with an open subset of $X$ (endowed with the induced analytic structure from $X$ ).

The morphism $\varphi$ is said to be a closed immersion if $Y$ is homeomorphic to a closed subset of $X, \varphi_{*} \mathcal{O}_{Y}$ is a coherent sheaf of $\mathcal{O}_{X}$-modules, and the morphism $\mathcal{O}_{X} \rightarrow \varphi_{*} \mathcal{O}_{Y}$ is surjective.

As usual, there is a bijection between the closed immersions of a good $k$-analytic space $Y$ and the ideal sheaves $\mathcal{I}$ of $\mathcal{O}_{Y}$ (cf. Proposition 3.1.4(ii) of [6]).

Definition 1.5.30 (Proper and finite). A morphism of good $k$-analytic spaces $\varphi$ : $Y \rightarrow X$ is said to be proper if it is compact and boundaryless. A good $k$-analytic space $Y$ is said to be proper if the canonical morphism $Y \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k)$ is proper.

A morphism of affinoid spaces $\mathcal{M}(B) \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(A)$ is said to be finite if the corresponding bounded morphism $A \rightarrow B$ is finite.

For any $x \in X$, the morphism $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ of good $k$-analytic spaces is said to be finite at $x$ if there exists an affinoid neighborhood $V$ of $x$ such that $\varphi^{-1}(V) \rightarrow V$ is a finite morphism of affinoid spaces. The morphism $\varphi$ is said to be finite if it is finite at any point of $X$.

Finite morphisms will be of particular importance in the rest of the manuscript.
Proposition 1.5.31. Let $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ be a finite morphism of good $k$-analytic spaces. Then, $\partial_{B}(Y / X)=\emptyset$, i.e. $\varphi$ is boundaryless.

Proposition 1.5.31 is immediate from Theorem 1.4.29(3), and the fact that being an element of the Berkovich interior $\operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / X)$ is a local property.

Remark 1.5.32. In [4, Lemma 1.3.7] it is shown that if $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ is a finite morphism of $k$-analytic spaces, then for any affinoid domain $V$ of $X$, the induced morphism $\varphi^{-1}(V) \rightarrow V$ is a finite morphism of $k$-affinoid spaces.

As usual, for any $y \in Y$, the induced homomorphism of local rings $\mathcal{O}_{X, \varphi(y)} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{Y, y}$ is finite. Finite morphisms have finite fibers.

Example 1.5.33. For any $n \in \mathbb{N}, \mathbb{P}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$ is proper.
Remark that a $k$-affinoid space is boundaryless, and hence proper, if and only if its corresponding $k$-affinoid algebra is a finite $k$-algebra.

Proposition 1.5.34 ([6, Prop. 3.1.7]). (1) The pre-image of an affinoid domain by a finite morphism is an affinoid domain.
(2) Let $X$ be a good analytic space. There is an equivalence between the category of finite morphisms over $X$ and the category of coherent $\mathcal{O}_{X}$-algebras.
(3) A closed immersion is a finite morphism.
(4) A finite morphism is proper.

Definition 1.5.35 (Separated). A morphism $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ of $k$-analytic spaces is said to be separated if the canonical induced morphism $Y \rightarrow Y \times_{X} Y$ is a closed immersion.

A good $k$-analytic space $Y$ is said to be separated if the canonical morphism $Y \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k)$ is separated.

A good $k$-analytic space is locally Hausdorff by construction, but, in general, not necessarily Hausdorff. Separatedness is equivalent to Hausdorff by [6, Proposition 3.1.5]. As a consequence:

Corollary 1.5.36 ([6, Cor. 3.1.6]). If a good $k$-analytic space is separated, then affinoid domains are closed, and the intersection of two affinoid domains is an affinoid domain.

The following is a central object of this manuscript:
Definition 1.5.37. A (good) $k$-analytic space is said to be a $k$-analytic curve if it is separated and of pure dimension 1.

The hypothesis of goodness can be omitted from the above definition. In [20, Proposition 3.3.7] it is shown that any $k$-analytic curve is a good $k$-analytic space.

Definition 1.5.38 (Flatness). A morphism of analytic spaces $\varphi_{1}: Y_{1} \rightarrow X_{1}$ is said to be naively flat at $y \in Y_{1}$ if for $x:=\varphi_{1}(y), \mathcal{O}_{Y_{1}, y}$ is a flat $\mathcal{O}_{X_{1}, x}$-module. (Naive flatness is generally not stable with respect to base change.)

A morphism $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ of good $k$-analytic spaces is said to be flat at $y \in Y$ if for any morphism $X^{\prime} \rightarrow X$ of good analytic $k$-spaces, and any $y^{\prime} \in Y^{\prime}:=Y \times_{X} X^{\prime}$ lying above $y$, the induced morphism $Y^{\prime} \rightarrow X^{\prime}$ is naively flat at $y^{\prime} \in Y^{\prime}$. The morphism $\varphi$ is said to be flat if it is flat at all $y \in Y$.

In [18, Theorem 8.3.4], it is shown that for $y \in \operatorname{Int}_{B}(Y / X)$, the morphism $\varphi$ is flat at $y$ if and only if it is naively flat at $y$. Consequently, if $\varphi$ is boundaryless, then the notion of flatness above coincides with that of flatness for locally ringed spaces.

Flat morphisms have been extensively studied by Ducros in [18]. A special case is the class of (quasi-)smooth morphisms.

Definition 1.5.39 (Quasi-smoothness, [18, Definition 5.2.4]). A morphism $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ of good $k$-analytic spaces is said to be quasi-smooth at $y \in Y$ if there exists an affinoid neighborhood $V$ of $y$ such that $V \rightarrow X$ factorizes through a closed immersion $V \rightarrow W$, where $W$ is an affinoid domain of $\mathbb{A}_{X}^{n \text {,an }}:=\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }} \times_{k} X$ for some $n \in \mathbb{N}$ (and satisfies a sort of Jacobian-presentation condition). The morphism $\varphi$ is said to be quasi-smooth if it is quasi-smooth at all $y \in Y$.

A good $k$-analytic space $X$ is said to be quasi-smooth if the canonical morphism $X \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k)$ is quasi-smooth.

Definition 1.5.40 (Smoothness). A morphism $\varphi: Y \rightarrow X$ of good $k$-analytic spaces is said to be smooth at $y \in Y$ if it is quasi-smooth at $y$ and $y \notin \partial_{B}(Y / X)$.

A good $k$-analytic space $X$ is said to be smooth if the canonical morphism $X \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k)$ is smooth.

Berkovich gave a different definition of smoothness in [4, 3.5]. Seeing as said definition excludes boundary points from consideration, this led to the introduction of the more general notion of quasi-smoothness by Ducros (see [18, Chapter 5] for a detailed treatment). In [18, Corollary 5.4.8], it is shown that Berkovich's definition is equivalent to Definition 1.5.40.

All the morphisms that we have defined above are stable under composition, base change, and ground field extension.
1.5.5. Topological properties. By construction, good analytic spaces are locally compact. Let us mention some other very remarkable topological properties of these objects.

Definition 1.5.41. Let $X$ be a topological space. Let $x, y \in X$. A continuous map $\gamma:[0,1] \rightarrow X$ such that $\gamma(0)=x$ and $\gamma(y)=1$ is said to be a path in $X$ connecting $x$ and $y$. If, moreover, $\gamma$ induces a homeomorphism with its image in $X$, then it is said to be an arc in $X$ connecting $x$ and $y$.

We will say that a topological space $X$ is path-connected (resp. arcwise-connected) if for any different $x, y \in X$, there exists a path (resp. an arc) in $X$ connecting $x$ and $y$. If, moreover, the arc connecting $x$ and $y$ is unique, then $X$ is said to be uniquely arcwiseconnected.

Theorem 1.5.42 ([6, Thm. 3.2.1]). A connected good analytic space is path-connected. Consequently, a good analytic space is locally path-connected.

By [70, Corollary 31.6], a Hausdorff topological space that is path-connected is arcwiseconnected.

Corollary 1.5.43. A separated connected good analytic space is arcwise-connected. Consequently, a separated good analytic space is locally arcwise connected.

The following theorem is shown in [5].
ThEOREM 1.5.44. A smooth (good) analytic space is locally contractible.
The result above was generalized by Hrushovski and Loeser to a larger class of analytic spaces. This was done in their ground-breaking work [38], where they use model theory to study Berkovich spaces. The interplay between these two fields is a rising domain of research.

### 1.6. Analytification functor and GAGA theorems

As in the complex setting, there exists an analytification functor and GAGA-type theorems for Berkovich spaces. For the most part of this manuscript, we will work with good analytic spaces that are obtained from finite type schemes over a complete ultrametric field.
1.6.1. The kernel map. The following gives a strong connection between the Berkovich and affine spectra.

Definition 1.6.1. Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. There is a canonical morphism $\mathcal{M}(A) \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} A, x \mapsto \operatorname{ker}|\cdot|_{x}$, which will be called the kernel map and will be denoted by $\operatorname{ker}_{A}$.

Lemma 1.6.2 ([6, Remark 1.2.5(i)]). Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. The kernel map $\operatorname{ker}_{A}$ is continuous.

Remark that there is a bijective correspondence between the closed immersions of Spec $A$ and those of $\mathcal{M}(A)$.

The kernel map has very nice properties.
Proposition 1.6.3 ([4, Prop. 2.1.1, Thm. 2.1.4]). Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. Then, $\operatorname{ker}_{A}$ is faithfully flat.

Theorem 1.6.4. [4, Thm. 2.2.1] Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. Set $X=\mathcal{M}(A)$ and $\mathcal{X}=$ Spec $A$. Let $\mathcal{P}_{X}$ be the set of points on $X$ which are reduced (resp. normal, Cohen-Macaulay, regular), and similarly for $\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{X}}$. Then, $\mathcal{P}_{X}=\operatorname{ker}_{A}^{-1}\left(\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{X}}\right)$.

In particular, we obtain from the above that a $k$-affinoid space $X$ is reduced (resp. normal) if and only if $\mathcal{O}(X)$ is reduced (resp. normal).
1.6.2. Analytification over a field. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field.

Definition 1.6.5. Let $\mathcal{X}$ be a scheme of locally finite type over $k$. The Berkovich analytification of $X$, denoted $\mathcal{X}^{\text {an }}$, is a good $k$-analytic space together with a morphism of $k$-locally ringed spaces $\mathcal{X}^{\text {an }} \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$, which represents the functor An- $k \rightarrow \operatorname{Set}, Y \mapsto$ $\operatorname{Hom}_{k}(Y, \mathcal{X})$, where $\operatorname{Hom}_{k}(\cdot, \cdot)$ denotes morphisms in the category of $k$-locally ringed spaces.

Theorem 1.6.6 ([6, Thm. 3.4.1, 3.5.1]). Let $\mathcal{X}$ be a scheme of locally finite type over $k$. The Berkovich analytification $X:=\mathcal{X}^{\text {an }}$ of $\mathcal{X}$ exists.
(1) For any complete ultrametric field extension $K / k, X(K) \cong \mathcal{X}(K)$. Moreover, the canonical morphism $\pi: X \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$ is surjective, and induces a bijection between the rigid points of $X$ and the closed points of $\mathcal{X}$.
(2) For any $x \in X$, the canonical morphism $\pi_{x}: \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}, \pi(x)} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ is faithfully flat. Furthermore, if $x$ is a rigid point, then $\pi_{x}$ induces an isomorphism of completions $\widehat{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}, \pi(x)}} \rightarrow \widehat{\mathcal{O}_{X, x}}$.
Let us briefly describe how the space $X$ is constructed.
If $\mathcal{X}=\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n}$ for some $n \in \mathbb{N}$, then its Berkovich analytification is $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$, and the canonical map is a kernel map $\pi: \mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{k}^{n}, x \mapsto \operatorname{ker}|\cdot|{ }_{x}$. This also allows us to construct the analytifications of closed subschemes of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n}$. Namely, for any finitely generated $k$-algebra $A$, the analytification of $\mathcal{X}:=\operatorname{Spec} A$ is given by

$$
X:=\{\text { multiplicative semi-norms on } A \text { which extend the norm on } k\} .
$$

The canonical map $\pi: X \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$ is still a kernel map; if $\mathcal{I}$ is the ideal sheaf corresponding to $\mathcal{X}$ as a Zariski closed subset of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$, then the analytic structure on $X$ is given by $\mathcal{O}_{X}:=\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}} / \pi^{*} \mathcal{I}$.

In the general case, i.e. when $\mathcal{X}$ is any locally finite type scheme over $k$, we obtain $X$ and the canonical map by gluing the analytifications and the canonical maps of any open affine cover of $\mathcal{X}$.

Remark that the analytification of a locally finite type scheme over $k$ is boundaryless. This follows from the construction: it is true for $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n}$, and it is true for its Zariski closed subsets by part (1) of Theorem 1.5.27. Finally, the general case is an immediate consequence of the latter, seeing as being boundaryless is a local property. If $k$ is non-trivially valued, the same remains true when replacing boundaryless by strict (recall Example 1.5.2).

Remark 1.6.7. Let $\mathcal{X}=\operatorname{Spec} A$ be a finite type affine scheme over $k$, and denote by $X$ its Berkovich analytification (which can be described via multiplicative semi-norms in a similar way to $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$, see above). For $x \in A$, let $\mathcal{H}^{\prime}(x)$ be the completion of $\operatorname{Frac}\left(A / \operatorname{ker} \mid \cdot{ }_{x}\right)$ with respect to the quotient norm induced by $|\cdot|_{x}$. As in Lemma 1.4.12, using the universal property for affinoid domains, we can show that $\mathcal{H}^{\prime}(x)=\mathcal{H}(x)$ - the completed residue field of $x$.

Moreover, if $\mathcal{X}$ is a curve, then there is a bijection between the rigid points of $X$ and the maximal ideals of $A$. If $x \in X$ is a rigid point, then $\mathcal{H}(x) / k$ is a finite field extension, implying ker $\left.\cdot\right|_{x}$ is a maximal ideal of $A$. Let $P$ be a maximal ideal of $A$. Then, by the surjectivity of the kernel map (i.e. analytification) $X \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$ there exists $x \in X$ such that $\operatorname{ker}|\cdot|_{x}=P$. Since $A / P$ is a finite field extension of $k$, we obtain that $x$ is a rigid point of $X$.

Example 1.6.8. The analytification of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{n}$ is $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{n, \text { an }}$. The canonical map can be described using the canonical maps corresponding to the copies of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n}$ in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{n}$.

Let $f: \mathcal{X} \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}$ be a morphism of locally finite type schemes over $k$. Set $X=\mathcal{X}^{\text {an }}$ and $Y=\mathcal{Y}^{\text {an }}$. We have a morphism $X \rightarrow \mathcal{X} \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}$ of $k$-locally ringed spaces. By the universal property of analytification, this induces a morphism of good $k$-analytic spaces $X \rightarrow Y$. Remark that, by construction, the following induced diagram is commutative.


Definition 1.6.9. Let $f: \mathcal{Y} \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$ be a morphism of locally finite type schemes over $k$. The corresponding morphism $Y \rightarrow X$ of their analytifications (constructed in the paragraph above) will be denoted by $f^{\text {an }}$, and called the analytification of $f$.

Let $\mathcal{F}$ be any coherent sheaf of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}}$-modules. Let $\pi$ denote the canonical morphism $X \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$. Then, $\mathcal{F}^{a n}:=\pi^{*} \mathcal{F}$ is a coherent sheaf of $\mathcal{O}_{X}$-modules. It is called the analytification of $\mathcal{F}$.

We now mention the main results that compare properties in the algebraic and analytic setting.

Theorem 1.6.10 ([6, Prop 3.4.6, 3.4.7]). Let $f: \mathcal{Y} \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$ be a morphism of locally finite type schemes over $k$. Then, $f$ is: (1) flat, (2) separated, (3) surjective, (4) injective, (5) smooth, (6) an open immersion if and only if $f^{\text {an }}$ possesses the same property.

If $f$ is of finite type, then it is: (1') dominant, (2') a closed immersion, (3') proper, (4') finite if and only $f^{\text {an }}$ has the same property.

Theorem 1.6.11 ([6, Prop. 3.4.3]). A scheme of locally finite type over $k$ is reduced, normal, Cohen-Macaulay, regular, smooth or of dimension $n$ if and only if its analytification satisfies the corresponding property.

Theorem 1.6.12 ([6, Cor. 3.4.10, Prop. 3.4.11]). Let $\mathcal{X}$ be a proper scheme over $k$.
(1) Let $\mathcal{F}$ be a coherent sheaf on $\mathcal{X}$. Then, for any integer $p \geqslant 0$, the canonical morphism $H^{p}(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{F}) \rightarrow H^{p}\left(\mathcal{X}^{\mathrm{an}}, \mathcal{F}^{\mathrm{an}}\right)$ is an isomorphism.
(2) The functor $\mathcal{F} \mapsto \mathcal{F}^{\text {an }}$, induces an equivalence of categories between coherent sheaves of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}}$-modules and the coherent sheaves of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}}{ }^{\text {an }}$-modules.

If $k$ is trivially valued, then the properness assumption in Theorem 1.6.12 is not needed (cf. [6, Theorem 3.5.1(iii)]).

Since we will be working with curves in Chapter 3, the following result is very useful:
Proposition 1.6.13 ([20, Théorème 3.7.2]). For any proper $k$-analytic curve $X$, there exists a projective algebraic curve $\mathcal{X}$ over $k$, such that $\mathcal{X}^{\text {an }} \cong X$.

Hence, we will often refer to reduced proper $k$-analytic curves as being reduced and projective. The above result was first shown for reduced curves in [6, Cor. 3.4.14].
1.6.3. Analytification over an affinoid space. The construction of the analytification functor can be given more generally, over affinoid spaces. We will need this for Chapter 4.

Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field and $A$ a $k$-affinoid algebra. Set $\mathcal{X}:=\operatorname{Spec} A$, and $X:=\mathcal{M}(A)$. We will say that a good analytic $k$-space $Y$ is a good $X$-analytic space if there is a morphism of good analytic $k$-spaces $\varphi_{Y}: Y \rightarrow X$. A morphism $f: Y \rightarrow Z$ of $X$-analytic spaces is a morphism of analytic $k$-spaces such that $\varphi_{Z} \circ f=\varphi_{Y}$. Let us denote the category of good $X$-analytic spaces by $X-A n$.

Let $\mathcal{Y}$ be a locally finite type scheme over $\mathcal{X}$. Let $F$ denote the functor $X-A n \rightarrow$ Set, $Z \mapsto \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{X}}(Z, \mathcal{Y})$, where $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{X}}(\cdot, \cdot)$ denotes the set of morphisms in the category of $\mathcal{X}$-locally ringed spaces.

Theorem 1.6.14 ([4, Prop. 2.6.1]). The functor $F$ is represented by a good $X$-analytic space $\mathcal{Y}^{\text {an }}$ that is a good $k$-analytic space, and a morphism $\mathcal{Y}^{\text {an }} \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}$ of $\mathcal{X}$-locally ringed spaces.

The space $\mathcal{Y}^{\text {an }}$ is called the Berkovich analytification of $\mathcal{Y}$ over $\mathcal{X}$ (when there is no risk of ambiguity, we will simply say that $\mathcal{Y}^{\text {an }}$ is the analytification of $\mathcal{Y}$ ). Remark that the analytification of $\mathcal{X}$ over $\mathcal{X}$ is simply $X$.

Remark that as in the case of fields, if $f: \mathcal{Y}_{1} \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}_{2}$ is a morphism of locally finite type $\mathcal{X}$-shemes, it gives rise to a morphism $f^{\text {an }}: \mathcal{Y}_{1}^{\text {an }} \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}_{2}^{\text {an }}$ of good $X$-analytic spaces, called the analytification of $f$. This induces the following commutative diagram:


Analytification of schemes over strict affinoid algebras was introduced by Köpf [45] in the setting of rigid geometry, and several GAGA-type properties were shown in the same paper. In $[4,2.6]$, Berkovich defined and studied the analytification of schemes over
general affinoid algebras in the setup of Berkovich spaces. It has since been systematically studied by Ducros in several of his papers (e.g. [21], [18], [61, Annexe A]).

All of the properties that we mentioned for the analytification of schemes over fields (with the exception of Proposition 1.6.13) hold in this setting as well. However, seeing as the proofs are dispersed in several papers, we will directly give the references when using certain (most) of these results.

EXAMPLE 1.6.15. $\left(\mathbb{A}_{\mathcal{X}}^{n}\right)^{\text {an }}=\mathbb{A}_{k}^{n \text {,an }} \times_{k} X=: \mathbb{A}_{X}^{n, \text { an }}$, and $\left(\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{X}}^{n}\right)^{\text {an }}=\mathbb{P}_{k}^{n, \text { an }} \times_{k} X=: \mathbb{P}_{X}^{n, \text { an }}$ for any $n \in \mathbb{N}$.

The examples of affinoid domains we saw in part 1.5.2 are applicable (using the same arguments) to $\mathbb{A}_{X}^{n \text {,an }}$ and $\mathbb{P}_{X}^{n, \text { an }}$ as well.

Let us make a few useful remarks for the next chapters.
Lemma 1.6.16. Analytification commutes with respect to affinoid base change. More precisely, let $Z \rightarrow X$ be a morphism of affinoid $k$-spaces. Set $\mathcal{Z}:=\operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}(Z)$. Let $\mathcal{Y}$ be any locally finite type scheme over $\mathcal{X}$. Set $Y:=\mathcal{Y}^{\text {an }}$. Then, $\left(\mathcal{Y} \times_{\mathcal{X}} \mathcal{Z}\right)^{\text {an }}=Y \times_{X} Z$ as good $Z$-analytic spaces.

Proof. By Remark 1.5.9, $Y \times_{X} Z$ exists. It is clearly a good $Z$-analytic space.
We only needs to check that the universal property is satisfied. Let $T$ be a good $Z$-analytic space and $T \rightarrow \mathcal{Y} \times \mathcal{X} \mathcal{Z}$ a morphism of $\mathcal{Z}$-locally ringed spaces. This induces a morphism $T \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}$ contained in $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{X}}(T, \mathcal{Y})$, and a morphism of analytic spaces $T \rightarrow Z \rightarrow X$, meaning $T \rightarrow Z$ can be interpreted as a morphism in $X-A n$. By the universal property of analytification, we obtain a morphism $T \rightarrow Y$ in $X-A n$. Consequently, there is a morphism of good $Z$-analytic spaces $T \rightarrow Y \times_{X} Z$, thus implying the statement.

Recall that the fiber of a morphism of analytic spaces can be identified with a good analytic space (see Proposition 1.5.7).

Corollary 1.6.17. Let $f: \mathcal{Y}_{1} \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}_{2}$ be a morphism of $\mathcal{X}$-schemes of locally finite type. For $x \in \mathcal{Y}_{2}^{\text {an }}$, let $\bar{x}$ denote its image via $\mathcal{Y}_{2}^{\text {an }} \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}_{2}$. Then, the fiber $\left(f^{\text {an }}\right)^{-1}(x)$ is isomorphic to $\left(f^{-1}(\bar{x}) \times_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \mathcal{H}(x)\right)^{\text {an }}$ as an $\mathcal{H}(x)$-analytic space, where $\kappa(\bar{x})$ is the residue field of $\bar{x}$ in $\mathcal{Y}_{2}$.

Proof. By Proposition 1.5.7, $\left(f^{\mathrm{an}}\right)^{-1}(x)$ is identified to the good $\mathcal{H}(x)$-analytic space $\mathcal{Y}_{1}^{\text {an }} \times \mathcal{Y}_{2}^{\text {an }} \mathcal{H}(x)$. By Lemma 1.6.16:
$\mathcal{Y}_{1}^{\text {an }} \times_{\mathcal{Y}_{2}^{\text {an }}} \mathcal{H}(x)=\left(\mathcal{Y}_{1} \times_{\mathcal{Y}_{2}} \mathcal{H}(x)\right)^{\text {an }}=\left(\mathcal{Y}_{1} \times_{\mathcal{Y}_{2}} \kappa(\bar{x}) \times_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \mathcal{H}(x)\right)^{\text {an }}=\left(f^{-1}(\bar{x}) \times_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \mathcal{H}(x)\right)^{\text {an }}$.
1.6.4. The Zariski topology. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field.

Definition 1.6.18. Let $X=\mathcal{M}(A)$ be a $k$-affinoid space. The Zariski topology on $X$ is the topology induced by the kernel map $\operatorname{ker}_{A}: X \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} A$ (see Definition 1.4.12).

More generally, let $Y$ be a good $k$-analytic space. A Zariski closed subset of $Y$ is the zero-locus of a coherent ideal of sheaves over $Y$ (remark that these are exactly the closed immersions to $Y$, and in particular analytic spaces themselves). These are the closed sets of a topology on $Y$, called the Zariski topology.

Remark that the Berkovich topology is finer than the Zariski one.
If $\mathcal{X}$ is a finite type scheme over $k$, then the Zariski topology on $\mathcal{X}^{\text {an }}$ is the one induced by the canonical analytification map $\mathcal{X}^{\text {an }} \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$ (see Theorem 1.6.10 (3')).

Definition 1.6.19. Let $X$ be a good $k$-analytic space. A Zariski closed subset of $X$ is said to be irreducible if it is irreducible for the Zariski topology on $X$.

Remark 1.6.20. Let $\mathcal{X}$ be a locally finite type scheme over $k$. Then, $\mathcal{X}$ is irreducible if and only $\mathcal{X}^{\text {an }}$ is irreducible.

Moreover, in [18, Proposition 2.7.16], Ducros showed that the irreducible components of $\mathcal{X}^{\text {an }}$ are the analytifications of the irreducible components of $\mathcal{X}$ in the more general case of analytic spaces over an affinoid space (we won't define what an irreducible component of a good analytic space is; for that, see [18, Definition 1.5.2]).

Remark 1.6.21. In [21, Proposition 5.14], it is shown that if $X$ is a normal good $k$-analytic space, then its irreducible components are its connected components.

Taking Remark 1.5.18 into account, this means that a connected analytic domain of a normal good $k$-analytic space is always irreducible, and so integral.

Definition 1.6.22. We will say that a good $k$-analytic space is integral if it is reduced and irreducible.

Remark that a $k$-affinoid space is integral if and only if $\mathcal{O}(X)$ is a domain. (This does not necessarily imply that all the stalks are domains.)

Remark 1.6.23. One can also define the notion of codimension for the Zariski topology, see for example [18, 1.5.15]. In particular, for a good $k$-analytic space $X$, a divisor on $X$ is a Zariski closed subset of $X$ of codimension 1. If $X$ is the analytification of a locally finite type scheme $\mathcal{X}$, then a divisor on $X$ is simply the pullback of a divisor on $\mathcal{X}$ via the canonical map $X \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$ see [18, Corollary 2.7.13].

The Zariski topology on Berkovich spaces has been extensively studied by Ducros in several of his papers (see e.g. [18]).

Proposition 1.6.24 (Analytic continuation). Let $X$ be an integral good $k$-analytic space.
(1) Let $Y$ be any analytic domain of $X$. The restriction morphism $\mathcal{O}(X) \rightarrow \mathcal{O}(Y)$ is injective.
(2) For any $x \in X$, the restriction morphism $\mathcal{O}(X) \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{x}$ is injective.

Proof. Let $f \in \mathcal{O}(X)$ be such that its restriction to $Y$ is zero. Let $Z$ denote the Zariski closed subset of $X$ determined by the zero locus of $f$. Then, $Y \subseteq Z$, so by [21, Corollaire 4.14], $Z=X$. This means that for any $x \in X,|f|_{x}=0$. Let $V$ be an affinoid neighborhood of $x$ in $X$. Then, $|f|_{y}=0$ for all $y \in V$, which by Proposition 1.3.15(1) (see also Theorem 1.1.38) implies that $f_{\mid V}$ is nilpotent in $\mathcal{O}(V)$. By Remark 1.5.18, the reducedness of $X$ implies that of $V$, so $f_{\mid V}=0$. We have shown that for any $x \in X, f=0$ in $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$, so $f=0$ in $\mathcal{O}(X)$, and the restriction morphism to $Y$ is injective.

The second part is a direct consequence of the first one.

### 1.7. Complement I: The sheaf of meromorphic functions

As in the complex setting, a sheaf of meromorphic functions can be defined satisfying similar properties. Moreover, its definition resembles heavily that of the sheaf of meromorphic functions for schemes (including the subtleties of the latter, see [43]).

Let $k$ denote a complete ultrametric field.

Definition 1.7.1. Let $X$ be a good $k$-analytic space. Let $\mathcal{S}_{X}$ be the presheaf of functions on $X$, which associates to any analytic domain $U$ the set of analytic functions on $U$ whose restriction to any affinoid domain in it is not a zero-divisor. Let $\mathscr{M}_{\text {- }}$ be the presheaf on $X$ that associates to any analytic domain $U$ the ring $\mathcal{S}_{X}(U)^{-1} \mathcal{O}_{X}(U)$. The sheafification $\mathscr{M}_{X}$ of the presheaf $\mathscr{M}_{-}$is said to be the sheaf of meromorphic functions on $X$.

It is immediate form the definition that for any analytic domain $U$ of $X, \mathcal{S}_{X}(U)$ contains no zero-divisors of $\mathcal{O}_{X}(U)$.

Remark 1.7.2. The sheaf of meromorphic functions for schemes is given as in Definition 1.7 .1 when replacing affinoid and analytic domain with open subset. Recall that if $\mathcal{X}$ is an integral scheme, then the ring of global sections of the sheaf of meromorphic functions on $\mathcal{X}$ coincides with its function field. See $[48,7.1 .1]$ for a treatment of meromorphic functions in the algebraic setting.

Proposition 1.7.3. Let $X$ be a good $k$-analytic space. Let $U$ be an analytic domain of $X$. Then,
(1) $\mathcal{S}_{X}(U)=\left\{f \in \mathcal{O}_{X}(U): f\right.$ is a non-zero-divisor in $\mathcal{O}_{U, x}$ for all $\left.x \in U\right\}$.
(2) $\mathcal{S}_{X}(U)=\left\{f \in \mathcal{O}_{X}(U): f\right.$ is a non-zero-divisor in $\mathcal{O}_{U}(G)$ for any open subset $G$ of $\left.U\right\}$.

Proof. (1) By a direct application of the definition, the elements of $\mathcal{S}_{X}(U)$ are non-zero-divisors on $\mathcal{O}_{U, x}$ for all $x \in U$.

Let $f \in \mathcal{O}_{X}(U)$ be such that $f$ is a non-zero-divisor in $\mathcal{O}_{U, x}$ for all $x \in U$. This means that $\mathcal{O}_{U, x} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{U, x}, a \mapsto f \cdot a$, is an injective map for $x \in U$.

Let $V$ be any affinoid domain in $U$. By [18, 4.1.11], for any $x \in V$, the morphism $\mathcal{O}_{U, x} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{V, x}$ is flat. Consequently, the map $\mathcal{O}_{V, x} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{V, x}, b \mapsto f \cdot b$, is injective, or equivalently, $f$ is a non-zero-divisor in $\mathcal{O}_{V, x}$. Suppose there exists $c \in \mathcal{O}_{U}(V)$ such that $f \cdot c=0$. Then, $c=0$ in $\mathcal{O}_{V, x}$ for all $x \in V$, implying $c=0$ in $\mathcal{O}_{U}(V)$. As a consequence, $f$ is a non-zero-divisor in $\mathcal{O}_{U}(V)$. We have shown that $f \in \mathcal{S}_{X}(U)$, concluding the proof of the first part of the statement.

Finally, (2) is a direct consequence of (1).
Lemma 1.7.4. Let $X$ be a good $k$-analytic space. Let $U$ be an affinoid domain in $X$. Then, $\mathcal{S}_{X}(U)$ is the set of non-zero divisors of $\mathcal{O}_{X}(U)$.

Proof. By definition, the elements of $\mathcal{S}_{X}(U)$ are not zero-divisors in $\mathcal{O}_{X}(U)$.
Let $f$ be an element of $A_{U}:=\mathcal{O}_{X}(U)$ that is a non-zero-divisor, i.e. such that the map $A_{U} \rightarrow A_{U}, a \mapsto f \cdot a$, is injective. Let $V \subseteq U$ be any affinoid domain. Set $A_{V}:=\mathcal{O}_{X}(V)$. Then, by Proposition 1.4.10(2), the restriction map $A_{U} \rightarrow A_{V}$ is flat. Consequently, the map $A_{V} \rightarrow A_{V}, b \mapsto f \cdot b$, remains injective, meaning $f$ is not a zero divisor in $A_{V}$. This implies that $f \in \mathcal{S}_{X}(U)$, proving the statement.

The proof of the following statement resembles the proof of its algebraic analogue.
Corollary 1.7.5. Let $X$ be a good $k$-analytic space. Then, for any $x \in X, \mathcal{S}_{X, x}$ is the set of elements of $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ that are non-zero-divisors.

Proof. Let $x \in X$. Clearly, the elements of $\mathcal{S}_{X, x}$ are not zero divisors in $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$.
Let $f \in \mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ be a non-zero-divisor. By restricting to an affinoid neighborhood of $x$ if necessary, we may assume, without loss of generality, that $X$ is an affinoid space and
$f \in \mathcal{O}_{X}(X)$. Set $A=\mathcal{O}_{X}(X)$. Set $I=\{a \in A: f \cdot a=0\}$. This is an ideal of $A$, and gives rise to the following short exact sequence

$$
0 \rightarrow I \rightarrow A \rightarrow A
$$

where $A \rightarrow A$ is given by $a \mapsto f \cdot a$. Seeing as $f$ is a non-zero-divisor in $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$, we obtain that $I \mathcal{O}_{X, x}=0$.

The ring $A$ is an affinoid algebra, and hence Noetherian (cf Theorem 1.3.9). Consequently, $I$ is finitely generated. Let $a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{n} \in A$ be such that $I=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{n}\right)$. By the above, the germs $a_{i, x} \in \mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ of $a_{i}$ at $x$ are zero for all $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$. Consequently, there exists an affinoid neighborhood $V$ of $x$ in $X$ such that $a_{i \mid V}=0$ for all $i$, implying $I \mathcal{O}_{X}(V)=0$.

Set $A_{V}:=\mathcal{O}_{X}(V)$. By Proposition 1.4.10(2), the restriction morphism $A \rightarrow A_{V}$ is flat, so the short exact sequence above induces the following short exact sequence:

$$
0 \rightarrow I \otimes_{A} A_{V} \rightarrow A_{V} \rightarrow A_{V}
$$

where $A_{V} \rightarrow A_{V}$ is given by $b \mapsto f_{\mid V} \cdot b$. Seeing as $A_{V}$ is a flat $A$-module, $I \otimes_{A} A_{V}$ is isomorphic to $I A_{V}=0$. Consequently, multiplication by $f_{\mid V}$ is injective in $A_{V}$, or equivalently $f_{\mid V}$ is a non-zero-divisor in $A_{V}$. By Lemma 1.7.4, this implies that $f_{\mid V} \in \mathcal{S}_{X}(V)$, and finally that $f \in \mathcal{S}_{X, x}$.

By Corollary 1.7.5, if $X$ is a good $k$-analytic space, then for any $x \in X, \mathscr{M}_{X, x}$ is the total ring of fractions of $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$. In particular, if $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ is a domain, then $\mathscr{M}_{X, x}=\operatorname{Frac} \mathcal{O}_{X, x}$. When there is no risk of confusion, we will simply denote $\mathcal{O}$, resp. $\mathscr{M}$, for the sheaf of analytic, resp. meromorphic functions on $X$. We make note of the following, well known, fact:

Lemma 1.7.6. Let $X$ be an integral $k$-affinoid space. Then, $\mathscr{M}(X)=\operatorname{Frac} \mathcal{O}(X)$.
Proof. Since $\mathcal{O}(X)$ is an integral domain, Frac $\mathcal{O}(X) \subseteq \mathscr{M}(X)$ by the definition of $\mathscr{M}$. Let $f \in \mathscr{M}(X)$. The sheaf $f \mathcal{O} \cap \mathcal{O} \subseteq \mathscr{M}$ is non-zero and coherent, so by Kiehl's Theorem [6, Proposition 2.3.1], it has a non-zero global section $x$. Then, there exists $y \in \mathcal{O}(X) \backslash\{0\}$, for which $f=\frac{x}{y} \in \operatorname{Frac} \mathcal{O}(X)$.

A very important non-trivial result for us is the following:
Proposition 1.7.7 (Hurwitz-Weierstrass Theorem, [6, Prop. 3.6.2]). Let $\mathcal{X}$ be a reduced proper scheme over $k$. Then, the canonical map $\mathscr{M}_{\mathcal{X}}(\mathcal{X}) \rightarrow \mathscr{M}_{\mathcal{X}}$ an $\left(\mathcal{X}^{\text {an }}\right)$, where $\mathscr{M}_{\mathcal{X}}$ denotes the sheaf of meromorphic functions on $\mathcal{X}$, is an isomorphism.

This can be generalized to schemes over an affinoid algebra. It is a non-trivial result for which GAGA-type theorems (cf. [45], [61, Annexe A]) are crucial. The arguments to prove the following result were given in a Mathoverflow thread (see [57]).

Let us first mention some brief reminders on the notion of depth. Let $R$ be a ring, $I$ an ideal of $R$, and $M$ a finitely generated $R$-module. An $M$-regular sequence of length $d$ over $I$ is a sequence $r_{1}, r_{2}, \ldots, r_{d} \in I$ such that $r_{i}$ is not a zero divisor in $M /\left(r_{1}, \ldots, r_{i-1}\right) M$ for $i=1,2, \ldots, d$. The depth of $M$ over $I$, denoted $\operatorname{depth}_{R}(I, M)$ in [13, Section 1], is

- $\infty$ if $I M=M$,
- the supremum of the length of $M$-regular sequences over $I$, otherwise.

In what follows, when $M=R$, we will denote $\operatorname{depth}_{R}(I, R)$ by $\operatorname{depth}_{I} R$. Remark that $\operatorname{depth}_{I} R>0$ if and only if $I$ contains a non-zero divisor of $R$.

Theorem 1.7.8. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $A$ be a $k$-affinoid algebra. Let $X$ be a proper scheme over Spec A. Let $X^{\mathrm{an}} / \mathcal{M}(A)$ denote the Berkovich analytification of $X$. Then, $\mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(X^{a n}\right)=\mathscr{M}_{X}(X)$, where $\mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}$ (resp. $\left.\mathscr{M}_{X}\right)$ denotes the sheaf of meromorphic functions on $X^{\text {an }}$ (resp. $X$ ).

When there is no risk of ambiguity and the ambient space is clear from context, we will simply write $\mathscr{M}$ for the sheaf of meromorphic functions.

Proof. As in Definition 1.7.1, let $\mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }}}$ denote the presheaf of analytic functions on $X^{\text {an }}$, which associates to any analytic domain $U$ the set of analytic functions on $U$ whose restriction to any affinoid domain in it is not a zero divisor. By Corollary 1.7.5, for any $x \in X^{\text {an }}, \mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }}, x}$ is the set of non-zero-divisors of $\mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}, x}$.

Let $\mathcal{I}$ be a coherent ideal sheaf on $X^{\text {an }}$ that locally on $X^{\text {an }}$ contains a section of $\mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }}}$. This means that for any $x \in X^{\text {an }}, \mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }, x} \cap} \cap \mathcal{I}_{x} \neq \emptyset$. Let $s \in \mathcal{S}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, x} \cap \mathcal{I}_{x}$. Then, $s$ is a non-zero divisor in $\mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, x}$, which implies $\operatorname{depth}_{\mathcal{I}_{x}} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}, x}>0$. Suppose, on the other hand, that $\mathcal{I}$ is a coherent ideal sheaf on $X^{\text {an }}$ such that $\operatorname{depth}_{\mathcal{I}_{x}} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}, x}>0$ for all $x \in X^{\text {an }}$. Then, there exists at least one element $s \in \mathcal{I}_{x}$ which is a non-zero-divisor in $\mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, x}$, implying $s \in \mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }}, x}$. To summarize, a coherent ideal sheaf $\mathcal{I}$ on $X^{\text {an }}$ contains locally on $X^{\text {an }}$ a section of $\mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }}}$ if and only if $\operatorname{depth}_{\mathcal{I}_{x}}\left(\mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}, x}\right)>0$ for all $x \in X^{\text {an }}$.

Let us show that for any coherent ideal sheaf $\mathcal{I}$ on $X^{\text {an }}$ containing locally on $X^{\text {an }}$ a section of $\mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }}}$, there is an embedding $\operatorname{Hom}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(\mathcal{I}, \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right) \subseteq \mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(X^{\text {an }}\right)$, where $\operatorname{Hom}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(\mathcal{I}, \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right)$ denotes the global sections on $X^{\text {an }}$ of the hom sheaf $\mathscr{H} \operatorname{om}\left(\mathcal{I}, \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right)$. Let $\varphi \in \operatorname{Hom}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(\mathcal{I}, \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right)$. For any $x \in X^{\text {an }}, \varphi$ induces a morphism $\varphi_{x}: \mathcal{I}_{x} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, x}$. Let $s_{x} \in \mathcal{S}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, x} \cap \mathcal{I}_{x}$, and set $a_{x}=\varphi_{x}\left(s_{x}\right)$. There exists a neighborhood $U_{x}$ of $x$, such that $s_{x} \in \mathcal{I}\left(U_{x}\right) \cap$ $\mathcal{S}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}}\left(U_{x}\right), a_{x} \in \mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}}\left(U_{x}\right)$, and $\varphi\left(U_{x}\right)\left(s_{x}\right)=a_{x}$. Set $f_{x}=\frac{a_{x}}{s_{x}} \in \mathcal{S}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}}\left(U_{x}\right)^{-1} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}}\left(U_{x}\right) \subseteq$ $\mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(U_{x}\right)$ (the presheaf $\mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }}}^{-1} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}$ is separated, so $\left.\mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }}}^{-1} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}} \subseteq \mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right)$.

Let $U_{y}, U_{z}$ be any non-disjoint elements of the cover $\left(U_{x}\right)_{x \in X^{\text {an }}}$ of $X^{\text {an }}$. Then, considering $\varphi$ is a morphism of sheaves of $\mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an- }}}$ modules, $\varphi\left(U_{y} \cap U_{z}\right)\left(s_{y} \cdot s_{z}\right)=s_{y} \cdot a_{z}=a_{y} \cdot s_{z}$ in $\mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(U_{y} \cap U_{z}\right)$. Consequently, $f_{y \mid U_{y} \cap U_{z}}=f_{z \mid U_{y} \cap U_{z}}$ in $\mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(U_{y} \cap U_{z}\right)$, implying there exists $f \in \mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(X^{\mathrm{an}}\right)$ such that $f_{\mid U_{x}}=f_{x}$ in $\mathscr{M}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}}\left(U_{x}\right)$ for all $x \in X^{\text {an }}$.

We associate to $\varphi$ the meromorphic function $f$. Remark that if $f=0$, then $a_{x}=0$ for all $x$. This implies that for any $\alpha \in \mathcal{I}_{x}, \varphi_{x}\left(s_{x} \cdot \alpha\right)=s_{x} \cdot \varphi_{x}(\alpha)=a_{x} \cdot \varphi_{x}(\alpha)=0$, which, taking into account $s_{x} \in \mathcal{S}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, x}$ a non-zero-divisor, means that $\varphi_{x}(\alpha)=0$. Consequently, $\varphi_{x}=0$ for all $x \in X^{\text {an }}$, so $\varphi=0$. Thus, the map $\psi_{\mathcal{I}}: \operatorname{Hom}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(\mathcal{I}, \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right) \rightarrow \mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(X^{\text {an }}\right)$ we have constructed is an embedding.

Remark that the set of coherent ideal sheaves on $X^{\text {an }}$ containing locally on $X^{\text {an }}$ a section of $\mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }}}$ forms a directed set with respect to reverse inclusion (i.e. if $\mathcal{I}, \mathcal{J}$ satisfy these properties, then so does $\mathcal{I} \cdot \mathcal{J} \subseteq \mathcal{I}, \mathcal{J})$. Thus, by the paragraph above, there is an embedding $\lim _{\mathcal{I}} \operatorname{Hom}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(\mathcal{I}, \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(X^{\text {an }}\right)$, where the direct limit is taken with respect to the same kind of coherent ideal sheaves $\mathcal{I}$ as above. Let us show that this embedding is an isomorphism.

For any $f \in \mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(X^{\text {an }}\right)$, define the ideal sheaf $D_{f}$ as follows: for any analytic domain $U$ of $X^{\text {an }}$, set $D_{f}(U)=\left\{s \in \mathcal{O}(U): s \cdot f \in \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}(U) \subseteq \mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}(U)\right\}$. This is a coherent ideal sheaf on $X^{\text {an }}$. Since $\mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}, x}=\mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }}, x}^{-1} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}, x}$ for any $x \in X^{\text {an }}$, there exist $s_{x} \in \mathcal{S}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, x}$ and $a_{x} \in \mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, x}$ such that $f_{x}=\frac{a_{x}}{s_{x}}$ in $\mathscr{M}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, x}$. Considering $D_{f, x}=\left\{s \in \mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, x}: s \cdot f_{x} \in\right.$
$\left.\mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }, x}}\right\}$, we obtain that $s_{x} \in D_{f, x}$, so $D_{f}$ contains locally on $X^{\text {an }}$ a section of $\mathcal{S}_{X^{\text {an }}}$. To $f \in \mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(X^{\text {an }}\right)$ we associate the morphism $\varphi_{f}: D_{f} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}$ which corresponds to multiplication by $f$ (i.e. for any open subset $U$ of $\left.X^{\text {an }}, D_{f}(U) \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}(U), s \mapsto f \cdot s\right)$. Clearly, $\psi_{D_{f}}\left(\varphi_{f}\right)=f$, implying the embedding $\lim _{\mathcal{I}} \operatorname{Hom}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(\mathcal{I}, \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(X^{\text {an }}\right)$ is surjective, so an isomorphism.

Let $\mathcal{S}_{X}$ denote the presheaf on $X$ through which $\mathscr{M}_{X}$ is defined (see [48, Section 7.1.1]). Remark that since $A$ is Noetherian ([6, Proposition 2.1.3]), the scheme $X$ is locally Noetherian. Under this assumption, for any $x \in X, \mathcal{S}_{X, x}$ is the set of all non-zero-divisors of $\mathcal{O}_{X, x}$ (see [48, 7.1.1, Lemma 1.12(c)]). Taking this into account, all the reasoning above does not make use of the fact that $X^{\text {an }}$ is an analytic space, and can be applied mutatis mutandis to the scheme $X$ and its sheaf of meromorphic functions $\mathscr{M}_{X}$. Thus, $\mathscr{M}_{X}(X) \cong{\underset{\mathcal{J}}{\mathcal{J}}}^{\operatorname{Hom}_{X}\left(\mathcal{J}, \mathcal{O}_{X}\right) \text {, where the direct limit is taken with respect }}$ to coherent ideal sheaves $\overrightarrow{\mathcal{J}}$ on $X$, for which depth $\mathcal{J}_{X, x} \mathcal{O}_{X, x}>0$ for all $x \in X$.

Consequently, to show the statement, we need to show that $\lim _{\mathcal{J}} \operatorname{Hom}_{X}\left(\mathcal{J}, \mathcal{O}_{X}\right)=$ $\lim _{\mathcal{I}} \operatorname{Hom}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(\mathcal{I}, \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right)$, where the direct limits are taken as above.

By [61, Annexe A] (which was proven in [45] in the case of rigid geometry), there is an equivalence of categories between the coherent sheaves on $X$ and those on $X^{\text {an }}$. Let us show that this induces an equivalence of categories between the coherent ideal sheaves on $X$ and those on $X^{\text {an }}$. To see this, we only need to show that if $\mathcal{F}$ is a coherent sheaf on $X$ such that $\mathcal{F}^{\text {an }}$ is an ideal sheaf on $X^{\text {an }}$, then $\mathcal{F}$ is an ideal sheaf on $X$. By [61, A.1.3], we have a sheaf isomorphism $\mathscr{H} \operatorname{om}(\mathcal{F}, \mathcal{O})^{\text {an }} \cong \mathscr{H} \operatorname{om}\left(\mathcal{F}^{\text {an }}, \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right)$, so $\mathscr{H} \operatorname{om}(\mathcal{F}, \mathcal{O})^{\text {an }}$ has a non-zero global section $\iota$ corresponding to the injection $\mathcal{F}^{\text {an }} \subseteq \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}$. By [61, Théorème A.1(i)], $\mathscr{H} \operatorname{om}(\mathcal{F}, \mathcal{O})^{\mathrm{an}}\left(X^{\mathrm{an}}\right) \cong \mathscr{H} \operatorname{om}(\mathcal{F}, \mathcal{O})(X)$. Let $\iota^{\prime} \in \mathscr{H} \operatorname{om}(\mathcal{F}, \mathcal{O})(X)$ denote the element corresponding to $\iota$. Then, the analytification of $\iota^{\prime}: \mathcal{F} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{X}$ is the morphism $\iota: \mathcal{F}^{\text {an }} \hookrightarrow$ $\mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}$. By flatness of $X^{\text {an }} \rightarrow X$, we obtain that $\left(\operatorname{ker} \iota^{\prime}\right)^{\text {an }}=\operatorname{ker} \iota^{\prime \text { an }}=\operatorname{ker} \iota$, so $\left(\operatorname{ker} \iota^{\prime}\right)^{\text {an }}=0$, implying ker $\iota^{\prime}=0$. Consequently, there exists an embedding $\mathcal{F} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}_{X}$, implying $\mathcal{F}$ is an ideal sheaf on $X$.

If to a coherent ideal sheaf $\mathcal{J}$ on $X$ we associate the coherent ideal sheaf $\mathcal{J}^{\text {an }}$ on $X^{\text {an }}$, then as seen above $\operatorname{Hom}_{X}\left(\mathcal{J}, \mathcal{O}_{X}\right) \cong \operatorname{Hom}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(\mathcal{J}^{\text {an }}, \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right)$.

Let us also show that a coherent ideal sheaf $\mathcal{J}$ on $X$ satisfies depth $\mathcal{J}_{x} \mathcal{O}_{X, x}>0$ for all $x \in X$ if and only if $\operatorname{depth}_{\mathcal{J}_{y}{ }^{\text {an }}} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}, y}>0$ for all $y \in X^{\text {an }}$. To see this, recall that by [4, Proposition 2.6.2], the morphism $\phi: X^{\text {an }} \rightarrow X$ is surjective and for any $y \in X^{\text {an }}$, the induced morphism of local rings $\mathcal{O}_{X, x} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}, y}$ is faithfully flat, where $x:=\phi(y)$. By [13, 1.3, Proposition 6], $\operatorname{depth}_{\mathcal{J}_{x}} \mathcal{O}_{X, x}=\operatorname{depth}_{\mathcal{J}_{x} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}, y}} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, y} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{X, x}} \mathcal{O}_{X, x}$. At the same time, seeing as the morphism $\mathcal{O}_{X, x} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}, y}}$ is flat, $\mathcal{J}_{y}^{\mathrm{an}}=\mathcal{J}_{x} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{X, x}} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}, y}}=\mathcal{J}_{x} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}, y},}$, so $\operatorname{depth}_{\mathcal{J}_{x}} \mathcal{O}_{X, x}=\operatorname{depth}_{\mathcal{J}_{y}^{\text {an }}} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}, y}$.

From the above, ${\underset{\mathcal{J}}{\mathcal{J}}}_{\lim _{X}}^{\operatorname{Hom}_{X}}\left(\mathcal{J}, \mathcal{O}_{X}\right)={\underset{\mathrm{lim}}{\mathcal{I}}}^{\operatorname{Hom}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(\mathcal{I}, \mathcal{O}_{X^{\text {an }}}\right) \text {, where the direct limits }}$ are taken with respect to coherent ideal sheaves $\mathcal{J}$ on $X$ (resp. $\mathcal{I}$ on $X^{\text {an }}$ ), for which $\operatorname{depth}_{\mathcal{J}_{x}} \mathcal{O}_{X, x}>0$ for all $x \in X$ (resp. $\operatorname{depth}_{\mathcal{I}_{x}} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\mathrm{an}}, x}>0$ for all $\left.x \in X^{\text {an }}\right)$. Finally, this implies that $\mathscr{M}_{X}(X)=\mathscr{M}_{X^{\text {an }}}\left(X^{\text {an }}\right)$.

As an immediate consequence of the theorem above, we obtain that for any integral $k$-affinoid space $Z, \mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)=\mathscr{M}(Z)(T)$.

### 1.8. Complement II: Analytic curves

Arguably, analytic curves in the sense of Berkovich form the class of Berkovich spaces that is understood the best and on which the most progress has been made. In [20], Ducros proves the semi-stable reduction theorem using only Berkovich's theory, which is why one can find an extensive study of these spaces in loc.cit. Among other things, the relationship between formal models of an algebraic curve and its Berkovich analytification is explored. Also, it is shown that Berkovich curves have a graph-like structure preserving their homotopy type, which then led to studies of combinatorial nature of these objects. Namely, connections have been made between tropical and Berkovich's geometry, and this is a rising area of research.

We give here a brief overview on analytic curves, focusing mainly on: major results or ones that are needed for the next chapters and which exist in the litterature (with references), and results that we need (which to our knowledge are not in the litterature) for which we provide proofs. There remain certain results of the latter type which will be proven when needed in the next chapters (we consider this to be a more natural presentation).

Throughout this section, let $k$ denote a complete ultrametric field.
1.8.1. The points of an analytic curve. Recall the definition of a good analytic curve (Definition 1.5.37) and the remark below it. The latter justifies the fact that we will simply say analytic curves from now on (instead of good analytic curves).

As in the case of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$, for any analytic curve there is a full classification of points. Let $C$ be a $k$-analytic curve. In Definition 1.5.21, for any $x \in C$, we introduced the invariants $s_{x}:=\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{H(x)}$ and $t_{x}:=\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$, where $\mathcal{H}(x)$ is the completed residue field of $x$, and $\widetilde{k}, \widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)}$ are the residue fields of $k, \mathcal{H}(x)$, respectively. By Lemma 1.5.22, for any $x \in C, s_{x}+t_{x} \leqslant 1$. Let us fix an algebraic closure $\bar{k}$ of $k$. The absolute value of $k$ extends uniquely to $\bar{k}$. We denote by $\widehat{\bar{k}}$ the completion of $\bar{k}$ with respect to said absolute value.

Definition 1.8.1. The point $x$ is said to be
(1) of type 1 if $\mathcal{H}(x) \subseteq \widehat{\bar{k}}$; remark that $s_{x}=t_{x}=0$;
(2) of type 2 if $s_{x}=1$;
(3) of type 3 if $t_{x}=1$;
(4) of type 4 if $s_{x}=t_{x}=0$ and $x$ is not of type 1 .

Remark that type 2 and 3 points are the Abhyankar points of $C$. By Proposition 1.5.24, for any affinoid domain in $C$, the points in its Shilov boundary are of type 2 or 3. Also, rigid points are type 1 points (but not necessarily vice-versa unless $k$ is algebraically closed or trivially valued). Definition 1.8.1 is compatible with the terminology we introduced in Subsection 1.2.4.

Here are a few results that we will need for the next chapters.
Lemma 1.8.2. Let $f: C_{1} \rightarrow C_{2}$ be a finite morphism of $k$-analytic curves. If $x \in C_{2}$ is a type $i$ point, then for any $y \in f^{-1}(x), y$ is a type $i$ point in $C_{1}, i=1,2,3,4$.

Proof. This is immediate from the fact that for any $y \in C_{1}$, the morphism $\mathcal{O}_{C_{2}, f(y)} \rightarrow$ $\mathcal{O}_{C_{1}, y}$ is finite.

Lemma 1.8.3 ([18, Lm. 4.4.5]). Let $C$ be a reduced $k$-analytic curve. Then, for any $x \in C$ that is not rigid, $\mathcal{O}_{C, x}$ is a field.

Lemma 1.8.4. Let $C$ be a normal $k$-analytic curve. Then, for any $x \in C, \mathcal{O}_{C, x}$ is either a field or a discrete valuation ring. Moreover, $\mathcal{O}_{C, x}$ is a discrete valuation ring if and only if $x$ is a rigid point of $C$.

Proof. By Corollary 3.2.9 of [18], $\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{O}_{C, x} \leqslant \operatorname{dim}_{x}(C)=1$. If $\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{O}_{C, x}=0$, then $\mathcal{O}_{C, x}$ is a normal local ring of Krull dimension 0 , so it is a field. If $\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{O}_{C, x}=1$, then $\mathcal{O}_{C, x}$ is a Noetherian normal local ring of Krull dimension 1, so it is a discrete valuation ring.

To show the last part of the statement, by Lemma 1.8.3, it suffices to prove that if $\mathcal{O}_{C, x}$ is a field for some $x \in C$, then $x$ is not a rigid point. This is a consequence of $[\mathbf{1 8}$, Corollary 3.2.9].

Lemma 1.8.5. Let $C$ be an irreducible $k$-analytic curve. Then, any proper Zariski closed subset of $C$ is discrete and contains only rigid points.

Proof. Recall that a Zariski closed subset of $C$ is a $k$-analytic space, so it makes sense to speak of its dimension.

Let $Z$ be a proper Zariski closed subset of $C$. By [21, Cor. 4.14], $\operatorname{dim} Z=0$. Hence, for any $x \in Z, \operatorname{dim}_{x}(Z)=0$, which by $[\mathbf{2 2}, 1.21]$ is equivalent to the fact that $x$ is a rigid and isolated point.

Lemma 1.8.6. Let $k$ be a trivially valued field. Let $C$ be an integral projective $k$-analytic curve. Then, $C$ contains exactly one type 2 point $x$, and $\mathcal{O}_{x}=\mathscr{M}(C)$.

Proof. By Proposition 1.6.13, the curve $C$ is the analytification of an integral projective algebraic curve $\mathcal{C}$ over $k$. Let $\pi: C \rightarrow \mathcal{C}$ denote the canonical morphism.

Let $U$ be any affine open subset of $\mathcal{C}$. Then, by Lemma 1.8.5, all type 2 points are contained in $\pi^{-1}(U)=U^{\text {an }}$. Seeing as $U$ is affine, $U^{\text {an }}$ is the set of multiplicative seminorms on $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{C}}(U)$ which extend the absolute value of $k$. Remark that the trivial norm on $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{C}}(U)$ determines a unique point of $U^{\text {an }}$.

Let $x \in U$ be any type 2 point. Then, seeing as $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}=\{1\}$, we obtain that $\sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}=\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|=\{1\}$, i.e. $x$ induces the trivial norm on $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{C}}(U)$. Consequently, by the description of the points of $U^{\text {an }}$, there is exactly one type 2 point in $U^{\text {an }}$, and hence in $C$. By Lemma 1.4.12, $\mathcal{H}(x)$ is the completion of the residue field $\kappa(x)$ with respect to the trivial norm, implying $\kappa(x)=\mathcal{H}(x)$. As $x$ is of type $2, \kappa(x)=\mathcal{O}_{x}$.

By Remark 1.6.7, $\mathcal{H}(x)$ is the completion of $\operatorname{Frac} \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{C}}(U)$ with respect to the trivial norm $|\cdot|_{x}$, so $\mathcal{H}(x)=\operatorname{Frac} \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{C}}(U)$. As $C$ is irreducible, $\mathscr{M}(C)=\operatorname{Frac} \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{C}}(U)=\mathcal{H}(x)$.

Type 3 points are crucial for the constructions we will make, which is why it is very important to know when they exist.

Proposition 1.8.7. Let $C$ be a $k$-analytic curve. Type 3 points exist in $C$ if and only if $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, in which case they are dense.

Moreover, the family of connected affinoid domains with only type 3 points in their topological boundaries forms a basis of neighborhoods of the Berkovich topology on C.

Proof. Since curves are good analytic spaces, we may assume that $C$ is an affinoid space. Let $U$ be an open neighborhood of $x$ in $C$. There exists an open neighborhood
of $x$ in $U$ given by $\left\{\left|f_{i}\right|<r_{i},\left|g_{j}\right|>s_{j}: i=1,2, \ldots, n, j=1,2, \ldots, m\right\}$, where $f_{i}, g_{j}$ are analytic functions on $C$ and $r_{i}, s_{j} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$.

Let $r_{i}^{\prime}, s_{j}^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$, such that $r_{i}^{\prime}<r_{i}$ and $s_{j}^{\prime}>s_{j}$, and $\left|f_{i}(x)\right|<r_{i}^{\prime},\left|g_{j}(x)\right|>s_{j}^{\prime}$, for all $i$ and $j$. Set $V=\left\{\left|f_{i}\right| \leqslant r_{i}^{\prime},\left|g_{j}\right| \geqslant s_{j}^{\prime}\right\}$. It is an affinoid domain of $C$ and a neighborhood of $x$ contained in $U$.

As $\left\{\left|f_{i}\right|<r_{i}^{\prime},\left|g_{j}^{\prime}\right|>s_{j}\right\}$ is open, it is contained in $\operatorname{Int}(V)$, so $\partial V \subseteq \bigcup_{i=1}^{n}\left\{\left|f_{i}\right|=\right.$ $\left.r_{i}^{\prime}\right\} \cup \bigcup_{j=1}^{m}\left\{\left|g_{j}\right|=s_{j}^{\prime}\right\}$. Let $y \in \bigcup_{i=1}^{n}\left\{\left|f_{i}\right|=r_{i}^{\prime}\right\} \cup \bigcup_{j=1}^{m}\left\{\left|g_{j}\right|=s_{j}^{\prime}\right\}$. Since there exists an analytic function $f$ on $C$ such that $|f(y)| \notin \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$, the point $y$ is of type 3 , implying that the boundary of $V$ contains only type 3 points.

### 1.8.2. Boundaries in dimension 1.

Lemma 1.8.8. Let $V$ be a $k$-affinoid curve. The following sets are equal:
(1) the Berkovich boundary $\partial_{B}(V)$ of $V$;
(2) the Shilov boundary $\Gamma(V)$ of $V$.

Proof. If $V$ is strictly affinoid, this is [69, Lemma 2.3]. The proof can be extended to the general case by replacing classical reduction with Temkin's graded reduction (see Propositions 3.3 and 3.4 of [ $\mathbf{6 7 ]}$ ).

Remark 1.8.9. If $C$ is a $k$-analytic curve and $U$ an analytic domain of $C$, then by Theorem 1.5.27, $\partial U \subseteq \partial_{B}(U)$.

Proposition 1.8.10. Let $C$ be a $k$-analytic curve such that $\partial_{B}(C)=\emptyset$. Let $V$ be an affinoid domain of $C$. The three following sets coincide:
(1) the topological boundary $\partial V$ of $V$ in $C$;
(2) the Berkovich relative boundary $\partial_{B}(V / C)$ of $V$ in $C$;
(3) the Shilov boundary $\Gamma(V)$ of $V$.

Proof. By Theorem 1.5.27(2), $\partial_{B}(V / C)=\partial V$. By Theorem 1.5.27(1), since $C$ is boundaryless, $\partial_{B}(V / C)=\partial_{B}(V)$. Finally, in view of Lemma 1.8.8, $\partial V=\partial_{B}(V / C)=\Gamma(V)$.

In particular, the results above tell us that the topological (and Berkovich) boundary of any affinoid domain of an analytic curve is finite. As an immediate consequence:

Corollary 1.8.11. Let $C$ be a $k$-analytic curve. For any affinoid domain $U$ in $C$, $\overline{(\text { Int } U)}=U$.

The following is a direct consequence of [60, Lemme 4.4] and Proposition 1.3.14.
Proposition 1.8.12. Let $V$ be a $k$-affinoid curve. Then, $V$ is strict if and only if $\Gamma(V)$ contains only type 2 points.
1.8.3. Some general results on curves. Informally, a real graph is an infinite graph where there can be "infinite branching" even locally (for example, the tree corresponding to $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is a real graph). The precise notion has many nice properties, e.g. it is locally uniquely arcwise-connected. For the precise definition, see [20, 1.3.1].

Theorem 1.8.13 ([20, Théorème 3.5.1]). An analytic curve is a real graph.
Type 3 points are the points of arity 2 in the real graph associated to the analytic curve. Type 1 and 4 points have arity 1 , and type 2 points infinity.

Here is a useful (for the next chapters) application of this.

Proposition 1.8.14. Let $C$ be a compact $k$-analytic curve. For any $x, y \in C$, there exist only finitely many arcs in $C$ connecting $x$ and $y$.

Proof. By [20, Théorème 3.5.1], $C$ is a real graph. By [20, 1.3.13], for any $z \in C$, there exists an open neighborhood $U_{z}$ of $z$ such that: (1) $U_{z}$ is uniquely arcwise-connected; (2) the closure $\overline{U_{z}}$ of $U_{z}$ in $C$ is uniquely arcwise-connected; (3) the boundary $\partial U_{z}$ is finite, implying in particular $\partial U_{z}=\partial \overline{U_{z}}$. Seeing as $C$ is compact, the finite open cover $\left\{U_{z}\right\}_{z \in C}$ admits a finite subcover $\mathcal{U}:=\left\{U_{1}, U_{2}, \ldots, U_{n}\right\}$. Set $S:=\bigcup_{i=1}^{n} \partial U_{i}$. This is a finite subset of $C$.

Let $x, y$ be any two points of $C$. Let $\gamma:[0,1] \rightarrow C$ be any arc in $C$ connecting $x$ and $y$. Set $S_{\gamma}:=S \cap \gamma([0,1]) \backslash\{x, y\}$. It is a finite (possibly empty) subset of $C$. For any $\alpha \in S_{\gamma}$, there exists a unique $a \in[0,1]$ such that $\gamma(a)=\alpha$. This gives rise to an ordering of the points of $S_{\gamma}$. Set $S_{\gamma}=\left\{\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{m}\right\}$ such that the order of the points is the following: $\alpha_{1}<\alpha_{2}<\cdots<\alpha_{m}$ (meaning $\gamma^{-1}\left(\alpha_{1}\right)<\gamma^{-1}\left(\alpha_{2}\right)<\cdots<\gamma^{-1}\left(\alpha_{m}\right)$ ). To the arc $\gamma$ we associate the finite sequence $\bar{\gamma}:=\left(\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{m}\right)$ of points of $S_{\gamma}$. Set $\alpha_{0}=x$, and $\alpha_{m+1}=y$.

For any $i \in\{0,1, \ldots, m+1\}$, set $\gamma_{i}:=\gamma\left(\left[\gamma^{-1}\left(\alpha_{i}\right), \gamma^{-1}\left(\alpha_{i+1}\right)\right]\right)$. This is an arc in $C$ connecting $\alpha_{i}$ and $\alpha_{i+1}$. By construction, for any $i, \gamma_{i} \cap S \subseteq\left\{\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right\}$. Remark that $\gamma([0,1])=\bigcup_{i=0}^{m+1} \gamma_{i}$.

Let us show that for any $i \in\{0,1, \ldots, m\}$, there exists a unique arc $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right]_{0}$ in $C$ connecting $\alpha_{i}$ and $\alpha_{i+1}$ such that $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right]_{0} \cap S \subseteq\left\{\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right\}$. Let $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right]$ be any such arc (the existence is guaranteed by the paragraphs above). Let $j \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$ be such that $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right] \cap U_{j} \neq \emptyset$. Let $z \in\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right] \cap U_{j}$; since $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right] \cap U_{j}$ is open in $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right]$, we may choose $z$ such that $z \notin\left\{\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right\}$. Let us denote by $\left[\alpha_{i}, z\right]$, resp. [ $\left.z, \alpha_{i+1}\right]$ the $\operatorname{arc}$ in $C$ induced by $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right]$ connecting $\alpha_{i}$ and $z$, resp. $z$ and $\alpha_{i+1}$. Clearly, $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right]=$ $\left[\alpha_{i}, z\right] \cup\left[z, \alpha_{i}\right]$.

Suppose there exists $u \in\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right] \backslash \overline{U_{j}}$. Again, as $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right] \backslash \overline{U_{j}}$ is open in $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right]$, we may assume that $u \notin\left\{\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right\}$. Without loss of generality, let us suppose that $u \in\left[\alpha_{i}, z\right]$. Let $\left[\alpha_{i}, u\right]$, resp. $[u, z]$, be the induced arcs connecting $\alpha_{i}$ and $u$, resp. $u$ and $z$. Seeing as $z \in U_{j}$ and $u \notin U_{j},[z, u] \cap \partial U_{j} \neq \emptyset$. At the same time, $\emptyset \neq[z, u] \cap \partial U_{j} \subseteq\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right] \cap \partial U_{j} \subseteq$ $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right] \cap S \subseteq\left\{\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right\}$, which contradicts the injectivity of $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right]$.

Consequently, $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right] \subseteq \overline{U_{j}}$. Seeing as $\overline{U_{j}}$ is uniquely arcwise-connected, we obtain that the arc $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right]$ in $C$ connecting $\alpha_{i}$ and $\alpha_{i+1}$, and satisfying the property $\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right] \cap$ $S \subseteq\left\{\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right\}$, is unique. Thus, $\gamma_{i}=\left[\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i+1}\right]$, and the arc $\gamma$ is uniquely determined by its associated ordered sequence $\bar{\gamma}$.

Seeing as $S$ is finite, the set of all finite sequences $\left(\beta_{l}\right)_{l}$ over $S$ such that $\beta_{l^{\prime}} \neq \beta_{l^{\prime \prime}}$ whenever $l^{\prime} \neq l^{\prime \prime}$, is also finite. Consequently, the set of arcs in $C$ connecting $x$ and $y$ is finite.

The following result is crucial for our work in the next chapters. It is among the main reasons why the case of curves is the most pleasant one to treat. The proof is obtained by applying Théorème 6.1.3 of [20].

Theorem 1.8.15. (1) An irreducible compact $k$-analytic curve is either projective or an affinoid space.
(2) The finite union of affinoid domains in an irreducible $k$-analytic curve is the curve itself or an affinoid domain.

Proof. (1) Let $C$ be an irreducible compact $k$-analytic curve. Then, if $\partial_{B}(C) \neq \emptyset$, $C$ is an affinoid curve by [20, Théorème 6.1.3]. If $\partial_{B}(C)=\emptyset$, then the canonical map $C \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k)$ is proper, so $C$ is a projective curve.
(2) Let $C$ be an irreducible $k$-analytic curve. It suffices to show the result for two affinoid domains. Let $U_{1}, U_{2}$ be affinoid domains in $C$. Set $X=U_{1} \cup U_{2}$. This is an analytic domain in the sense of $[4,1.3]$ by definition. As $X$ is an analytic curve, by [20, Proposition 3.3.7], it is a good $k$-analytic space. It can be shown that $X$ is also an analytic domain of $C$ in the sense of Definition 1.5.5 (see [4, pg. 23]). If $\partial_{B}(X)=\emptyset$, then by Remark 1.8.9, $\partial X=\emptyset$. As $X$ is a compact, hence closed, subset of the connected curve $C$, this is possible if and only if $X=C$. In particular, $C$ is projective (as $\partial_{B}(C)=\emptyset$ ).

Suppose $\partial_{B}(X) \neq \emptyset$. Let $X_{0}$ be an irreducible component of $X$, meaning it is a Zariski closed subset of $X$, and the inclusion $X_{0} \rightarrow X$ is a closed immersion, hence finite. By Proposition 1.5.31 and Theorem 1.5.27, $\partial_{B}\left(X_{0}\right)=X_{0} \backslash \operatorname{Int}_{B}(X)$, meaning $\partial_{B}\left(X_{0}\right) \subseteq \partial_{B}(X)$.

If $\partial_{B}\left(X_{0}\right)=\emptyset$, by $[20,3.2 .3], X_{0}=C$, so $X=C$, and $X$ is proper, which is in contradiction with the assumption $\partial_{B}(X) \neq \emptyset$. Thus, for any irreducible component $X_{0}$ of $X, \emptyset \neq \partial_{B}\left(X_{0}\right) \subseteq \partial_{B}(X)$. We conclude by [20, Théorème 6.1.3] that $X$ is an affinoid space which is an analytic domain of $C$, hence an affinoid domain in $C$.

Here is another way to obtain affinoid domains on a curve. This is again an application of [ $\mathbf{2 0}$, Théorème 6.1.3].

Lemma 1.8.16. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible projective $k$-analytic curve. Let $U$ be a connected affinoid domain of $C$ such that its boundary contains only type 3 points. Then, for any $S \subseteq \partial U, U \backslash S$ is connected.

Proof. Suppose that $C$ is generically quasi-smooth. Since $\partial S$ contains only type 3 points, all of the points of $S$ are quasi-smooth in $C$.

Let $x, y \in$ Int $U$. Since $U$ is connected, there exists an $\operatorname{arc}[x, y] \subseteq U$ connecting $x$ and $y$. Let $z \in S$. We aim to show that $z \notin[x, y]$, implying $[x, y] \subseteq U \backslash S$, and thus the connectedness of $U \backslash S$.

By [20, Théorème 4.5.4], there exists an affinoid neighborhood $V$ of $z$ in $U$ such that it is a closed virtual annulus, and its Berkovich boundary is $\partial_{B}(V)=\{z, u\}$ for some $u \in U$. We may assume that $x, y \notin V$. Since $V$ is an affinoid domain in $U$, by Theorem 1.5.27, the topological boundary $\partial_{U} V$ of $V$ in $U$ is a subset of $\partial_{B}(V)=\{z, u\}$. Since $V$ is a neighborhood of $z, \partial_{U} V=\{u\}$.

Suppose $z \in[x, y]$. Then, we could decompose $[x, y]=[x, z] \cup[z, y]$. Since $x, y \notin V$, and $z \in V$, the sets $[x, z] \cap \partial_{U} V,[z, y] \cap \partial_{U} V$ are non-empty, thus implying $u$ is contained in both $[x, z]$ and $[z, y]$, which contradicts the injectivity of $[x, y]$. Consequently, $U \backslash S$ is connected.

Let us get back to the general case. Let $C^{\text {alg }}$ denote the algebraization of $C$ (i.e. the normal irreducible projective algebraic curve over $k$ whose analytification is $C$ ). Since it is normal, there exists a finite surjective morphism $C^{\text {alg }} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1}$. This induces a finite field extension $k(T) \hookrightarrow k\left(C^{\text {an }}\right)=\mathscr{M}(C)$ of their function fields. Let $F$ denote the separable closure of $k(T)$ in $k(C)$. Then, there exists an irreducible normal algebraic curve $X$ over $k$ such that $k(X)=F$. Seeing as $k(T) \hookrightarrow k(C)$ is separable, the induced morphism $X \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1}$ is generically étale, so $X$ is generically smooth. On the other hand, the finite field extension $k(C) / F$ is purely inseparable, implying the corresponding finite morphism $C^{\text {alg }} \rightarrow X$ is a homeomorphism.

Finally, the analytification $X^{\text {an }}$ is a normal irreducible projective $k$-analytic curve that is generically quasi-smooth, and there is a finite morphism $f: C \rightarrow X^{\text {an }}$ that is a homeomorphism. By [20, Proposition 4.2.14], $f(U)$ is a connected proper closed analytic domain of $X^{\text {an }}$. By [20, Théorème 6.1.3], $f(U)$ is an affinoid domain of $X^{\text {an }}$. Clearly, $\partial f(U)=f(\partial U)$. Let $S \subseteq \partial U$, and set $S^{\prime}=f(S)$. As shown above, $f(U) \backslash S^{\prime}$ is connected. Consequently, $U \backslash S$ is connected.

Corollary 1.8.17. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible $k$-analytic curve. Let $U$ be an affinoid domain in $C$ containing only type 3 points in its boundary. If $\operatorname{Int}(U) \neq \emptyset$, then $(\text { Int } U)^{c}$ is an affinoid domain in $C$ containing only type 3 points in its boundary.

Proof. Seeing as $U$ is an affinoid domain, it has a finite number of connected components, and by Corollary 1.4.19, they are all affinoid domains in $C$. Furthermore, each of the connected components of $U$ contains only type 3 points in its boundary. Consequently, by Lemma 1.8.16, $\operatorname{Int}(U)$ has only finitely many connected components. Thus, by [20, Proposition 4.2.14], $(\operatorname{Int} U)^{c}$ is a closed proper analytic domain of $C$. By [ $\mathbf{2 0}$, Théorème 6.1.3], it is an affinoid domain in $C$.

Until the end of this part, we briefly mention some of the cornerstones of the theory of Berkovich curves.

Triangulations. In [20], Ducros introduces the notions of virtual discs and virtual annuli (resp. closed virtual discs and closed virtual annuli), which are generalizations of discs and annuli (resp. closed discs and annuli) as we saw them in Examples 1.4.25 and 1.5.13; more precisely, a (closed) virtual disc, resp. annulus, becomes isomorphic to a disjoint union of (closed) discs, resp. annuli, after a base change. The Berkovich boundary of a virtual disc (resp. annulus) is a single point (resp. a set of 2 points), and the same remains true if we replace disc (resp. annulus) by closed disc (resp. closed annulus). Using these spaces, Ducros provides bases of neighborhoods for all of the types of points of a quasi-smooth Berkovich curve. In particular, he shows that a basis of neighborhoods of type 3 points of a quasi-smooth curve is given by closed virtual annuli.

In $[\mathbf{2 0}]$, the notion of triangulation of a quasi-smooth $k$-analytic curve is introduced; it is a locally finite set of type 2 and 3 points of the curve satisfying certain topological and analytic properties (see [20,5.1.13]). To any triangulation we can associate a locally finite graph, called a skeleton of the curve, and there is a strong deformation retraction from the curve to this skeleton. If $T$ is a triangulation of a $k$-analytic curve $C$, then the connected components of $C \backslash T$ are virtual discs and virtual annuli.

The specialization map. There is a more thorough treatment of the following content in Section 3.3. We give here a brief overview (without the relevant references, which will be given in Section 3.3).

For a complete ultrametric field $k$, let $k^{\circ}$ denote its ring of integers. Given an adequate formal model $\mathscr{C}$ of an algebraic curve over $k^{\circ}$, there is a notion of an analytic generic fiber $C$ of $\mathscr{C}$, where $C$ is a $k$-analytic curve. This is the analytification of the algebraic generic fiber of $\mathscr{C}$ if the latter is projective. In general, there exists a specialization map (sometimes called reduction map, which we will avoid because of Subsection 1.4.7) $C \rightarrow \mathscr{C}_{s}$, where $\mathscr{C}_{s}$ is the special fiber of $\mathscr{C}$. The specialization map is anti-continuous.

Let $C$ be a normal irreducible projective $k$-analytic curve. Let $C^{\text {alg }}$ be the algebraic curve over $k$ such that $\left(C^{\text {alg }}\right)^{\text {an }}=C$ (recall Proposition 1.6.13). Ducros showed in [20] that under certain conditions, for any finite set of type 2 points $S$ of $C$, there exists a model $\mathscr{C}$ of $C^{\text {alg }}$ over $k^{\circ}$ such that the corresponding specialization map induces a bijection between
$S$ and the generic points of the irreducible components of the special fiber of $\mathscr{C}$. We will need this connection between fibers when comparing the statements of Chapter 3 to those of [34]. This result is shown more generally for certain subsets $S$ of $C$ which are called vertex sets (or in French, ensemble sommitaux, see [20, 6.3.17] for the definition).
1.8.4. Additional properties of $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field.

Recall that (Definition 1.5.41) that a topological space $X$ is said to be uniquely arcwiseconnected if for any $x, y \in X$, there exists a unique arc in $X$ connecting $x$ and $y$.

Proposition 1.8.18. The analytic affine line $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is locally compact, uniquely arcwiseconnected, and contractible.

Proposition 1.8.19. The projective analytic line $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, a n}$ is compact, uniquely arcwiseconnected, and contractible.

For a proof, see [20, 3.4.20].
For any $x, y \in \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$, let us denote by $[x, y]$ the unique arc connecting them. The next few properties are a direct consequence of Proposition 1.8.19.

Lemma 1.8.20. Let $A \subseteq \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Then, $A$ is connected if and only if for any $x, y \in A$, $[x, y] \subseteq A$. Furthermore, the intersection of any two connected subsets of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is connected.

Lemma 1.8.21. Let $U, V$ be two non-disjoint connected affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, a n}$, such that they have disjoint interiors. Then, $U \cap V$ is a single point.

Proof. Since $U \cap V=\partial U \cap \partial V$, it is a finite set of points. At the same time, by Lemma 1.8.20, $U \cap V$ is connected, so it must be a single point.

We will now give a more precise description of points in $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ (or equivalently, $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ ).
Let us fix an algebraic closure $\bar{k}$ of $k$. There is a canonical surjective open continuous morphism $\varphi: \mathbb{A}_{\widehat{\bar{k}}}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ induced by the inclusion $k[T] \hookrightarrow \widehat{\bar{k}}[T]$. Let $G$ denote $\operatorname{Gal}\left(k^{s} / k\right)$, where $k^{s}$ is a separable closure of $k$. Then, by Proposition 1.1.43, $G$ acts on $\mathbb{A}_{\bar{k}}^{1, \text { an }}$, and $\varphi$ induces a homeomorphism $\mathbb{A}_{\bar{k}}^{1 \text {,an }} / G \cong \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Remark that for any $a \in \bar{k}$, $r^{\prime}, r \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}$, the elements of $G$ act on $\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{\overline{\widehat{k}}}^{1, \text { an }}: r^{\prime} \leqslant|T-a|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$ by sending it homeomorphically to $\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{\bar{k}}^{1 \text {,an }}: r^{\prime} \leqslant|T-b|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$, where $b$ is a conjugate of $a$.

Lemma 1.8.22. Let $P(T)$ be a monic irreducible polynomial over $k$. Let $\alpha \in \bar{k}$ be such that $P(\alpha)=0$. Then, for any $s, s^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}$ such that $s^{\prime} \leqslant s$, there exist unique $r, r^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}$ such that $r^{\prime} \leqslant r$, satisfying: $\varphi\left(\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{\bar{k}}^{1, \text { an }}: r^{\prime} \leqslant|T-\alpha|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}\right)=\left\{y \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}: s^{\prime} \leqslant|P|_{y} \leqslant s\right\}$. Moreover, $s>0$ (resp. $s^{\prime}>0$ ) if and only if $r>0$ (resp. $r^{\prime}>0$ ). Consequently,

$$
\varphi^{-1}\left(\left\{y \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}: s^{\prime} \leqslant|P|_{y} \leqslant s\right\}\right)=\bigcup_{\substack{\alpha \in \bar{k} \\ P(\alpha)=0}}\left\{x \in \mathbb{A}_{\bar{k}}^{1, \text { an }}: r^{\prime} \leqslant|T-\alpha|_{x} \leqslant r\right\} .
$$

Proof. Let us suppose $s^{\prime}=0$. The general statement can be shown using the same type of argument.

For any root $\beta$ of $P(T)$ over $\bar{k}$, let $n_{\beta}$ be its multiplicity, so that $P(T)=\prod_{P(\beta)=0}(T-\beta)^{n_{\beta}}$. The function $f: \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, t \mapsto t^{n_{\alpha}} \prod_{P(\beta)=0, \alpha \neq \beta} \max (t,|\alpha-\beta|)^{n_{\beta}}$, is strictly increasing and continuous, so bijective. Thus, for any $s \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}$, there exists a unique positive real
number $r \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}$, such that $f(r)=s$. Moreover, $r=0$ if and only if $s=0$. Remark that $r^{\operatorname{deg} P} \leqslant s$.

Let $x \in \mathbb{A}_{\overline{\bar{k}}}^{1, \text { an }}$ be such that $|T-\alpha|_{x} \leqslant r$. Then, $|P(T)|_{\varphi(x)}=\prod_{P(\beta)=0}|T-\beta|_{x}^{n_{\beta}} \leqslant$ $r^{n_{\alpha}} \prod_{P(\beta)=0, \alpha \neq \beta}|T-\beta|_{x}^{n_{\beta}}$. Also, since $|\cdot|_{x}$ is non-Archimedean, we obtain that $|T-\beta|_{x} \leqslant$ $\max \left(|T-\alpha|_{x},|\alpha-\beta|_{x}\right) \leqslant \max (r,|\alpha-\beta|)$, implying $|P(T)|_{\varphi(x)} \leqslant s$. Hence, $\varphi(x) \in\left\{y:|P|_{y} \leqslant s\right\}$.

Let $y \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ be such that $|P(T)|_{y} \leqslant s$. Let $x \in \varphi^{-1}(y)$. Suppose that for any root $\beta$ of $P(T)$ we have $|T-\beta|_{x}>r$. Then, $s \geqslant|P(T)|_{y}=\prod_{P(\beta)=0}|T-\beta|_{x}^{n_{\beta}}>r^{\operatorname{deg} P}$, which is impossible. Thus, there exists a root $\beta_{0}$ of $P$ in $\bar{k}$ such that $\left|T-\beta_{0}\right|_{x} \leqslant r$. By the Galois action, there exists $x^{\prime} \in \varphi^{-1}(y)$ such that $|T-\alpha|_{x^{\prime}} \leqslant r$.

The last part of the statement is a direct consequence of the Galois action on $\mathbb{A}_{\widehat{\bar{k}}}^{1, \text { an }}$.
Corollary 1.8.23. Let $P(T)$ be an irreducible polynomial over $k$. Let $\alpha \in \bar{k}$ be such that $P(\alpha)=0$. Let $s, s^{\prime}$ be positive real numbers such that $s \geqslant s^{\prime}$, and $r, r^{\prime}$, with $r \geqslant r^{\prime}$, the corresponding positive real numbers obtained by applying Lemma 1.8.22.

Then, the (topological or Shilov or Berkovich) boundary of $\left\{x:|P|_{x} \leqslant s\right\}$ (resp. $\left\{x: s^{\prime} \leqslant|P|_{x} \leqslant s\right\}$ ) is $\left\{\varphi\left(\eta_{\alpha, r}\right)\right\}$ (resp. $\left\{\varphi\left(\eta_{\alpha, r^{\prime}}\right), \varphi\left(\eta_{\alpha, r}\right)\right\}$ ).

Proof. We may, without loss of generality, assume that $P$ is monic (recall Lemma 1.4.2). Seeing as $\varphi$ is open and continuous, by Lemma 1.8.22, $\varphi^{-1}\left(\partial\left\{x:|P|_{x} \leqslant s\right\}\right)=\partial \bigcup_{P(\beta)=0}\left\{y:|T-\beta|_{y} \leqslant r\right\} . \quad$ By [20, 3.6.4.1], for any $\beta \in \bar{k}$ such that $P(\beta)=0$, the Shilov boundary of $\left\{y:|T-\beta|_{y} \leqslant r\right\}$ is $\left\{\eta_{\beta, r}\right\}$. Thus, $\varphi^{-1}\left(\partial\left\{x:|P|_{x} \leqslant s\right\}\right)=\left\{\eta_{\beta, r} \in \mathbb{A}_{\bar{k}}^{1, \text { an }}: P(\beta)=0\right\}$.

Seeing as $\eta_{\beta, r}$ is the topological boundary of $\left\{x:|T-\beta|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$ in $\mathbb{A}_{\hat{\bar{k}}}^{1, \text { an }}$, we obtain that $\varphi\left(\eta_{\beta, r}\right)=\varphi\left(\eta_{\alpha, r}\right)$ for any $\beta \in \bar{k}$ such that $P(\beta)=0$. Finally, $\partial\left\{x:|P|_{x} \leqslant s\right\}=\left\{\varphi\left(\eta_{\alpha, r}\right)\right\}$.

We can conclude seeing as $\left\{x:|P|_{x} \leqslant s\right\}$ and $\left\{y:|T|_{y} \leqslant r\right\}$ are affinoid domains in $\mathbb{A}_{\widehat{k}}^{1 \text {,an }}$, resp. $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$, and taking into account Proposition 1.8.10 and Example 1.5.2.

The other case is shown similarly.
Definition 1.8.24. Let $P \in k[T]$ be any irreducible polynomial. Recall that we denote by $\eta_{P, 0}$ the only (type 1 ) point of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ for which $|P|=0$. For $s \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, we will denote by $\eta_{P, s}$ the point of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ that is the Shilov boundary of the affinoid domain $\{|P| \leqslant s\} \subseteq \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$.

Proposition 1.8.25. For any point $\eta \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ of type 2 or 3, there exist an irreducible polynomial $P \in k[T]$ and $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, such that $\eta=\eta_{P, r}$. Then, $|P|_{\eta}=r$ and:
(1) $r \in \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$if and only if $\eta$ is a type 2 point;
(2) $r \notin \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$if and only if $\eta$ is a type 3 point, in which case $\eta$ is the only element of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ for which $|P|=r$.

Proof. This was shown to be true in Subsection 1.2.2 if $k$ is trivially valued, so let us assume that that is not the case.

We recall that the projective line $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ can be obtained by adding a rigid point $\infty$ to $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Let $A$ be a connected component of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }} \backslash\{\eta\}$ that doesn't contain $\infty$. In particular, $A \subseteq \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Seeing as it is open, by Proposition 1.5.11, there exists a rigid point $\eta_{0}$ in $A$. By Lemma 1.2.4, there exists a unique irreducible polynomial $P \in k[T]$, such that $\eta_{0}=\eta_{P, 0}$. Then, $\eta \in\left[\eta_{P, 0}, \infty\right]$.

Let $\phi$ be the finite morphism $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ determined by the map $k[T] \rightarrow k[T]$, $T \mapsto P(T)$. Seeing as $\phi\left(\eta_{P, 0}\right)=\eta_{T, 0}$ and $\phi(\infty)=\infty,\left[\eta_{P, 0}, \infty\right]$ is mapped by $\phi$ to $\left[\eta_{T, 0}, \infty\right]$. Set $\eta^{\prime}=\phi(\eta)$. The arc connecting $\eta_{T, 0}$ to $\infty$ in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is $\left\{\eta_{T, s}: s \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}\right\} \cup\{\infty\}$. For any $s \geqslant 0,|T|_{\eta_{T, s}}=s$, and if $\eta_{T, s}$ is a type 3 point, then it is the only one in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ for which $|T|=s$. Furthermore, $\eta_{T, s}$ is a type 2 (resp. type 3) point if and only if $s \in \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$(resp. $\left.s \notin \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}\right)$.

Thus, there exists $r>0$, such that $\eta^{\prime}=\eta_{T, r}$. Since $\phi(\eta)=\eta_{T, r}$, by construction, $\eta=\eta_{P, r}$ and $|P|_{\eta_{P, r}}=r$. Seeing as a finite morphism preserves the type of the point (i.e. $\eta_{T, r}$ is a type 2 (resp. 3) point if and only if $\eta_{P, r}$ is so), we obtain (1) and the first part of (2).

To prove the second part of (2), we need to show that if $r \notin \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}, \eta_{P, r}$ is the only point in $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ for which $|P|=r$. Since $P$ is irreducible, by [20, 3.4.24.3], $|P|$ is strictly increasing in $\left[\eta_{P, 0}, \infty\right)$, and locally constant elsewhere. Hence, $\eta_{P, r}$ is the only point in $\left[\eta_{P, 0}, \infty\right)$ for which $|P|=r$, and since it is a type 3 point (i.e. $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text {,an }}$ has exactly two connected components), it is the only such point in $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$.

Remark 1.8.26. As we saw in the proof of Proposition 1.8.24, the unique arc connecting $\eta_{P, 0}$ to $\infty$ in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is $\left\{\eta_{P, s}: s \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}\right\} \cup\{\infty\}$.

## CHAPTER 2

## Patching

The purpose of this chapter is to develop the necessary tools for proving a "matrix decomposition" statement generalizing [34, Theorem 2.5] and applicable to a Berkovich framework. To do this, we follow along the lines of proof and reasoning of [34, Section 2.1] making the necessary adjustements.

We work over a general formal setup (Setting 2.1.5), which is partly why the content of this chapter is of very technical nature. It will be shown in the next parts of this manuscript that the hypotheses we adopt here are satisfied in a very natural way in Berkovich's geometry. After showing the main result (Theorem 2.1.10), we focus on a somewhat more restrictive formal setup (which is realised by curves) over which we prove that patching is possible.

### 2.1. The general case

Setting 2.1.1. Let $k$ be a complete non-trivially valued ultrametric field. Let $R$ be an integral domain containing $k$, endowed with a non-Archimedean (submultiplicative) norm $|\cdot|_{R}$. Suppose that for any $a \in R$ and $b \in k,|a b|_{R}=|a|_{R} \cdot|b|$.

Remark that the last assumption implies the norm $|\cdot|_{R}$ extends $|\cdot|$.
For $p \in \mathbb{N}$, and indeterminates $X_{1}, \ldots, X_{p}$, let us use the notation $\underline{X}$ for the $p$-tuple $\left(X_{1}, \ldots, X_{p}\right)$. Following [34, Section 2], set $A:=R[\underline{X}]$ and $\widehat{A}:=R[[\underline{X}]]$. For any $M \geq 1$, set

$$
\widehat{A_{M}}:=\left\{\sum_{l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}} c_{l} \underline{X}^{l} \in \widehat{A}: \forall l \in \mathbb{N}^{p},\left|c_{l}\right|_{R} \leqslant M^{|l|}\right\},
$$

where for $l=\left(l_{1}, l_{2}, \ldots, l_{n}\right) \in \mathbb{N}^{p}, \underline{X}^{l}:=\prod_{i=1}^{p} X_{i}^{l_{i}}$ and $|l|:=l_{1}+l_{2}+\cdots+l_{p}$.
This is a subring of $\widehat{A}$, and for any $M^{\prime}, M^{\prime \prime} \geq 1$, if $M^{\prime} \leqslant M^{\prime \prime}$ then $\widehat{A_{M^{\prime}}} \subseteq \widehat{A_{M^{\prime \prime}}}$. Furthermore, $\widehat{A_{M}}$ is complete with respect to the $(\underline{X})$-adic topology: if $\left(f_{n}\right)_{n}$ is a Cauchy sequence in $\widehat{A_{M}}$, then for any $l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}$ and large enough $n, f_{n+1}-f_{n} \in(\underline{X})^{|l|}$, implying that $f_{n}$ and $f_{n+1}$ have the same "first few" coefficients (the larger $|l|$, the more "first few" coefficients that are the same).

Remark also that for any element $f=\frac{g}{h}$ of the local $\operatorname{ring} R[\underline{X}]_{(\underline{X})}$, where $g, h \in R[\underline{X}], h(0) \neq 0$, if $h(0) \in R^{\times}$, then $f$ can be expanded into a formal power series over $R$, meaning in this case $f \in \widehat{A}$.

The following two lemmas are generalizations of Lemmas 2.1 and 2.3 of [34] (and their proofs follow the line of reasoning of the latter). For any $n \in \mathbb{N}$, we keep the notation $|\cdot|_{R}$ for the max norm on $R^{n}$ induced by the norm of $R$. For $a:=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{n}\right) \in R^{n}$ and $l:=\left(l_{1}, l_{2}, \ldots, l_{n}\right) \in \mathbb{N}^{n}$, we denote $a^{l}:=a_{1}^{l_{1}} \cdots a_{n}^{l_{n}}$. Clearly, $a^{l} \in R$.

Lemma 2.1.2. (1) Let $u=\sum_{l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}} c_{l} \underline{X^{l}} \in \widehat{A_{M}}$. If $a \in R^{p}$ is such that $|a|_{R}<M^{-1}$, then the series $\sum_{l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}} c_{l} a^{l}$ is convergent in $R$. Let us denote its sum by $u(a)$.
(2) For $M \geqslant 1$, let $v, w \in \widehat{A_{M}}$ be such that $w$ and vw are polynomials. If $a \in R^{p}$ is such that $|a|_{R}<M^{-1}$, then $v w(a)=v(a) w(a)$.
(3) Let $f=\frac{g}{h} \in R[\underline{X}]_{(X)}, g, h \in R[\underline{X}], h(0) \neq 0$, be such that $g(0)=0$ and $h(0) \in R^{\times}$. There exists $M \geq 1$ such that $f \in \widehat{A_{M}}$ and $h \in{\widehat{A_{M}}}^{\times}$.

Let $f=\sum_{l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}} c_{l} \underline{X}^{l}$ be the series representation of $f$. Then, for any $a \in R^{p}$ with $|a|_{R}<M^{-1}$, the series $\sum_{l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}} c_{l} a^{l}$ is convergent in $R$ and $f(a)=\frac{g(a)}{h(a)}$.
Proof. (1) Set $m=|a|_{R}<M^{-1}$. Then, $\left|c_{l} a^{l}\right|_{R} \leqslant(M m)^{|l|}$. Since $M m<1, c_{l} a^{l}$ tends to zero as $|l|$ tends to $+\infty$, implying $\sum_{l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}} c_{l} a^{l}$ converges in $R$.
(2) Let $d>\operatorname{deg} v w$, and $C:=\max _{l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}}\left(\left|v w_{l}\right|_{R},\left|w_{l}\right|_{R}\right)$, where $v w_{l}, w_{l}, l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}$, are the coefficients of the polynomials $v w, w$, respectively. Let $v=\sum_{l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}} b_{l} \underline{X}^{l}$ be the series representation of $v$. For any $s \in \mathbb{N}$, set $v_{s}=\sum_{|l|<s} b_{l} \underline{X^{l}}$. By the first part, the sequence $\left(v_{s}(a)\right)_{s \in \mathbb{N}}$ converges in $R$, and we denote limit by $v(a)$. For $s \geq d$, $r_{s}:=v_{s} w-v w=\left(v_{s}-v\right) w$ is a polynomial whose monomials are of degree at least $s$. The coefficient $C_{j}$ corresponding to any degree $j \geqslant s$ monomial of $r_{s}$ is a finite sum of products of coefficients of $v_{s}-v$ and $w$. Since $R$ is non-Archimedean, $M \geqslant 1$, and $v_{s}-v \in \widehat{A_{M}}$, we obtain $\left|C_{j}\right|_{R} \leqslant M^{j} C$ (recall the definition of $C$ above).

Set $m=|a|_{R}$. By the paragraph above, every degree $j$ monomial of $r_{s}$ evaluated at $a$ has absolute value at most $(m M)^{j} C$. Since $j \geqslant s$ and $M m<1$, using the fact that $R$ is non-Archimedean, we obtain $\left|r_{s}(a)\right|_{R} \leqslant(M m)^{s} C$, implying $r_{s}(a) \rightarrow 0, s \rightarrow \infty$. Consequently, $v_{s}(a) w(a) \rightarrow v w(a)$ when $s \rightarrow \infty$, i.e. $v(a) w(a)=v w(a)$.
(3) Set $b=h(0)$. Then, $b-h \in(\underline{X})$, and thus $1-b^{-1} h \in(\underline{X})$. Set $e=1-b^{-1} h$, so that $b^{-1} h=1-e$ with $e \in(\underline{X})$. This implies $\left(b^{-1} h\right)^{-1}=b h^{-1}=\frac{1}{1-e}=\sum_{i \in \mathbb{N}} e^{i} \in \widehat{A}$, and so $h^{-1}=\sum_{i \in \mathbb{N}} b^{-1} e^{i} \in \widehat{A}$. Consequently, $f=g h^{-1}=\sum_{i \in \mathbb{N}} b^{-1} g e^{i} \in \widehat{A}$.

Set $M=\max _{l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}}\left(1,\left|b^{-1}\right|_{R}, \sqrt[|l|]{\left|g_{l}\right|_{R}}, \sqrt[|l|]{\left|e_{l}\right|_{R}}, \sqrt[|l|]{\left|h_{l}\right|_{R}}\right)$, where $g_{l}$ (resp. $\left.e_{l}, h_{l}\right)$, $l \in \mathbb{N}^{p}$, are the coefficients of the polynomial $g$ (resp. $e, h$ ). Then, $b^{-1}, g, e \in \widehat{A_{M}}$, and since $\widehat{A_{M}}$ is a ring, $b^{-1} e^{i}, b^{-1} g e^{i} \in \widehat{A_{M}}$ for any $i \in \mathbb{N}$. Finally, since $\widehat{A_{M}}$ is complete with respect to the $(\underline{X})$-adic norm, $h^{-1}, f \in \widehat{A_{M}}$, and so $h \in{\widehat{A_{M}}}^{x}$.

The rest is a direct consequence of the first two parts of the statement.

Let $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $S_{i}, T_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, be indeterminates. As before, we use the notation $\underline{S}($ resp. $\underline{T})$ for the $n$-tuple $\left(S_{1}, \ldots, S_{n}\right)$ (resp. $\left.\left(T_{1}, \ldots, T_{n}\right)\right)$. For $l, m \in \mathbb{N}^{n}$, we denote by $|(l, m)|$ the sum $|l|+|m|$, where $|l|$ (resp. $|m|)$ is the sum of coordinates of $l$ (resp. $m$ ). Also, $\underline{S}^{l}:=\prod_{i=1}^{n} S_{i}^{l_{i}}$ and $\underline{T}^{m}:=\prod_{i=1}^{n} T_{i}^{m_{i}}$. For any vector $a \in R^{n}$, we denote by $a_{i}$ the $i$-th coordinate of $a, i=1,2, \ldots, p$, meaning $a=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{n}\right), a_{i} \in R$. As before, $a^{l}:=a_{1}^{l_{1}} \cdots a_{n}^{l_{n}}$.

Lemma 2.1.3. Let $f=\frac{h_{1}}{h_{2}} \in R[\underline{S}, \underline{T}]_{(\underline{S}, \underline{T})}, h_{1}, h_{2} \in R[\underline{S}, \underline{T}], h_{2}(0) \neq 0$, be such that $h_{2}(0) \in R^{\times}$. Suppose there exists $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$ such that $f(a, 0)=f(0, a)=a_{i}$ for any $a \in R^{n}$ for which $f(a, 0)$ and $f(0, a)$ converge in $R$.

Then, there exists $M \geq 1$ such that $f \in \widehat{A_{M}}$ and its series representation is:

$$
f=S_{i}+T_{i}+\sum_{|(l, m)| \geq 2} c_{l, m} \underline{S}^{l} \underline{T}^{m} .
$$

Proof. Set $g=f-S_{i}-T_{i}$. Then, $g(a, b)=0$ if it is well defined and $a=0$ or $b=0$. By Lemma 2.1.2, there exists $M \geq 1$ such that $f \in \widehat{A_{M}}$, implying $g \in \widehat{A_{M}}$. Let $g=$ $\sum_{(l, m) \in \mathbb{N}^{2 n}} c_{l, m} \underline{S}^{l} \underline{T}^{m},\left|c_{l, m}\right|_{R} \leqslant M^{|(\bar{l}, m)|}$ for all $(l, m) \in \mathbb{N}^{2 n}$, be the series representation of $g$. Since $g(0,0)=0, c_{0,0}=0$. It remains to show that $c_{l, m}=0$ for all $(l, m) \in \mathbb{N}^{2 n}$ for which $|(l, m)|=1$.

We proceed by contradiction. Let us assume, without loss of generality, that for $l_{0}:=$ $(1,0, \ldots, 0)$ and $m_{0}:=(0, \ldots, 0), c_{l_{0}, m_{0}} \neq 0$. Let $0<q<1$ be such that $q \leqslant\left|c_{l_{0}, m_{0}}\right|_{R} \leqslant M$. Let $\alpha \in k^{\times}$be such that $|\alpha|<\frac{q}{M^{2}}$ (it exists seeing as $k$ is non-trivially valued). Set $a:=(\alpha, 0, \cdots, 0) \in R^{n}, b=(0, \ldots, 0) \in R^{n}$, and $v:=(a, b)$. Then, $g(v)=0$.

Let $L$ be the part of $g$ that has degree 1. Then, $L(v)=c_{l_{0}, m_{0}} \alpha \neq 0$. At the same time, $|L(v)|_{R}=\left|c_{l_{0}, m_{0}}\right|{ }_{R}|\alpha| \geqslant q|\alpha|$.

Let $h=c_{l, m} \underline{S}^{l} \underline{T}^{m}$ be any non-zero monomial of $g$ of degree $j:=|(l, m)| \geqslant 2$. Let us show that $|h(v)|_{R}<|L(v)|_{R}$. If $h(v)=0$, this is clear. If $h(v) \neq 0$ then $h=c_{l, m} S_{1}^{j}$ and $|h(v)|_{R}=\left|c_{l, m}\right|_{R}|\alpha|^{j}$. Consequently:

$$
\frac{|L(v)|_{R}}{|h(v)|_{R}} \geqslant \frac{q|\alpha|}{\left|c_{l, m}\right|_{R}|\alpha|^{j}} \geqslant \frac{q}{M^{j}|\alpha|^{j-1}}>\frac{q}{M^{j}} \cdot\left(\frac{M^{2}}{q}\right)^{j-1}=\frac{M^{j-2}}{q^{j-2}} \geq 1 .
$$

Consequently, $|h(v)|_{R}<|L(v)|_{R}$ implying $|g(v)|_{R}=|L(v)|_{R}$, which is impossible seeing as $|g(v)|_{R}=0$ and $|L(v)|_{R} \neq 0$.

Remark 2.1.4. Lemma 2.1.3 is the only reason behind the hypothesis that $k$ is nontrivially valued.

We now introduce a general formal setting on which patching results will be proven. As already mentioned, these are hypotheses that are satisfied naturally in the framework of Berkovich's geometry that we will work in.

Setting 2.1.5. Let $(k,|\cdot|)$ be a complete non-trivially valued ultrametric field. Let $R_{i}, i=0,1,2$, be an integral domain containing $k$, endowed with a non-Archimedean (submultiplicative) norm $|\cdot|_{R_{i}}$ with respect to which it is complete. Assume that $|\cdot|_{R_{i}}$ is $k$ linear, meaning for any $a \in k$ and any $b \in R_{i},|a b|_{R_{i}}=|a| \cdot|b|_{R_{i}}$. In particular, $|\cdot|_{R_{i}}$ extends $|\cdot|$. Suppose there exist bounded morphisms $R_{j} \hookrightarrow R_{0}, j=1,2$. Set $F_{i}=\operatorname{Frac} R_{i}, i=0,1,2$. Let $F$ be an infinite field embedded in both $F_{1}$ and $F_{2}$.

Let $A_{j}$ be a finite $R_{j}$-module such that $A_{j} \subseteq F_{j}, j=1,2$. Suppose that there exist embeddings $A_{j} \hookrightarrow R_{0}$. Let us endow $A_{j}$ with the quotient semi-norm induced from a surjective morphism $\varphi_{i}: R_{j}^{n_{i}} \rightarrow A_{j}, j=1,2$; we assume that these semi-norms are norms. Assume that $A_{j}$ is complete and the morphism $A_{j} \hookrightarrow R_{0}$ is bounded for $j=1,2$. Suppose the induced map $\psi: A_{1} \oplus A_{2} \rightarrow R_{0}$ is surjective. Finally, suppose the norm of $R_{0}$ is equivalent to the quotient norm induced by the surjective morphism $\psi: A_{1} \oplus A_{2} \rightarrow A_{0}$, where $A_{1} \oplus A_{2}$ is endowed with the usual max norm $|\cdot|_{\max }$, i.e. that the morphism $\psi$ is admissible (see Definition 1.1.13).

Before giving an analogue to [34, Theorem 2.5] (which is fundamental to patching) in this setting, let us give some motivation behind its interest to us.

Definition 2.1.6. Let $K$ be a field. A rational variety over $K$ is a $K$-variety that has a Zariski open isomorphic to an open of some $\mathbb{A}_{K}^{n}$.

Remark 2.1.7. The definition above does not coincide with the standard notion of rational variety. We adopt it here because we will only use it for linear algebraic groups, in which case a connected rational linear algebraic group is rational in the traditional sense (i.e. birationally equivalent to some $\mathbb{P}^{n}$ ). We make this distinction because there are certain statements we will show that don't require connectedness and others that do.

Using the same notation as in Setting 2.1.5, let $G / F$ be a rational linear algebraic group (rational here means that $G$ is a rational variety over $F$ ). Our main goal will be to show that under certain conditions (which we will interpret geometrically in the next chapters), for any $g \in G\left(F_{0}\right)$, there exist $g_{j} \in G\left(F_{j}\right), j=1,2$, such that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0}\right)$.

Remark 2.1.8. Let $K / F$ be any field extension. Since $G$ has a non-empty Zariski open subset $S^{\prime}$ isomorphic to an open subset $S$ of an affine space $\mathbb{A}_{K}^{n}$, by translation we may assume that the identity element of $G$ is contained in $S^{\prime}$, that $0 \in S$, and that the identity is sent to 0 . Let us denote the isomorphism $S^{\prime} \rightarrow S$ by $\varphi$.

Let $m$ be the multiplication in $G$, and set $\widetilde{S^{\prime}}=m^{-1}\left(S^{\prime}\right) \cap\left(S^{\prime} \times S^{\prime}\right)$, which is an open of $G \times G$. It is isomorphic to an open $\widetilde{S}$ of $\mathbb{A}_{K}^{2 n}$, and $m_{\mid \widetilde{S}^{\prime}}$ gives rise to a map $\widetilde{S} \rightarrow S$, i.e. to a rational function $f: \mathbb{A}_{K}^{2 n} \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{K}^{n}$ (see the diagram below). Note that for any $(x, 0),(0, x) \in \widetilde{S}$, this function sends them both to $x$.


The result we are interested in can be interpreted in terms of the map $f$. Theorem 2.1.10 below shows that (under certain conditions) said result is true on some neighborhood of the origin of an affine space.

Let us start with an auxiliary lemma. Referring to Setting 2.1.5, let $|\cdot|_{\text {inf }}$ be the norm on $R_{0}$ obtained from the admissible morphism $\psi: A_{1} \oplus A_{2} \rightarrow R_{0}$. Since it is equivalent to $|\cdot| R_{R_{0}}$, there exist positive real numbers $C_{1}, C_{2}$ such that $C_{1}|\cdot|_{R_{0}} \leqslant|\cdot|_{\text {inf }} \leqslant C_{2}|\cdot|{ }_{R_{0}}$.

Since the morphisms $A_{j} \hookrightarrow R_{0}, j=1,2$, are bounded, there exists $C>0$ such that for any $x_{j} \in A_{j}$, one has $\left|x_{j}\right|_{R_{0}} \leqslant C\left|x_{j}\right|_{A_{j}}$. By changing to an equivalent norm on $A_{j}$ if necessary, we may assume that $C=1$.

Lemma 2.1.9. There exists $d \in(0,1)$ such that for all $c \in R_{0}$, there exist $a \in A_{1}$, $b \in A_{2}$, for which $\psi(a+b)=c$ and $d \cdot \max \left(|a|_{A_{1}},|b|_{A_{2}}\right) \leqslant|c|_{R_{0}}$.

Proof. Suppose $c \neq 0$. Let $D$ be a real number, such that $D>\max \left(1,1 / C_{2}\right)$. Then, for any $c \in R_{0}$, there exist $a \in A_{1}, b \in A_{2}$, with $\psi(a+b)=c$ and $\max \left(|a|_{A_{1}},|b|_{A_{2}}\right) \leqslant$ $D \cdot|c|_{\text {inf }}$. Otherwise, for any $x \in A_{1}$ and any $y \in A_{2}$ for which $\psi(x+y)=c$, we would have

$$
|x+y|_{\max }:=\max \left(|x|_{A_{1}},|y|_{A_{2}}\right)>D \cdot|c|_{\text {inf }}
$$

But, $|c|_{\text {inf }}=\inf _{x, y}|x+y|_{\max } \geq D \cdot|c|_{\text {inf }}$, where $D>1$ and $|c|_{\text {inf }} \neq 0$, so this is impossible.
Set $d^{\prime}=1 / D<C_{2}$. Then, $d^{\prime} \cdot \max \left(|a|_{A_{1}},|b|_{A_{2}}\right) \leqslant|c|_{\text {inf }} \leqslant C_{2} \cdot|c|_{R_{0}}$. We obtain the wanted result by setting $d=\frac{d^{\prime}}{C_{2}} \in(0,1)$.

If $c=0$, the statement is true regardless of the choice of $d$.
From now on, instead of writing $\psi(x+y)=c$ for $x \in A_{1}, y \in A_{2}, c \in R_{0}$, we will simply put $x+y=c$ when there is no risk of ambiguity.

In what follows, for any positive integer $n$, let us endow $R_{0}^{n}$ with the max norm induced from the norm on $R_{0}$, and let us also denote it by $|\cdot|_{R_{0}}$. For a normed ring $A$ and $\delta>0$, we denote by $D_{A}(0, \delta)$ the open disc in $A$ centered at 0 and of radius $\delta$.

Theorem 2.1.10. For $n \in \mathbb{N}$, let $f: \mathbb{A}_{F_{0}}^{n} \times \mathbb{A}_{F_{0}}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{F_{0}}^{n}$ be a rational map defined on a Zariski open $\widetilde{S}$, such that $(0,0) \in \widetilde{S}$, and $f(x, 0)=f(0, x)=x$ whenever $(x, 0),(0, x) \in \widetilde{S}$. Write $f=\left(f_{1}, f_{2}, \ldots, f_{n}\right)$, where $f_{i}=\frac{g_{i}}{h_{i}}$ for some $g_{i}, h_{i} \in R_{0}[\underline{S}, \underline{T}], i=1,2, \ldots, n$. Suppose $h_{i}(0) \in R_{0}^{\times}$for all $i$.

Let $M \geqslant 1$ be such that $f_{i} \in \widehat{A_{M}}$ and $h_{i} \in{\widehat{A_{M}}}^{\times}$for all $i$ (applying Lemma 2.1.2 with $\left.R=R_{0}\right)$. Suppose there exists $\delta>0$ such $D_{R_{0}^{2 n}}(0, \delta) \subseteq \widetilde{S}\left(F_{0}\right)$. Let $d$ be as in Lemma 2.1.9. Let $\varepsilon>0$ be such that $\varepsilon<\min \left(\frac{d}{2 M}, \frac{d^{3}}{M^{4}}, \frac{d \delta}{2}\right)$. Then, for any $a \in \mathbb{A}^{n}\left(F_{0}\right)$ with $a \in R_{0}^{n}$ and $|a|_{R_{0}} \leqslant \varepsilon$, there exist $u \in A_{1}^{n}$ and $v \in A_{2}^{n}$ for which $(u, v) \in \widetilde{S}\left(F_{0}\right)$ and $f(u, v)=a$.

Proof. Since $f_{i}(0,0)=0$ for all $i$, the functions $g_{i}$ belong to the maximal ideal $(\underline{S}, \underline{T})$ of $R_{0}[\underline{S}, \underline{T}]$. From Lemmas 2.1.2 and 2.1.3:
(1) we can see these rational functions as elements of $R_{0}[[\underline{S}, \underline{T}]]$;
(2) the constant $M$ is such that

$$
f_{i}=S_{i}+T_{i}+\sum_{|(l, m)| \geq 2} c_{l, m}^{i} \underline{T}^{l} \underline{S}^{m} \in R_{0}[[\underline{S}, \underline{T}]],
$$

with $\left|c_{l, m}^{i}\right| R_{0} \leqslant M^{|(l, m)|}$, for $i=1,2, \ldots, n$ and $(l, m) \in \mathbb{N}^{2 n}$, where $|(l, m)|$ is the sum of the coordinates of $(l, m)$.
By the choice of $\delta$, for any $(x, y) \in R_{0}^{2 n}$ satisfying $\left|\left(x_{0}, y_{0}\right)\right|_{R_{0}}<\delta,(x, y) \in \widetilde{S}\left(F_{0}\right)$, so the function $f(x, y)$ is well-defined (meaning the functions $f_{i}$ are well-defined for all $i$ ).

Set $\varepsilon^{\prime}=\frac{\varepsilon}{d}$. Then, $0<\varepsilon^{\prime}<\min \left\{1 / 2 M, d^{2} / M^{4}, \delta / 2\right\}$. Since $\varepsilon<\varepsilon^{\prime}<\min (1 / M, \delta / 2)$, for any $(x, y) \in \widetilde{S}\left(F_{0}\right)$ satisfying $(x, y) \in R_{0}^{2 n}$ and $|(x, y)|_{R_{0}} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\prime}, f(x, y)$ is well defined, and by Lemma 2.1.2, the series $f_{i}$ is convergent in $R_{0}$ at $(x, y), i=1,2, \ldots, n$.

Let $a=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{n}\right) \in \mathbb{A}^{n}\left(F_{0}\right)$ be such that $a \in R_{0}^{n}$ and $|a|_{R_{0}} \leqslant \varepsilon$. Let $u_{0}=0 \in A_{1}^{n}$, and $v_{0}=0 \in A_{2}^{n}$. Using induction, one constructs sequences $\left(u_{s}\right)_{s}$ in $A_{1}^{n}$, and $\left(v_{s}\right)_{s}$ in $A_{2}^{n}$, such that the following conditions are satisfied:
(1) $\left|u_{s}\right|_{A_{1}},\left|v_{s}\right|_{A_{2}} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\prime}$ for all $s \geq 0$;
(2) $\left|u_{s}-u_{s-1}\right|_{A_{1}},\left|v_{s}-v_{s-1}\right|_{A_{2}} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\frac{s+1}{2}}$ for all $s \geq 1$;
(3) $\left|f\left(u_{s}, v_{s}\right)-a\right|_{R_{0}} \leqslant d \varepsilon^{\prime \frac{s+2}{2}}$ for all $s \geq 0$.

The first terms $u_{0}$ and $v_{0}$ satisfy conditions 1 and 3 . We notice that the first condition implies $\left|\left(u_{s}, v_{s}\right)\right|_{R_{0}} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\prime}$, so $f\left(u_{s}, v_{s}\right)$ is well-defined, and $f_{i}$ is convergent in $R_{0}$ at $\left(u_{s}, v_{s}\right)$ for $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$. Suppose that for $j \geq 0$, we have constructed $u_{j}$ and $v_{j}$ satisfying all three conditions above. Then, $d_{j}:=a-f\left(u_{j}, v_{j}\right) \in R_{0}^{n}$ is well defined, and $\left|d_{j}\right|_{R_{0}} \leqslant d \varepsilon^{\prime \frac{j+2}{2}}$.

From Lemma 2.1.9, there exist $u_{j}^{\prime} \in A_{1}^{n}$ and $v_{j}^{\prime} \in A_{2}^{n}$, such that $d_{j}=u_{j}^{\prime}+v_{j}^{\prime}$, and $d \cdot \max \left(\left|u_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{A_{1}},\left|v_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{A_{2}}\right) \leqslant\left|d_{j}\right|_{R_{0}} \leqslant d \varepsilon^{\frac{j+2}{2}}$.

Set $u_{j+1}=u_{j}+u_{j}^{\prime}$ and $v_{j+1}=v_{j}+v_{j}^{\prime}$. Then, $\left|u_{j+1}\right|_{A_{1}} \leqslant \max \left(\varepsilon^{\prime}, \varepsilon^{\prime \frac{j+2}{2}}\right)=\varepsilon^{\prime}$, and the same is true for $v_{j+1}$. Also, $\left|u_{j+1}-u_{j}\right|_{A_{1}}=\left|u_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{A_{1}} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\frac{j+2}{2}}$, and similarly, $\left|v_{j+1}-v_{j}\right|_{A_{2}} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\prime \frac{j+2}{2}}$.

For $r \in \mathbb{N}, i \in\{1,2, \ldots, r\}$, and $\lambda \in F_{0}^{r}$, let $\lambda_{i}$ be the $i$-th coordinate of $\lambda$. For $p=\left(p_{1}, p_{2}, \ldots, p_{r}\right) \in \mathbb{N}^{r}$, set $\lambda^{p}:=\prod_{i=1}^{r} \lambda_{i}^{p_{i}}$. For any $\nu, \nu^{\prime} \in \mathbb{N}^{r}, \nu \leqslant \nu^{\prime}$ will mean $\nu_{i} \leqslant \nu_{i}^{\prime}$ for all $i=1,2, \ldots, r$. Then, for the third condition,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|f_{i}\left(u_{j+1}, v_{j+1}\right)-a_{i}\right|_{R_{0}} & =\left|u_{j+1, i}+v_{j+1, i}-a_{i}+\sum_{|(l, m)| \geq 2} c_{l, m}^{i} u_{j+1}^{l} v_{j+1}^{m}\right|_{R_{0}} \\
& =\left|u_{j, i}+v_{j, i}+u_{j, i}^{\prime}+v_{j, i}^{\prime}-a_{i}+\sum_{|(l, m)| \geq 2} c_{l, m}^{i} u_{j+1}^{l} v_{j+1}^{m}\right|_{R_{0}} \\
& =\left|f_{i}\left(u_{j}, v_{j}\right)-a_{i}+u_{j, i}^{\prime}+v_{j, i}^{\prime}+\sum_{|(l, m)| \geq 2} c_{l, m}^{i}\left(u_{j+1}^{l} v_{j+1}^{m}-u_{j}^{l} v_{j}^{m}\right)\right|_{R_{0}} \\
& =\left|-d_{j, i}+u_{j, i}^{\prime}+v_{j, i}^{\prime}+\sum_{|(l, m)| \geq 2} c_{l, m}^{i}\left(u_{j+1}^{l} v_{j+1}^{m}-u_{j}^{l} v_{j}^{m}\right)\right|_{R_{0}} \\
& =\left|\sum_{|(l, m)| \geq 2} c_{l, m}^{i}\left(u_{j+1}^{l} v_{j+1}^{m}-u_{j}^{l} v_{j}^{m}\right)\right|_{R_{0}} \\
& \leqslant \max _{|(l, m)| \geq 2}\left|c_{l, m}^{i}\right|_{R_{0}} \cdot\left|u_{j+1}^{l} v_{j+1}^{m}-u_{j}^{l} v_{j}^{m}\right|_{R_{0}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Moreover,

$$
\begin{aligned}
u_{j+1}^{l} v_{j+1}^{m}-u_{j}^{l} v_{j}^{m} & =\left(u_{j}+u_{j}^{\prime}\right)^{l}\left(v_{j}+v_{j}^{\prime}\right)^{m}-u_{j}^{l} v_{j}^{m} \\
& =\sum_{\substack{0 \leqslant \beta \leqslant l \\
0 \leqslant \gamma \leqslant m}} A_{\beta} B_{\gamma} u_{j}^{\beta} u_{j}^{\prime l-\beta} v_{j}^{\gamma} v_{j}^{\prime m-\gamma}-u_{j}^{l} v_{j}^{m} \\
& =\sum_{0 \leqslant \alpha \leqslant(l, m)} \sum_{\substack{\beta+\gamma=\alpha \\
0 \leqslant \beta \leqslant l \\
0 \leqslant \gamma \leqslant m}} A_{\beta} B_{\gamma} u_{j}^{\beta} u_{j}^{\prime l-\beta} v_{j}^{\gamma} v_{j}^{\prime m-\gamma}-u_{j}^{l} v_{j}^{m} \\
& =\sum_{0 \leqslant \alpha<(l, m)} \sum_{\substack{\beta+\gamma=\alpha \\
0 \leqslant \beta \leqslant l \\
0 \leqslant \gamma \leqslant m}} A_{\beta} B_{\gamma} u_{j}^{\beta} u_{j}^{l l-\beta} v_{j}^{\gamma} v_{j}^{\prime m-\gamma}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $A_{\beta}, B_{\gamma}$ are integers (implying they are of norm at most one on $R_{0}$ ). Finally, since the norm $|\cdot|_{R_{0}}$ is non-Archimedean:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|u_{j+1}^{l} v_{j+1}^{m}-u_{j}^{l} v_{j}^{m}\right|_{R_{0}} & \leqslant \max _{\substack{0 \leqslant \beta+\gamma<l, m) \\
0 \leqslant \beta \leqslant l, 0 \leqslant \gamma \leqslant m}}\left|u_{j}^{\beta}\right|_{R_{0}}\left|v_{j}^{\gamma}\right|_{R_{0}}\left|u_{j}^{\prime l-\beta}\right| R_{0}\left|v_{j}^{\prime m-\gamma}\right|_{R_{0}} \\
& \leqslant \max _{\substack{0 \leqslant \beta+\gamma<(l, m) \\
0 \leqslant \beta \leqslant l, 0 \leqslant \gamma \leqslant m}} \varepsilon^{\prime|(\beta, \gamma)|}\left(\varepsilon^{\prime \frac{j+2}{2}}\right)^{|(l, m)|-|(\beta, \gamma)|},
\end{aligned}
$$

so $\left|u_{j+1}^{l} v_{j+1}^{m}-u_{j}^{l} v_{j}^{m}\right|_{R_{0}} \leqslant \max _{0 \leqslant \theta<|(l, m)|} \varepsilon^{\prime \theta} \cdot\left(\varepsilon^{\frac{\prime+2}{2}}\right)^{|(l, m)|-\theta}$. This, combined with $\left|c_{l, m}^{i}\right|_{R_{0}} \leqslant M^{|(l, m)|}$, implies that:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|f_{i}\left(u_{j+1}, v_{j+1}\right)-a_{i}\right|_{R_{0}} & \leqslant \max _{\substack{|(l, m)| \geq 2 \\
0 \leqslant \theta<|(l, m)|}} M^{|(l, m)|} \varepsilon^{\prime \theta} \cdot\left(\varepsilon^{\prime \frac{j+2}{2}}\right)^{|(l, m)|-\theta} \\
& =\max _{\substack{|(l, m)| \geq 2 \\
0 \leqslant \theta<|(l, m)|}}\left(M \varepsilon^{\prime}\right)^{\theta} \cdot\left(M \varepsilon^{\frac{j+2}{2}}\right)^{|(l, m)|-\theta} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $\varepsilon^{\prime} \geq \varepsilon^{\prime \frac{j+2}{2}}$, we have: $\left|f_{i}\left(u_{j+1}, v_{j+1}\right)-a_{i}\right|_{R_{0}} \leqslant \max _{|(l, m)| \geq 2}\left(M \varepsilon^{\prime}\right)^{\prime(l, m) \mid-1} \cdot\left(M \varepsilon^{\frac{\prime j+2}{2}}\right)$. Since $M \varepsilon^{\prime}<1$, one obtains: $\max _{|(l, m)| \geq 2}\left(M \varepsilon^{\prime}\right)^{|(l, m)|-1} \cdot\left(M \varepsilon^{\prime \frac{i+2}{2}}\right) \leqslant M \varepsilon^{\prime} \cdot M \varepsilon^{\prime \frac{i+2}{2}}$. We have shown that

$$
\left|f_{i}\left(u_{j+1}, v_{j+1}\right)-a_{i}\right|_{R_{0}} \leqslant M \varepsilon^{\prime} \cdot M \varepsilon^{\prime \frac{j+2}{2}}=M^{2} \varepsilon^{\prime 1+\frac{j+2}{2}}
$$

At the same time, seeing as $\varepsilon^{\prime}<\frac{d^{2}}{M^{4}}$, we obtain $M^{2} \cdot \varepsilon^{\prime 1+\frac{j+2}{2}}=\left(\frac{M^{2}}{d} \varepsilon^{\prime 1 / 2}\right) d \varepsilon^{\prime \frac{j+3}{2}} \leqslant d \varepsilon^{\prime \frac{j+3}{2}}$, which concludes the induction argument.

The second property of the sequences $\left(u_{s}\right)_{s},\left(v_{s}\right)_{s}$ tells us that they are Cauchy (hence convergent) in the Banach modules $A_{1}^{n}, A_{2}^{n}$, respectively. Let $u \in A_{1}^{n}$ and $v \in A_{2}^{n}$ be the corresponding limits. The first property implies that $|(u, v)|_{R_{0}} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\prime}<\delta$, so $(u, v) \in \widetilde{S}\left(F_{0}\right)$, and $f(u, v)$ is well-defined. Lastly, the third property implies that $f(u, v)=a$.

Using the same notation, we have proven:
Proposition 2.1.11. Suppose $h_{i}(0) \in R_{0}^{\times}$and there exists an open disc of $R_{0}^{2 n}$ centered at 0 that is contained in $\widetilde{S}$. Then, there exists $\varepsilon>0$ such that for any $g \in S^{\prime}\left(F_{0}\right)$ with $\varphi(g) \in R_{0}^{n}$ and $|\varphi(g)|_{R_{0}} \leqslant \varepsilon$, there exist $g_{i} \in G\left(F_{i}\right), i=1,2$, satisfying $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0}\right)$.

### 2.2. A special case fundamental for patching over curves

Proposition 2.1 .11 can significantly be strengthened under a few additional hypotheses. This setup is of fundamental importance for patching over analytic curves.

The following is a result shown in [34] that we will need.
Lemma 2.2.1 ([34, Lemma 3.1]). Let $G$ be a rational linear algebraic group defined over an infinite field $F$. Let $F_{0} / F$ be a field extension and $g \in G\left(F_{0}\right)$. There exists a Zariski open subset $U$ of $G$ isomorphic to a Zariski open subset of some $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$ and such that $g \in U\left(F_{0}\right)$.

Under the hypotheses of Setting 2.1.5, let $G / F$ be a rational linear algebraic group. As in Remark 2.1.8, let $S^{\prime}$ be a Zariski open subset of $G$ isomorphic to an open subset $S$ of an affine space $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$. By translation we may assume that the identity element of $G$ is contained in $S^{\prime}$, that $0 \in S$, and that the identity is sent to 0 . Let us denote the isomorphism $S^{\prime} \rightarrow S$ by $\varphi$. Let the diagram below and the corresponding notations be as in Remark 2.1.8. As noted there, the vertical arrows are isomorphisms.


Convention 2.2.2. Let us fix once and for all an embedding of $G$ into $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{m}$ for some $m \in \mathbb{N}$. Let $K / F$ be a field extension, and $M \subseteq K$. Set $G_{K}=G \times_{F} K$. Let $U$ be a Zariski open subset of $G_{K}$. Seeing as $G$ is affine, there is a notion of " $M$-points" of $U$. More precisely, these are the points in $U(K)$ whose coordinates are in $M$. Let us denote this set by $U(M)$.

An outline of proof (which we follow) of a special case of the following result is given in the proof of [34, Theorem 3.2]. Recall that for a normed ring $A$ and $r>0$, we denote by $D_{A}(0, r)$ the open disc in $A$ centered at 0 and of radius $r$.

Theorem 2.2.3. Under the hypotheses of Setting 2.1.5, suppose $F_{0}=R_{0}$. Suppose that $F_{1}$ is dense in $F_{0}$. Then, for any $g \in G\left(F_{0}\right)$, there exist $g_{1} \in G\left(F_{1}\right)$ and $g_{2} \in G\left(F_{2}\right)$ such that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0}\right)$.

Proof. As already noted in Remark 2.1.8, the function $f$ satisfies the properties of Theorem 2.1.10. Seeing as $F_{0}$ is a normed field, if $F_{0}^{2 n}$ is endowed with the max-norm (which we still denote $|\cdot|_{F_{0}}$ ), then the induced topology in $F_{0}^{2 n}$ is finer than the Zariski one. Consequently, there exists $\delta>0$ such that $D_{F_{0}^{2 n}}(0, \delta) \subseteq \widetilde{S}\left(F_{0}\right)$. Hence, all of the hypotheses of Theorem 2.1.10 are satisfied, implying there exists $\varepsilon>0$ such that for any $a \in \mathbb{A}^{n}\left(F_{0}\right)$ satisfying $|a|_{F_{0}} \leqslant \varepsilon$, there exist $u \in A_{1}^{n}$ and $v \in A_{2}^{n}$ such that $f(u, v)=a$.
(1) Suppose $g \in S^{\prime}\left(F_{0}\right)$ and $|\varphi(g)|_{F_{0}} \leqslant \varepsilon$. Then, by the paragraph above, there exist $g_{i} \in G\left(A_{i}\right) \subseteq G\left(F_{i}\right), i=1,2$, such that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0}\right)$. Similarly, there exist $g_{i}^{\prime} \in G\left(F_{i}\right), i=1,2$, such that $g=g_{2}^{\prime} \cdot g_{1}^{\prime}$ in $G\left(F_{0}\right)$.
(2) Suppose $g \in S^{\prime}\left(F_{0}\right)$ with no further restrictions. Remark that $g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime}$ is a nonempty (seeing as $g \in g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime}$ ) Zariski open subset of $G$. Let $\psi: g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime} \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{F_{0}}^{n}$ be the morphism given by $h \mapsto \varphi\left(g^{-1} h\right)$. Remark $0 \in \operatorname{Im}(\psi)$. The preimage $\psi^{-1}\left(D_{F_{0}^{n}}(0, \varepsilon)\right)$ is open in $\left(g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime}\right)\left(F_{0}\right)$. As $F_{1}$ is dense in $F_{0}$, we obtain that $\left(g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime}\right)\left(F_{1}\right)$ is dense in $\left(g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime}\right)\left(F_{0}\right)$ with respect to the topology induced by $|\cdot|_{F_{0}}$. Hence, there exists $h \in\left(g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime}\right)\left(F_{1}\right) \cap \psi^{-1}\left(D_{F_{0}^{n}}(0, \varepsilon)\right)$. More precisely, $h \in\left(g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime}\right)\left(F_{1}\right) \subseteq G\left(F_{1}\right)$, and $\left|\varphi\left(g^{-1} h\right)\right|_{F_{0}} \leqslant \varepsilon$. Then, by part (1), there exist $g_{1}^{\prime} \in G\left(F_{1}\right)$ and $g_{2}^{\prime} \in G\left(F_{2}\right)$ such that $g^{-1} h=g_{2}^{\prime} \cdot g_{1}^{\prime}$ in $G\left(F_{0}\right)$. Set $g_{1}:=h \cdot g_{1}^{\prime-1} \in G\left(F_{1}\right)$, and $g_{2}:=g_{2}^{\prime-1}$ in $G\left(F_{2}\right)$. Then, $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0}\right)$.
(3) Suppose $g \in G\left(F_{0}\right)$ with no further restrictions. By Lemma 2.2.1, there exists a Zariski open subset $U$ of $G$ isomorphic to a Zariski open $U^{\prime}$ of some $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$ such that $g \in U\left(F_{0}\right)$. As $F$ is infinite, there exists $\alpha \in U(F)$. Set $S=\alpha^{-1} U$. It is a Zariski open
subset of $G$ containing the identity, which is isomorphic to an open subset of $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$. By translating (over $F$ ) if necessary, we may assume that this isomorphism sends the identity to 0 in $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$.

By part (2), there exist $g_{1}^{\prime} \in G\left(F_{1}\right)$ and $g_{2} \in G\left(F_{2}\right)$ such that $\alpha^{-1} g=g_{1}^{\prime} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0}\right)$. Set $g_{1}=\alpha \cdot g_{1}^{\prime} \in G\left(F_{1}\right)$. Then, $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0}\right)$.

## CHAPTER 3

## Patching over Berkovich Curves and Quadratic Forms

In this chapter we show that patching can be applied to analytic curves. As a consequence, we obtain a local-global principle for function fields of curves, which is applicable to quadratic forms. Moreover, we also obtain applications to the $u$-invariant of function fields of curves. The results of this chapter generalize those of [34].

In Section 3.1 we study a special class of covers of an analytic curve, called nice covers. The motivation for their study comes from the fact that patching (or, more precisely, a generalized form of patching as seen in Chapter 2) can be applied to these covers. We start by exhibiting a special case to which the results of Chapter 2 are directly applicable, and then use it to obtain said generalization. More precisely, let $C$ be a $k$-analytic curve. Let $U, V$ be connected affinoid domains in $C$ such that $W=U \cap V$ is a single type 3 point. We show that given two reasonable algebraic structures over $\mathscr{M}(U), \mathscr{M}(V)$, and a suitable group action on them, they can be patched to give the same type of algebraic structure over $\mathscr{M}(U \cup V)$. Roughly, nice covers are a generalization of this situation (cf. Definition 3.1.6). In particular, note that type 3 points play a very important role, and so their existence is crucial. We study the properties of these covers, and show that any open cover can be refined by a nice cover.

The second section of this chapter contains its main results. We show a local-global principle (Theorem 3.2.11) for fields of meromorphic functions of normal projective $k$ analytic curves (or, equivalently, the function fields of such algebraic curves). In the simplest cases, the proofs use patching on nice covers and induction on the number of elements of said covers. We first prove these results over a complete ultrametric base field $k$ such that $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. This is then generalized for projective curves over any complete ultrametric field using a descent argument that is based on results of model theory. We also prove similar results for affinoid curves. Finally, we show that there is a connection between the points of a Berkovich analytic curve and the valuations on its function field (i.e. its field of meromorphic functions). We then use this to prove a local-global principle with respect to completions (Corollary 3.2.18, Corollary 3.4.2).

In Section 3.3, using the theory of generic analytic fibers, we interpret the overfields of HHK's [34] in the Berkovich setting. Then, we use a result of Bosch to show that the local-global principle [34, Theorem 3.7] is a consequence of the local-global principle obtained here (Theorem 3.2.11). Using the theory of analytic curves developed by Ducros, we prove that the converse is true as well provided one works over a "fine" enough model.

The purpose of Section 3.4 is to give applications to quadratic forms and the $u$-invariant of a field. We start by applying Theorem 3.2.11 to obtain a local-global principle for quadratic forms (Theorem 3.4.1).

Then, we find conditions under which there is local isotropy of a quadratic form $q$ over analytic curves. The setup will be somewhat more general, which is partly why it is the most technical section of the chapter. The idea is to find a nice enough representative of
the isometry class of $q$ to work with and then use Henselianity conditions. The hypotheses on the base field become stronger here. Namely, we require our complete valued nonArchimedean base field $k$ to be such that the dimension of the $\mathbb{Q}$-vector space $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$be finite (a special case being when $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free module of finite rank over $\mathbb{Z}$ ), and the residue characteristic unequal to 2 . The restriction on the value group is not very strong: when working over a complete ultrametric field $k$ satisfying this property, for every $k$-analytic space $X$ and every point $x \in X$, the completed residue field $\mathcal{H}(x)$ of $x$ satisfies it as well.

Finally, we combine the local-global principle for quadratic forms and these local isotropy conditions to give a condition for global isotropy of a quadratic form over an analytic curve. From there we deduce applications to the (strong) $u$-invariant of a complete ultrametric field $k$ with residue characteristic different from 2 , and such that the dimension of the $\mathbb{Q}$-vector space $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$is finite.

### 3.1. Nice covers

In this section we construct a class of covers of analytic curves over which we can apply patching, and study some of their properties.
3.1.1. An interpretation of patching over analytic curves. We present here the main example of Setting 2.1 .5 which we will be dealing with in this Chapter. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field.

Let us start with a couple of auxuliary results.
Lemma 3.1.1. Let $V$ be a reduced affinoid space containing a single point $x$. Then, $\mathcal{O}(V)=\mathscr{M}(V)=\mathcal{H}(x)$ - the completed residue field of $x$.

Proof. Let $(A,\|\cdot\|)$ be the corresponding affinoid algebra of $V$. Let $f \in A \backslash\{0\}$. If $|f|_{x}=0$, then by Proposition 1.3.15, $f$ is nilpotent in $A$. As $A$ is reduced, $f=0$, contradiction. Thus, $|f|_{x} \neq 0$, so by Lemma 1.1.39 $f$ is invertible in $A$. This means that $A$ is a field, i.e. $\mathcal{O}(V)=\mathscr{M}(V)$. Remark that we have also shown that $|\cdot|_{x}$ is a norm on $A$.

Since $A$ is reduced, by Proposition 1.3 .15 , the spectral norm $\rho_{A}$ of $A$ is equivalent to $\|\cdot\|$. Remark that the Shilov boundary $\Gamma(V)$ of $V$ is $\{x\}$. Hence, by Theorem $1.1 .38, \rho_{A}=|\cdot|_{x}$. Consequently, the field $A$ is complete with respect to $|\cdot|_{x}$, implying $\mathcal{H}(x)=A=\mathcal{O}(V)$.

Lemma 3.1.2. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible $k$-analytic curve. Let $U, V$ be connected affinoid domains of $C$, such that $U \cap V=\{\eta\}$, where $\eta$ is a point of type 3. Then, the images of $\mathscr{M}(U)$ and $\mathscr{M}(V)$ in $\mathscr{M}(\{\eta\})$ are dense.

Proof. The subset $\{\eta\}$ is an affinoid domain in both $U$ and $V$ by Corollary 1.5.36. By the Gerritzen-Grauert theorem (Theorem 1.4.14), it is a rational domain. By [21, Théorème 3.4], $U, V,\{\eta\}$ are normal. Hence, as they are connected, they are irreducible. In particular, $\mathcal{O}(U), \mathcal{O}(V)$ are integral domains.

Set $S_{U}:=\left\{f \in \mathcal{O}(U):|f|_{\eta} \neq 0\right\}$. By Lemma 1.4.16, $S_{U}^{-1} \mathcal{O}(U)$ is dense in $\mathcal{O}(\{\eta\})$.
Suppose $f \in \mathcal{O}(U)$ is such that $|f|_{\eta}=0$. As $\eta$ is a type 3 point, by Lemma 1.8.3, $\mathcal{O}_{\eta}$ is a field, implying $f=0$ there. By Proposition 1.6.24, this implies that $f=0$ in $\mathcal{O}(U)$. Thus, $S_{U}=\mathcal{O}(U) \backslash\{0\}$, meaning Frac $\mathcal{O}(U)$ is dense in $\mathcal{O}(\{\eta\})$. By Lemmas 3.1.1 and 1.7.6, this is the same as saying that the image of $\mathscr{M}(U)$ is dense in $\mathscr{M}(\{\eta\})$.

The same is true for $V$.
The example of Setting 2.1.5 we will be working with is the following:

Proposition 3.1.3. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible $k$-analytic curve. Set $F_{C}=\mathscr{M}(C)$. Let $D$ be an effective divisor of degree $n$ on $C$. Take two connected affinoid domains $U, V$ in $C$, such that $W=U \cap V=\{\eta\}$, where $\eta$ is a type 3 point. Set $R_{U}=\mathcal{O}(U), F_{U}=$ Frac $R_{U}, R_{V}=\mathcal{O}(V), F_{V}=\operatorname{Frac} R_{V}$, and $F_{W}=R_{W}=\mathcal{O}(W)$. Set $A_{U}=\mathcal{O}(D)(U)$, $A_{V}=\mathcal{O}(D)(V)$.

For large enough $n$ such that $H^{1}(C, \mathcal{O}(D))=0$, the conditions of Setting 2.1.5 are satisfied for $R_{0}:=R_{W}, R_{1}:=R_{U}, R_{2}:=R_{V}, A_{1}:=A_{U}, A_{2}:=A_{V}$, and $F:=F_{C}$. Moreover, $F_{0}=R_{0}$ and $F_{U}, F_{V}$ are dense in $F_{0}$.

Proof. As $U, V, W$ are connected affinoid domains of a normal curve, they are integral, so $R_{U}, R_{V}, R_{W}$ are integral $k$-affinoid algebras, meaning they are integral domains that are complete with respect to non-Archimedean norms. Moreover, $k$ is contained in $R_{U}, R_{V}, R_{W}$ and the norms of the latter are $k$-linear. Since $R_{W}=\mathcal{O}(W)=\mathcal{H}(\eta)$ (Lemma 3.1.1), the normed ring $R_{W}$ is a field. By Lemma 1.7.6, $\mathscr{M}(U)=F_{U}, \mathscr{M}(V)=$ $F_{V}$, and $\mathscr{M}(W)=F_{W}=R_{W}$. This shows the existence of embeddings of $F_{C}$ in $F_{U}, F_{V}$, and $F_{W}$. The restriction morphisms $R_{U}, R_{V} \rightarrow R_{W}$ are bounded by construction. Clearly, $F_{C}$ is an infinite field.

Notice that for $Z \in\{U, V, W\}, \mathcal{O}(Z) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}(D)(Z) \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}(Z)$. In particular, this means that $\mathcal{O}(D)(W)=\mathcal{O}(W)=\mathscr{M}(W)$. Since $\mathcal{O}(D)$ is a coherent sheaf, $A_{U}$ (resp. $A_{V}$ ) is a finite $R_{U}$-module (resp. $R_{V}$-module). The completness of $A_{U}$ (resp. $A_{V}$ ) follows from the fact that ideals of affinoid algebras are closed (see [6, Proposition 2.1.3]). The morphism $\mathcal{O}(D)(U)=A_{U} \hookrightarrow R_{W}=\mathcal{O}(D)(W)$ is the restriction morphism of the sheaf $\mathcal{O}(D)$, so it is bounded. The same is true for $A_{V} \hookrightarrow R_{W}$.

If $U \cup V$ is not the entire $C$, it is an affinoid domain thereof (see Theorem 1.8.15). By Tate's Acyclicity Theorem (Theorem 1.4.17),

$$
0 \rightarrow H^{0}(U \cup V, \mathcal{O}(D)) \rightarrow H^{0}(U, \mathcal{O}(D)) \oplus H^{0}(V, \mathcal{O}(D)) \rightarrow H^{0}(U \cap V, \mathcal{O}(D)) \rightarrow 0
$$

is an exact admissible sequence, from which we obtain the surjective admissible morphism $A_{U} \oplus A_{V} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}(D)(W)=F_{W}$.

Suppose $U \cup V=C$. Since $C$ is then compact and integral, by Theorem 1.8.15, it is either an affinoid space (a case we dealt with in the paragraph above) or a projective curve. If $C$ is projective, by [49, Section 7.5, Proposition 5.5] for large enough $n$, $H^{1}(U \cup V, \mathcal{O}(D))=0$. The Mayer-Vietoris exact sequence now produces a bounded surjective morphism $A_{U} \oplus A_{V} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}(D)(W)=F_{W}$. Admissibility follows from Banach's Open Mapping Theorem if $k$ is non-trivially valued (for a proof see [14]), and by a change of basis followed by the Open Mapping Theorem if it is (see Proposition 1.3.8).

The remaining part of the statement was shown in Lemma 3.1.1 and Lemma 3.1.2.
Remark 3.1.4. Other examples of Setting 2.1.5 can be obtained by taking instead of $\mathcal{O}(D)$ any coherent sheaf $\mathcal{F}$ of $\mathcal{O}$-algebras that is a subsheaf of $\mathscr{M}$, for which $H^{1}(C, \mathcal{F})=0$.

We make note of the fact that Proposition 3.1.3 assumes the existence of a point of type 3 , which is equivalent to $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$.

Remark 3.1.5. Remark 2.1.4 tells us that the only reason $k$ was assumed to be nontrivially valued in Chapter 2 is for the proof Lemma 2.1.3 to work. As we saw in Proposition 3.1.3, in the case of curves, the role of the ring $R_{0}$ is played by the field of meromorphic functions of a type 3 point. This means that $R_{0}$ is a non-trivially valued complete ultrametric field. As a consequence, the proof of Lemma 2.1.3 is valid regardless of the absolute value $k$ is endowed with.

Thus, in the case of curves, patching is true even if the base field is trivially valued. As we will see, the trivially valued case provides no new information on the local-global principle, which is why we continue to disregard it.

Keeping the same notation as in Proposition 3.1.3, let $G / F_{C}$ be a rational linear algebraic group. By Theorem 2.2.3, for any $g \in G(\mathscr{M}(\{\eta\}))$, there exist $g_{U} \in G(\mathscr{M}(U))$ and $g_{V} \in G(\mathscr{M}(V))$ such that $g=g_{U} \cdot g_{V}$ in $G(\mathscr{M}(\{\eta\}))$. We will generalize this result to one that applies to certain covers of the analytic curve. The latter generalize the the conditions of Proposition 3.1.3.

The above should serve as motivation for the following:
Definition 3.1.6. A finite cover $\mathcal{U}$ of a $k$-analytic curve will be called nice if:
(1) the elements of $\mathcal{U}$ are connected affinoid domains with only type 3 points in their topological boundaries;
(2) for any different $U, V \in \mathcal{U}, U \cap V=\partial U \cap \partial V$, or equivalently, $U \cap V$ is a finite set of type 3 points;
(3) for any two different elements of $\mathcal{U}$, neither is contained in the other.

Let $\mathcal{V}$ be a cover of a $k$-analytic curve. We will say that a cover $\mathcal{U}$ of the same curve is a nice refinement of $\mathcal{V}$ if it is a refinement of $\mathcal{V}$ that is a nice cover.

We recall that we use the term boundary for the topological boundary.


Figure 3. Examples of nice covers for:
a) a uniquely arcwise-connected curve; b) a non-uniquely arcwise-connected curve.

The definition above (as well as Proposition 3.1.3) highlights the importance of type 3 points. To insure their existence, for the rest of this section we assume that $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$ (recall Proposition 1.8.7).

We start our study of these covers by showing that, under certain conditions, for any open cover of a $k$-analytic curve, there exists a nice refinement.
3.1.2. Nice covers of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Recall that $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is uniquely arcwise-connected. For any $x, y \in \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$, let us denote by $[x, y]$ the unique arc connecting them. The next few properties of the projective line will be essential to the remainder of this section.

We can now show a special case of the result we prove in this section.
Lemma 3.1.7. Let $C, D$ be connected affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1 \text { an }}$ with only type 3 points in their boundaries. There exists a nice refinement $\left\{C_{1}, \ldots, C_{n}, D\right\}$ of the cover $\{C, D\}$ of $C \cup D$, such that $C_{i} \cap C_{j}=\emptyset$ for any $i \neq j$.

Proof. If $C=D$, it is straightforward. Otherwise, suppose $C \nsubseteq D$. By Corollary 1.8.17, $C \backslash$ Int $D$ is an affinoid domain in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ containing only type 3 points in its boundary. Let $C_{1}^{\prime}, C_{2}^{\prime}, \ldots, C_{m}^{\prime}$ be its connected components. They are mutually disjoint connected affinoid domains with only type 3 points in their boundaries. Furthermore, for any $i, C_{i}^{\prime} \cap D \subseteq(\operatorname{Int} D)^{c} \cap D \subseteq \partial D$ is a finite set of type 3 points. As $C_{i}^{\prime}$ and $D$ are connected, by Lemma 1.8.20, so is $C_{i}^{\prime} \cap D$, meaning it is either empty or a single type 3 point. By construction, $C_{i}^{\prime} \cap C_{j}^{\prime}=\emptyset$ for all $i \neq j$, and $\left\{C_{1}^{\prime}, C_{2}^{\prime}, \ldots, C_{m}^{\prime}, D\right\}$ is a refinement of $\{C, D\}$. For any $i$, if $C_{i}^{\prime}$ is a single point, i.e. $C_{i}^{\prime} \subseteq D$, we remove it from $\left\{C_{1}^{\prime}, C_{2}^{\prime}, \ldots, C_{m}^{\prime}\right\}$, and if not, we keep it there. Let $C_{1}, C_{2}, \ldots, C_{n}$ be the remaining connected components of $C \backslash$ Int $D$. Then, $\left\{C_{1}, C_{2}, \ldots, C_{n}, D\right\}$ is a nice refinement of the cover $\{C, D\}$ of $C \cup D$.

The main result of this section in the case of the projective line is the following generalization:

Proposition 3.1.8. For any $n \in \mathbb{N}$, let $\left\{U_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ be a set of affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ with only type 3 points in their boundaries. Set $V_{n}=\bigcup_{i=1}^{n} U_{i}$. Then, there exists a nice cover of $V_{n}$ that refines $\left\{U_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$, satisfying the following properties:
(1) the intersection of any two of its elements is either empty or a single type 3 point;
(2) if two domains of the refinement intersect, there is no third one that intersects them both.

Proof. We will use induction on the number of affinoids domains $n$. For $n=1$, the statement is trivial. Suppose the proposition is true for any positive integer smaller or equal to some $n-1$. Let $\left\{U_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ be affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ with only type 3 points in their boundaries. If they are all of empty interior, i.e. unions of points, then the statement is trivially true. Otherwise, let $i_{0} \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$ be any index for which $U_{i_{0}}$ has non-empty interior. To simplify the notation, suppose $i_{0}=n$. By removing the $U_{i}$ 's contained in $U_{n}$ if necessary, we may assume that for all $i, U_{i} \nsubseteq U_{n}$.

From Lemmas 1.8.17 and 3.1.7, $\mathcal{U}:=\left\{U_{n}\right\} \cup\left\{U_{i} \cap\left(\operatorname{Int} U_{n}\right)^{c}\right\}_{i=1}^{n-1}$ is a refinement of $\left\{U_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ containing affinoid domains with only type 3 points in their boundaries. Let $\left\{W_{l}\right\}_{l=1}^{s}$ be a nice refinement of $\left\{U_{i} \cap\left(\text { Int } U_{n}\right)^{c}\right\}_{i=1}^{n-1}$. Then, for any $l, U_{n} \cap W_{l} \subseteq \partial U_{n}$. By removing those $W_{l}$ for which $W_{l} \subseteq U_{n}$ if necessary, we obtain that $\left\{U_{n}\right\} \cup\left\{W_{l}\right\}_{l=1}^{s}$ is a nice refinement of $\left\{U_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$. The first condition of the statement is a direct consequence of Lemma 1.8.21.

We have proven that for any positive integer $n$, there exists a nice refinement of $\left\{U_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$, which satisfies the first property of the statement. Property 2 is immediate from the following:

Lemma 3.1.9. Let $W_{1}, W_{2}, W_{3}$ be three connected affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ with nonempty interiors and only type 3 points in their boundaries. Suppose their interiors are mutually disjoint. Then, at least one of $W_{1} \cap W_{2}, W_{2} \cap W_{3}, W_{3} \cap W_{1}$ is empty.

Proof. Suppose that $W_{1} \cap W_{2}, W_{2} \cap W_{3}$, and $W_{3} \cap W_{1}$ are all non-empty. If $W_{1} \cap W_{2} \cap$ $W_{3} \neq \emptyset$, then by Lemma 1.8.20, it is a single type 3 point $\{z\}$. Since $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, a n} \backslash\{z\}$ has exactly
two connected components, and the interiors of $W_{1}, W_{2}, W_{3}$ are non-empty and mutually disjoint, this is impossible. Hence, $W_{1} \cap W_{2} \cap W_{3}=\emptyset$, and so $W_{1} \cap W_{2}, W_{2} \cap W_{3}$ and $W_{3} \cap W_{1}$ are all non-empty and different. Since $W_{1} \cap W_{2} \neq \emptyset, W_{1} \cup W_{2}$ is a connected affinoid domain with only type 3 points in its boundary. Furthermore, $\operatorname{Int}\left(W_{3}\right) \cap \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{1} \cup W_{2}\right) \subseteq\left(W_{3} \cap\right.$ $\left.W_{1}\right) \cup\left(W_{3} \cap W_{2}\right)$, and since this is a finite set of type 3 points, $\operatorname{Int}\left(W_{3}\right) \cap \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{1} \cup W_{2}\right)=\emptyset$.

Thus, the interior of $W_{1} \cup W_{2}$ is disjoint to the interior of $W_{3}$. By Lemma 1.8.21, $\left(W_{1} \cup W_{2}\right) \cap W_{3}$ is a single type 3 point. But, $W_{1} \cap W_{3}$ and $W_{2} \cap W_{3}$ were both assumed to be non-empty and shown to be different, implying $\left(W_{1} \cap W_{3}\right) \cup\left(W_{2} \cap W_{3}\right)=\left(W_{1} \cup W_{2}\right) \cap W_{3}$ contains at least two different points, contradiction.

Thus, at least one of $W_{1} \cap W_{2}, W_{2} \cap W_{3}, W_{3} \cap W_{1}$ must be empty.
This completes the proof of the proposition.
In view of Theorem 1.8.7, we obtain:
THEOREM 3.1.10. Any open cover of a compact subset of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ has a nice refinement.
The following will be needed later:
Lemma 3.1.11. Let $A$ be a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Let $S$ be a finite subset of $\operatorname{Int}(A)$ containing only type 3 points. There exists a nice cover $\mathcal{A}$ of $A$, such that the set of points of intersection of different elements of $\mathcal{A}$ is $S$.

Proof. Seeing as $S$ consists of type 3 points, they are all contained in a copy of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Thus, for any element $\eta \in S$, there exists an irreducible polynomial $P$ over $k$ and a real number $r \notin \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$, such that $\eta=\eta_{P, r}$ ( $c f$. Proposition 1.8.25).

Let us prove the statement using induction on the cardinality of $S$. If $S$ is empty, then the statement is trivially true. Suppose we know the statement is true if the cardinality of $S$ is equal to some $n-1$.

Let us assume $S$ contains $n$ points. Fix some element $\eta_{P, r} \in S$. Let $\mathcal{U}$ be a nice cover of $A$ that satisfies the properties of the statement for $S^{\prime}:=S \backslash\left\{\eta_{P, r}\right\}$. There exists a unique $U \in \mathcal{U}$, such that $\eta_{P, r} \in U$, in which case $\eta_{P, r} \in \operatorname{Int}(U)$. Then, $\{U \cap\{|P| \leqslant r\}, U \cap\{|P| \geqslant r\}\} \cup\{V \in \mathcal{U}: V \neq U\}$ is a nice cover that fulfills our requirements.

### 3.1.3. Nice Covers of a Berkovich Curve.

Proposition 3.1.12. Let $C$ be an irreducible projective generically smooth $k$-analytic curve. There exists a type 3 point $\eta$ in $C$ such that $C \backslash\{\eta\}$ has exactly two connected components $E_{1}, E_{2}$. Furthermore, $E_{1} \cup\{\eta\}, E_{2} \cup\{\eta\}$ are affinoid domains of $C$.

Proof. By [20, Théorème 3.7.2], there exists an algebraic projective curve $C^{\text {alg }} / k$ such that $\left(C^{\text {alg }}\right)^{\text {an }}=C$. By $[\mathbf{6}$, Theorem 3.4.1], there is a bijection between the closed points of $C^{\text {alg }}$ and the rigid points of $C$, meaning the latter are Zariski dense in $C$. As $C$ is generically smooth, by [21, Théorème 3.4], the smooth locus of $C$ is a non-empty Zariski open of $C$. Consequently, there exists $\eta_{0}$ - a rigid smooth point in $C$.

By [20, Théorème 4.5.4], there exists a neighborhood $D^{\prime}$ of $\eta_{0}$ in $C$ which is a virtual disc. By density of type 3 points in $C$ (Proposition 1.8.7), there exists a type 3 point $\eta \in D^{\prime}$. By $[\mathbf{2 0}, 3.6 .34], D^{\prime}$ is uniquely arcwise-connected with a single boundary point $x$. By $[\mathbf{2 0}, 1.4 .21], D:=\overline{D^{\prime}}$ - the closure of $D$ in $C$, is uniquely arcwise-connected. Remark that $\partial D=\{x\}$, and $D=D^{\prime} \cup\{x\}$.

As it is of type 3, by [20, 4.2.11.2], there exist at most two branches coming out of $\eta$, and there are exactly two if and only if $\eta \in \operatorname{Int}_{B}(D)$. As $\eta \in \operatorname{Int}(D)=\operatorname{Int}_{B}(D)$ (Theorem 1.5.27), there are two branches coming out of $\eta$. As $D$ is uniquely arcwiseconnected, by [20, 1.3.12], this means that $D \backslash\{\eta\}$ has exactly two connected components. Let us denote them by $A$ and $B$, and assume, without loss of generality, that $x \in B$. Remark that $A \subseteq D^{\prime}$.

Set $E:=(C \backslash D) \cup\{x\}=C \backslash D^{\prime}$. Let us show that $E$ is connected. Let $a, b \in E$. Since $C$ is connected, by Corollary 1.5.43, there exists an arc $[a, b]$ in $C$ connecting $a$ and $b$. Suppose $[a, b] \cap D^{\prime} \neq \emptyset$. Let $d \in[a, b] \cap D^{\prime}$. Then, $[a, b]$ induces arcs $[a, d]$ and $[d, b]$ in $C$ connecting $a$ and $d$, resp. $d$ and $b$. As $a, b \notin D^{\prime}$ and $d \in D^{\prime}$, we obtain that $[a, d] \cap \partial D,[d, b] \cap \partial D \neq \emptyset$, so $x \in[a, d]$ and $x \in[d, b]$. This contradicts the injectivity of $[a, b]$ unless $x=d$, which is impossible seeing as $x \notin D^{\prime}$. Thus, $[a, b] \cap D^{\prime}=\emptyset$, i.e. $[a, b] \subseteq E$, implying $E$ is connected.

As $B, E$ are connected, and $B \cap E=\{x\}, G:=B \cup E$ is a connected subset of $C$. Remark that $A \cap G=(A \cap B) \cup(A \cap E) \subseteq D^{\prime} \cap E=\emptyset$. Also, $A \cup G \cup\{\eta\}=A \cup B \cup E \cup\{\eta\}=D \cup E=C$.

It only remains to show that $A^{\prime}:=A \cup\{\eta\}$ and $G^{\prime}:=G \cup\{\eta\}$ are affinoid domains in $C$. By [20, Proposition 4.2.14], they are both closed analytic domains in $C$. As $C$ is projective, it is boundaryless, so $\partial_{B}\left(A^{\prime}\right)=\partial A^{\prime}=\{\eta\}$, and the same is true for $G^{\prime}$ (Proposition 1.8.10). Let $I$ be an irreducible component of $A^{\prime}$ (resp. $G^{\prime}$ ). By $[\mathbf{2 0}, 3.2 .3]$, if $\partial_{B}(I)=\emptyset$, then $I=C$, implying $A^{\prime}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.G^{\prime}\right)$ is $C$, which is false. Hence, $\partial_{B}(I) \neq \emptyset$.

As $I$ is a Zariski closed subset of $A^{\prime}$ (resp. $G^{\prime}$ ), there exists a closed immersion (hence, a finite morphism) $I \rightarrow A^{\prime}$ (resp. $I \rightarrow G^{\prime}$ ). By Proposition 1.5.31 and Theorem 1.5.27, $\partial_{B}(I)$ is a subset of $I \backslash \operatorname{Int}_{B}\left(A^{\prime}\right)$ (resp. $I \backslash \operatorname{Int}_{B}\left(G^{\prime}\right)$ ). Hence, $\partial_{B}(I)$ is a non-empty subset of $\partial_{B}\left(A^{\prime}\right)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\partial_{B}\left(G^{\prime}\right)\right)$. We conclude by [20, Théorème 6.1.3].

Remark 3.1.13. In general, $C \backslash\{\eta\}$ has at most two connected components "around" $\eta$, and it might happen that it has exactly one (for example in a Tate curve), see also [ $\mathbf{2 0}, 4.2 .11 .2]$ and the remarks made after Lemma 3.2.7.

Proposition 3.1.14. Let $C$ be a normal connected projective $k$-algebraic curve. Then, there exists a nice cover $\left\{U_{1}, U_{2}\right\}$ of $C^{\text {an }}$ - the Berkovich analytification of $C$, such that $U_{1} \cap U_{2}$ is a single type 3 point.

Proof. Let $C \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1}$ be a finite morphism. It induces an embedding of function fields $k\left(\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1}\right) \hookrightarrow k(C)$. Let $K$ be the separable closure of $k\left(\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1}\right)$ in $k(C)$. There exists a connected normal projective algebraic curve $Y$ over $k$, such that $k(Y)=K$. Since the field extension $K / k\left(\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1}\right)$ is separable, the induced morphism $Y \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1}$ is generically étale, so $Y$ is a generically smooth curve. In particular, this implies that the $k$-analytic curve $Y^{\text {an }}$ is generically smooth ([21, Théorème 3.4]). At the same time, since the finite extension $k(C) / K$ is purely inseparable, the induced finite type morphism $C \rightarrow Y$ is a homeomorphism. Consequently, by [6, Proposition 3.4.6], its analytification $f: C^{\text {an }} \rightarrow Y^{\text {an }}$ is a finite morphism that is a homeomorphism.

By Proposition 3.1.12, there exists a nice cover $\left\{U_{1}^{\prime}, U_{2}^{\prime}\right\}$ of $Y^{\text {an }}$, such that $U_{1}^{\prime} \cap U_{2}^{\prime}$ is a single type 3 point. Seeing as $f$ is finite and a homeomorphism, $U_{i}:=f^{-1}\left(U_{i}^{\prime}\right), i=1,2$, is a connected affinoid domain, and $U_{1} \cap U_{2}$ is a single type 3 point.

Definition 3.1.15. For a nice cover $\mathcal{U}$ of a $k$-analytic curve, let us denote by $S_{\mathcal{U}}$ the finite set of type 3 points that are in the intersections of different elements of $\mathcal{U}$.

Remark that for a nice cover $\mathcal{U}$ of a $k$-analytic curve $C$, if $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}}$, the set $\{s\}$ is an affinoid domain of $C$. This is because $\{s\}$ is a connected component of the intersection of two affinoid domains.

The following notion will be needed in what follows.
Definition 3.1.16. Let $C$ be a $k$-analytic curve. Let $\mathcal{U}$ be a nice cover of $C$. A function $T_{\mathcal{U}}: \mathcal{U} \rightarrow\{0,1\}$ will be called a parity function for $\mathcal{U}$ if for any different $U^{\prime}, U^{\prime \prime} \in \mathcal{U}$ such that $U^{\prime} \cap U^{\prime \prime} \neq \emptyset$, one has $T_{\mathcal{U}}\left(U^{\prime}\right) \neq T_{\mathcal{U}}\left(U^{\prime \prime}\right)$.

Lemma 3.1.17. For any $n \in \mathbb{N}$, let $U_{1}, U_{2}, \ldots, U_{n}$ be affinoid domains in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ such that $\mathcal{U}_{n}:=\left\{U_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ is a nice cover of $K_{n}:=\bigcup_{i=1}^{n} U_{i}$. Then, there exists a parity function $T_{\mathcal{U}_{n}}$ for $\mathcal{U}_{n}$.

Proof. It suffices to prove the result under the assumption that $K_{n}$ is connected. We will use induction on the cardinality $n$ of $\mathcal{U}_{n}$. If $n=1$, the statement is trivially true. Suppose it to be true for some $n-1$.

Lemma 3.1.18. Let $Z$ be a topological space. For any positive integer $m$, let $\left\{W_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{m}$ be a set of closed connected subsets of $Z$. Suppose $\bigcup_{i=1}^{m} W_{i}$ is connected. Then, there exists $i_{0} \in\{1,2, \ldots, m\}$, such that $\bigcup_{i \neq i_{0}} W_{i}$ is connected.

Proof. Let $l$ be the largest integer such that $l<m$ and there exist $W_{i_{1}}, W_{i_{2}}, \ldots, W_{i_{l}}$, with $\bigcup_{j=1}^{l} W_{i_{j}}$ connected. As all the $W_{i}$ are connected, $l>0$. Set $J=\{1,2, \ldots, m\} \backslash\left\{i_{1}, i_{2}, \ldots, i_{l}\right\}$. If $l<m-1$, then for any $p \in J$, we obtain $W_{p} \cap \bigcup_{j=1}^{l} W_{i_{j}}=\emptyset$. This implies that $\left(\bigcup_{p \in J} W_{p}\right) \cap\left(\bigcup_{j=1}^{l} W_{i_{j}}\right)=\emptyset$, which contradicts the connectedness of $\bigcup_{i=1}^{m} W_{i}$. Thus, $l=m-1$.

Seeing as $\bigcup_{i=1}^{n} U_{i}$ is connected, from Lemma 3.1.18, there exist $n-1$ elements of $\mathcal{U}_{n}$ whose union remains connected. For simplicity of notation, assume them to be the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{n-1}:=\left\{U_{1}, U_{2}, \ldots, U_{n-1}\right\}$. Then, $\mathcal{U}_{n-1}$ is a nice cover of the connected set $K_{n-1}:=\bigcup_{i=1}^{n-1} U_{i}$. Let $T_{\mathcal{U}_{n-1}}$ be a parity function for $\mathcal{U}_{n-1}$. By Lemma 1.8.21, $U_{n} \cap \bigcup_{i=1}^{n-1} U_{i}$ is a single type 3 point, so by Lemma 3.1.9, $U_{n}$ intersects exactly one of the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{n-1}$. Without loss of generality, suppose it to be $U_{n-1}$. Define $T_{\mathcal{U}_{n}}$ as follows:
(1) for any $U \in \mathcal{U}_{n-1}, T_{\mathcal{U}_{n}}(U):=T_{\mathcal{U}_{n-1}}(U)$;
(2) $T_{\mathcal{U}_{n}}\left(U_{n}\right):=1-T_{\mathcal{U}_{n-1}}\left(U_{n-1}\right)$.

The function $T_{\mathcal{U}_{n}}$ is a parity function for $\mathcal{U}_{n}$.
Proposition 3.1.19. Let $Y, Z$ be $k$-analytic curves with $Y$ normal and $Z$ compact. Let $f: Z \rightarrow Y$ be a finite surjective morphism. Suppose $\mathcal{V}$ is a nice cover of $Y$. Then, the connected components of $f^{-1}(V), V \in \mathcal{V}$, form a nice cover $\mathcal{U}$ of $Z$, such that $f^{-1}\left(S_{\mathcal{V}}\right)=S_{\mathcal{U}}$.

Furthermore, if $T_{\mathcal{V}}$ is a parity function for $\mathcal{V}$, then the function $T_{\mathcal{U}}$ that to an element $U \in \mathcal{U}$ associates $T_{\mathcal{V}}(f(U))$, is a parity function for $\mathcal{U}$.

Proof. Since $Z$ is compact and $Y$ is Hausdorff, $f$ is a closed morphism. By [20, 3.5.12], $f$ is open.

If $V$ is any connected affinoid domain of $Y$, for any connected component $V_{0}^{\prime}$ of $f^{-1}(V)$, $f\left(V_{0}^{\prime}\right)=V$. To see this, recall that by [4, Lemma 1.3.7], $f_{\mid f^{-1}(V)}: f^{-1}(V) \rightarrow V$ is a finite morphism of affinoid spaces, and by [21, Théorème 3.4], as $Y$ is normal, so is $V$. Thus, $f_{\mid f^{-1}(V)}$ is open and closed. Seeing as $V_{0}^{\prime}$ is a connected component of $f^{-1}(V)$, it is both
open and closed in $f^{-1}(V)$, so its image is both open and closed in $V$. As $V$ is connected, $f\left(V_{0}^{\prime}\right)=V$.

The connected components of $f^{-1}(V)$ for all $V \in \mathcal{V}$ form a finite cover $\mathcal{U}$ of $Z$ consisting of affinoid domains (see Corollary 1.4.19). As $f$ is open, for any $V \in \mathcal{V}, \partial\left(f^{-1}(V)\right)=$ $f^{-1}(\partial V)$. Since a finite morphism preserves the type of point (Lemma 1.8.2), $\partial f^{-1}(V)$ is an affinoid domain containing only type 3 points in its boundary. Thus, the elements of $\mathcal{U}$ are connected affinoid domains containing only type 3 points in their boundaries.

Let $U_{1}, U_{2} \in \mathcal{U}$ be such that $U_{1} \cap U_{2} \neq \emptyset$. Set $V_{i}=f\left(U_{i}\right), i=1,2$. Then, $V_{1}, V_{2} \in \mathcal{V}$, and $V_{1} \neq V_{2}$. To see the second part, if $V_{1}=V_{2}$, then $U_{1}, U_{2}$ would be connected components of $f^{-1}\left(V_{1}\right)$, thus disjoint, which contradicts the assumption $U_{1} \cap U_{2} \neq \emptyset$. Seeing as $U_{1} \cap U_{2} \subseteq f^{-1}\left(V_{1} \cap V_{2}\right), U_{1} \cap U_{2}$ is a finite set of type 3 points. Hence, $U_{1} \cap U_{2}=\partial U_{1} \cap \partial U_{2}$. The third condition of a nice cover is trivially satisfied. Since $f^{-1}(\partial V)=\partial f^{-1}(V)$ for all $V \in \mathcal{V}$, it follows that $f^{-1}\left(S_{\mathcal{V}}\right)=S_{\mathcal{U}}$. Finally, $T_{\mathcal{U}}\left(U_{1}\right)=T_{\mathcal{V}}\left(V_{1}\right) \neq T_{\mathcal{V}}\left(V_{2}\right)=T_{\mathcal{U}}\left(U_{2}\right)$, so $T_{\mathcal{U}}$ is a parity function for $\mathcal{U}$.

Corollary 3.1.20. Let $C$ be a normal projective $k$-analytic curve or a strict $k$-affinoid curve. Any open cover of $C$ has a nice refinement.

Proof. By Theorem 1.8.7, we may assume that the open cover only contains elements with finite boundary consisting of type 3 points. Since $C$ is compact, there is a finite subcover $\mathcal{U}$ of the starting open cover. Set $S:=\bigcup_{U \in \mathcal{U}} \partial U$. Suppose $C$ is projective. Then, there exists a finite surjective morphism $C \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Set $S^{\prime}=f(S)$. By Lemma 3.1.11, there exists a nice cover $\mathcal{D}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$, such that $S_{\mathcal{D}}=S^{\prime}$. We conclude by applying Proposition 3.1.19.

If $C$ is a strict $k$-affinoid curve, by Noether's Normalization Lemma there exists a finite surjective morphism $C \rightarrow \mathbb{D}$, where $\mathbb{D}$ is the closed unit disc in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. We conclude as above.

### 3.2. A Local-Global Principle over Berkovich Curves

Unless mentioned otherwise, throughout this section we assume that $k$ is a complete non-trivially valued ultrametric field such that $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$.

Definition 3.2.1 (HHK). Let $F$ be a field. A linear algebraic group $G$ over $F$ acts strongly transitively on an $F$-variety $X$ if $G$ acts on $X$ and for any field extension $E / F$, either $X(E)=\emptyset$ or the action of $G(E)$ on $X(E)$ is transitive.

We start by showing some patching results over nice covers. Recall that we denote by $\mathscr{M}$ the sheaf of meromorphic functions.
3.2.1. Patching over nice covers. We show a generalized form of patching (with respect to the one seen in Chapter 2) with is applicable to nice covers.

Proposition 3.2.2. Let $D$ be $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ or a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Let $\mathcal{D}$ be a nice cover of $D$, and $T_{\mathcal{D}}$ a parity function for $\mathcal{D}$. Let $G / \mathscr{M}(D)$ be a rational linear algebraic group. Then, for any $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{\mathcal{D}}} \in \prod_{s \in S_{\mathcal{D}}} G(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))$, there exists $\left(g_{U}\right)_{U \in \mathcal{D}} \in \prod_{U \in \mathcal{D}} G(\mathscr{M}(U))$, satisfying: for any $s \in S_{\mathcal{D}}$, if $U_{0}, U_{1}$ are the elements of $\mathcal{D}$ containing s, and $T_{\mathcal{D}}\left(U_{0}\right)=0$, then $g_{s}=g_{U_{0}} \cdot g_{U_{1}}^{-1}$ in $G(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))$.

Proof. We will use induction on the cardinality $n$ of a nice cover. If $n=2$, then this is Theorem 2.2.3 (considering Proposition 3.1.3 with $\mathcal{O}(D)=\mathcal{O}$ ). Suppose the result is true
for some $n-1$. If $\mathcal{D}:=\left\{U_{1}, U_{2}, \ldots, U_{n}\right\}$, since $\bigcup_{i=1}^{n} U_{i}$ is connected, from Lemma 3.1.18, there exist $n-1$ elements of $\mathcal{U}$ whose union remains connected. For simplicity of notation, suppose them to be the elements of $\mathcal{D}^{\prime}:=\left\{U_{1}, U_{2}, \ldots, U_{n-1}\right\}$. By Lemma 1.8.21, $\bigcup_{i=1}^{n-1} U_{i} \cap U_{n}$ is single type 3 point, so by Lemma 3.1.9, $U_{n}$ intersects exactly one of the elements of $\mathcal{D}^{\prime}$. To simplify the notation, suppose it to be $U_{n-1}$. Set $\{\eta\}:=U_{n-1} \cap U_{n}$, so that $S_{\mathcal{D}}=S_{\mathcal{D}^{\prime}} \cup\{\eta\}$.

Let $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{\mathcal{D}}}$ be any element of $\prod_{s \in S_{\mathcal{D}}} G(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))$. By the induction hypothesis, for $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{\mathcal{D}^{\prime}}} \in \prod_{s \in S_{\mathcal{D}^{\prime}}} G(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))$, there exists $\left(g_{U}\right)_{U \in \mathcal{D}^{\prime}} \in \prod_{U \in \mathcal{D}^{\prime}} G(\mathscr{M}(U))$, satisfying the conditions of the statement.

- Suppose $T_{\mathcal{D}}\left(U_{n}\right)=0$. By Theorem 2.2.3, there exist $a \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{n}\right)\right)$ and $b \in$ $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(\bigcup_{i=1}^{n-1} U_{i}\right)\right)$ such that $g_{\eta} \cdot g_{U_{n-1}}=a \cdot b$ in $G(\mathscr{M}(\{\eta\}))$. For any $i \neq n$, set $g_{U_{i}}^{\prime}:=g_{U_{i}} \cdot b^{-1}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i}\right)\right)$. Also, set $g_{U_{n}}^{\prime}:=a$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{n}\right)\right)$.
- Suppose $T_{\mathcal{D}}\left(U_{n}\right)=1$. By Theorem 2.2.3, there exist $c \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(\bigcup_{i=1}^{n-1} U_{i}\right)\right)$ and $d \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{n}\right)\right)$ such that $g_{U_{n-1}}^{-1} \cdot g_{\eta}=c \cdot d$ in $G(\mathscr{M}(\{\eta\}))$. For any $i \neq n$, set $g_{U_{i}}^{\prime}:=g_{U_{i}} \cdot c$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i}\right)\right)$. Also, set $g_{U_{n}}^{\prime}:=d^{-1}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{n}\right)\right)$.
The family $\left(g_{U_{i}}^{\prime}\right)_{i=1}^{n} \in \prod_{i=1}^{n} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i}\right)\right)$ satisfies the conditions of the statement for $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{\mathcal{D}}}$.
Proposition 3.2.3. Let $Y$ be an integral strict $k$-affinoid curve. Set $K=\mathscr{M}(Y)$. Let $G / K$ be a connected rational linear algebraic group. For any open cover $\mathcal{V}$ of $Y$, there exists a nice refinement $\mathcal{U}$ of $\mathcal{V}$ with a parity function $T_{\mathcal{U}}$, such that for any given $\left(g_{y}\right)_{y \in S_{\mathcal{U}}} \in \prod_{y \in S_{\mathcal{U}}} G(\mathscr{M}(\{y\}))$, there exists $\left(g_{U}\right)_{U \in \mathcal{U}} \in \prod_{U \in \mathcal{U}} G(\mathscr{M}(U))$, satisfying: for any $y \in S_{\mathcal{U}}$, there are exactly two elements $U^{\prime}, U^{\prime \prime}$ of $\mathcal{U}$ containing $s$, and if $T_{\mathcal{U}}\left(U^{\prime}\right)=0$, then $g_{y}=g_{U^{\prime}} \cdot g_{U^{\prime \prime}}^{-1}$ in $G(\mathscr{M}\{y\})$.

Proof. By Proposition 1.8.7, we may assume that the cover $\mathcal{V}$ only contains elements with finite boundary consisting of only type 3 points. Since $Y$ is compact, we may also assume that $\mathcal{V}$ is finite.

Let $f: Y \rightarrow \mathbb{D}$ be a finite surjective morphism we obtain from Noether's Normalization Lemma, where $\mathbb{D}$ is the closed unit disc in $\mathbb{P}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Set $S=f\left(\bigcup_{V \in \mathcal{V}} \partial V\right)$. It is a finite set of type 3 points. By Lemma 3.1.11, there exists a nice cover $\mathcal{D}$ of $\mathbb{D}$ such that $S_{\mathcal{D}}=S$. Let $T_{\mathcal{D}}$ be a parity function for $\mathcal{D}$ (it exists by Lemma 3.1.17). From Proposition 3.1.19, the connected components of $f^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right), Z^{\prime} \in \mathcal{D}$, form a nice cover $\mathcal{U}$ of $Y$ such that $f^{-1}\left(S_{\mathcal{D}}\right)=$ $S_{\mathcal{U}}$, and $T_{\mathcal{D}}$ induces a parity function $T_{\mathcal{U}}$ for $\mathcal{U}$.

Let us show that $\mathcal{U}$ refines $\mathcal{V}$. Suppose, by contradiction, that $Z \in \mathcal{U}$ is such that there does not exist an element of $\mathcal{V}$ containing it. Then, there must exist $a \in \bigcup_{V \in \mathcal{V}} \partial V \subseteq S_{\mathcal{U}}$ such that $a \in \operatorname{Int}(Z)$. Since $a \in S_{\mathcal{U}}$ there exists $U \in \mathcal{U}$, such that $a \in \partial U$. But then, $Z \cap U \neq \partial Z \cap \partial U$, which contradicts the fact that $\mathcal{U}$ is a nice cover of $Y$. Consequently, $\mathcal{U}$ must refine $\mathcal{V}$.

Suppose that for $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}}$ there exist different $U_{1}, U_{2}, U_{3} \in \mathcal{U}$ containing $s$. Then, $f(s) \in V_{1} \cap V_{2} \cap V_{3}$, where $V_{i}:=f\left(U_{i}\right) \in \mathcal{D}, i=1,2,3$, (the fact that $V_{i} \in \mathcal{D}$ was shown in the beginning of the proof of Proposition 3.1.19). By Lemma 3.1.9, this is only possible if at least two of the $V_{1}, V_{2}, V_{3}$ coincide. Suppose, without loss of generality, that $V_{1}=V_{2}$. Then, $U_{1}, U_{2}$ are connected components of $f^{-1}\left(V_{1}\right)$, so $U_{1} \cap U_{2}=\emptyset$, contradiction. Hence, for any $s \in \mathcal{S}_{\mathcal{U}}$, there exist at most two elements of $\mathcal{U}$ containing $s$. Considering the definition of $S_{\mathcal{U}}$, there must exist exactly two.

Set $G^{\prime}=\mathcal{R}_{K / \mathscr{M}(\mathbb{D})}(G)$ - the Weil restriction of scalars from $K$ to $\mathscr{M}(\mathbb{D})$ of $G$. It is still a connected rational linear algebraic group (see [12, 7.6] or [55, Section 1], this is where the connectedness assumption is necessary).

Lemma 3.2.4. For any points of type 3 in $\mathbb{D}, \mathscr{M}(\{s\}) \otimes_{\mathscr{M}(\mathbb{D})} \mathscr{M}(Y)=\prod_{x \in f^{-1}(s)} \mathscr{M}(\{x\})$.
Proof. Seeing as $s$ is a type 3 point, the set $f^{-1}(s)$ is finite consisting of only type 3 points. Hence, $\mathcal{O}(\{s\})=\mathscr{M}(\{s\})$, and $\mathcal{O}(\{x\})=\mathscr{M}(\{x\})$ for all $x \in f^{-1}(s)$ (recall Lemma 3.1.1).

Set $A:=\mathcal{O}(\mathbb{D}), B:=\mathcal{O}(Y)$, and $C:=\mathcal{O}(\{s\})$. Let us denote by $T$ the set of nonzero elements of $A$. We know that $C \otimes_{A} B=\prod_{x \in f^{-1}(s)} \mathcal{O}(\{x\})=\prod_{x \in f^{-1}(s)} \mathscr{M}(\{x\})$. Then, localizing on both sides, we obtain: $T^{-1}\left(C \otimes_{A} B\right)=C \otimes_{S^{-1} A} T^{-1} B$ and $T^{-1}\left(\prod_{x \in f^{-1}(s)} \mathscr{M}(\{x\})\right)=\prod_{x \in f^{-1}(s)} \mathscr{M}(\{x\})$.

Since $B$ is a finite $A$-module, $T^{-1} B$ is a domain that is a finite dimensional $T^{-1} A$ vector space. Then, for any $b \in B \backslash\{0\}$, the map $T^{-1} B \rightarrow T^{-1} B, \alpha \mapsto b \alpha$ is injective, so surjective. Thus, there exists $b^{\prime} \in T^{-1} B$ such that $b b^{\prime}=1$, implying $T^{-1} B=\operatorname{Frac} T$. Consequently, $T^{-1}\left(C \otimes_{A} B\right)=\mathscr{M}(\{s\}) \otimes_{\mathscr{M}}(\mathbb{D}) \mathscr{M}(Y)$.

By the universal property of the Weil restrictio of scalars, for any $s \in S_{\mathcal{D}}, G^{\prime}(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))=$ $G\left(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}) \otimes_{\mathscr{M}(\mathbb{D})} \mathscr{M}(Y)\right)$. By the lemma above, $G^{\prime}(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))=\prod_{x \in f^{-1}(s)} G(\mathscr{M}(\{x\}))$.

Consequently, $\left(g_{y}\right)_{y \in S_{\mathcal{U}}} \in \prod_{y \in S_{\mathcal{U}}} G(\mathscr{M}(\{y\}))$ determines uniquely an element $\left(h_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{\mathcal{D}}}$ of $\prod_{s \in S_{\mathcal{D}}} G^{\prime}(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))$. By Proposition 3.2.2, there exists $\left(h_{Z}\right)_{Z \in \mathcal{D}} \in \prod_{Z \in \mathcal{D}} G^{\prime}(\mathscr{M}(Z))$, such that if for two different $Z_{0}, Z_{1} \in \mathcal{D}$ with $T_{\mathcal{D}}\left(Z_{0}\right)=0, s \in Z_{0} \cap Z_{1}$, then $h_{s}=h_{Z_{0}} \cdot h_{Z_{1}}^{-1}$ in $G^{\prime}(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))$.

For any $Z \in \mathcal{D}$, let $Z_{1}, Z_{2}, \ldots, Z_{r}$ be the connected components of $f^{-1}(Z)$. The application $\mathscr{M}(Z) \otimes_{\mathscr{M}(\mathbb{D})} \mathscr{M}(Y) \rightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{r} \mathscr{M}\left(Z_{i}\right)$ induces a map $G^{\prime}(\mathscr{M}(Z))=G\left(\mathscr{M}(Z) \otimes_{\mathscr{M}(\mathbb{D})} \mathscr{M}(Y)\right)$ $\rightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{r} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(Z_{i}\right)\right)$, which sends $h_{Z}$ to an element $\left(g_{Z_{1}}, g_{Z_{2}}, \ldots, g_{Z_{r}}\right)$ of $\prod_{i=1}^{r} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(Z_{i}\right)\right)$. Thus, for any $U \in \mathcal{U}$, we have an element $g_{U} \in G(\mathscr{M}(U))$. It remains to show that given different $U_{0}, U_{1} \in \mathcal{U}$ with $T_{\mathcal{U}}\left(U_{0}\right)=0$, such that $y \in U_{0} \cap U_{1}$ for some $y \in S_{\mathcal{U}}$, we have $g_{y}=g_{U_{0}} \cdot g_{U_{1}}^{-1}$ in $G(\mathscr{M}(\{y\}))$. This is a consequence of the analogue result for $\left(h_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{\mathcal{D}}}$ and $\left(h_{Z}\right)_{Z \in \mathcal{D}}$, the relation between $T_{\mathcal{D}}$ and $T_{\mathcal{U}}$, and of the commutativity of the following diagram for any $Z \in \mathcal{D}$ and any $s \in Z$ of type 3 :

3.2.2. Local-global principles over analytic curves. We now apply patching over nice covers to obtain local-global principles. Throughout this section, unless mentioned otherwise, $k$ denotes a non-trivially valued complete ultrametric field such that $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq$ $\mathbb{R}_{>0}$.

Proposition 3.2.5. Let $Y$ be a normal irreducible strict $k$-affinoid curve. Set $K=\mathscr{M}(Y)$. Let $X / K$ be a variety, and $G / K$ a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on $X$. The following local-global principles hold:

- $X(K) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in Y$;
- for any open cover $\mathcal{P}$ of $Y, X(K) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X(\mathscr{M}(U)) \neq \emptyset$ for all $U \in \mathcal{P}$.

Proof. Since $Y$ is irreducible and normal, $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a domain for all $x \in Y$, and $\mathscr{M}_{x}=$ Frac $\mathcal{O}_{x}$.

Seeing as $K \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}_{x}$ for all $x \in Y$, the implication " $\Rightarrow$ " is true.
Suppose $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in Y$. Then, there exists an open cover $\mathcal{V}$ of $Y$ such that for any $V \in \mathcal{V}, X(\mathscr{M}(V)) \neq \emptyset$. Let $\mathcal{U}$ be a nice refinement of $\mathcal{V}$ given by Proposition 3.2.3, and $T_{\mathcal{U}}$ its associated parity function. Remark that for any $U \in \mathcal{U}$, we have $X(\mathscr{M}(U)) \neq \emptyset$.

For $U \in \mathcal{U}$, let $x_{U} \in X(\mathscr{M}(U))$. For any $y \in S_{\mathcal{U}}$, there exists exactly one element $U_{i} \in \mathcal{U}$, with $T_{\mathcal{U}}\left(U_{i}\right)=i, i=0,1$, containing $y$. From the transitivity of the action of $G$, there exists $g_{y} \in G(\mathscr{M}(\{y\}))$ such that $x_{U_{0}}=g_{y} \cdot x_{U_{1}}$ in $G(\mathscr{M}(\{y\}))$. This gives us an element $\left(g_{y}\right)_{y \in S_{\mathcal{U}}} \in \prod_{y \in S_{\mathcal{U}}} G(\mathscr{M}(\{y\}))$. By Proposition 3.2.3, there exists $\left(g_{U}\right)_{U \in \mathcal{U}} \in \prod_{U \in \mathcal{U}} G(\mathscr{M}(U))$, satisfying: for any different $U^{\prime}, U^{\prime \prime} \in \mathcal{U}$ containing some point $y \in S_{\mathcal{U}}$ such that $T_{\mathcal{U}}\left(U^{\prime}\right)=0$ (implying $\left.T_{\mathcal{U}}\left(U^{\prime \prime}\right)=1\right), g_{y}=g_{U^{\prime}} \cdot g_{U^{\prime \prime}}^{-1}$ in $G(\mathscr{M}\{y\})$.

For any $U \in \mathcal{U}$, set $x_{U}^{\prime}=g_{U}^{-1} \cdot x_{U} \in X(\mathscr{M}(U))$. We have construced a meromorphic function over $U$ for any $U \in \mathcal{U}$. Let us show that these meromorphic functions are compatible, i.e. that they coincide on the intersections of the elements of $\mathcal{U}$. Let $D, E \in \mathcal{U}$ be such that $D \cap E \neq \emptyset$. Suppose $T_{\mathcal{U}}(D)=0$. For any $s \in D \cap E$, $x_{E}^{\prime}=g_{E}^{-1} \cdot x_{E}=g_{D}^{-1}\left(g_{D} g_{E}^{-1}\right) \cdot x_{E}=g_{D}^{-1}\left(g_{s} \cdot x_{E}\right)=g_{D}^{-1} x_{D}=x_{D}^{\prime}$ in $X(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))$. Consequently, $x_{E}^{\prime}=x_{D}^{\prime}$ in $X(\mathscr{M}(E \cap D))$.

Compatibility of these meromorphic functions implies they can be glued to give a meromorphic function on the entire $Y$. Thus, $X(K)=X(\mathscr{M}(Y)) \neq \emptyset$.

The second version of this local-global principle is a direct consequence of the first one.

Let us show the same result (Theorem 3.2.9) for any $k$-affinoid space. Recall that we denote by $\Gamma(\cdot)$ the Shilov boundary of an affinoid space.

LEMMA 3.2.6. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $E$ be a $k$-affinoid space. Let e be any point of $E$. Then, the following statements are equivalent:
(1) there exists an affinoid neighborhood $N_{0}$ of $e$ in $E$ such that $e \in \Gamma\left(N_{0}\right)$;
(2) for any affinoid neighborhood $N$ of $e$ in $E, e \in \Gamma(N)$;
(3) $e \in \Gamma(E)$.

Proof. Suppose there exists an affinoid neighborhood $N_{0}$ of $e$ in $E$, such that $e \in \Gamma\left(N_{0}\right)$. By [6, Proposition 2.5.20], $\Gamma\left(N_{0}\right) \subseteq \partial_{B}\left(N_{0} / E\right) \cup\left(\Gamma(E) \cap N_{0}\right)$. Since $\partial_{B}(N / E)$ is the topological boundary of $N_{0}$ in $E$ (see [6, Corollary 2.5.13 (ii)]), we obtain that $e \notin \partial_{B}\left(N_{0} / E\right.$ ), implying $e \in \Gamma(E) \cap N_{0} \subseteq \Gamma(E)$.

On the other hand, if $e \in \Gamma(E)$, for any affinoid neighborhood $N$ of $e$ in $E$, since $\Gamma(E) \cap N \subseteq \Gamma(N)$ (see [6, Proposition 2.5.20]), we obtain $e \in \Gamma(N)$.

Lemma 3.2.7. Let $Y$ be an integral $k$-affinoid curve. Let $y \in Y$ be any point of type 3, and $Z$ a connected affinoid neighborhood of $y$ in $Y$. Then,
(1) the subspace $Y \backslash\{y\}$ has at most two connected components at the neighborhood of $y$; it is connected at the neighborhood of $y$ if and only if $y \in \Gamma(Y)$;
(2) if $y \in \Gamma(Y)$, then there exist connected affinoid domains $A, B$ of $Y$, such that $A$ is a neighborhood of $y$ in $Z, \Gamma(Y) \cap A=\{y\}, A \cup B=Y$, and $A \cap B$ is a single type 3 point;
(3) if $k$ is non-trivially valued and $y \notin \Gamma(Y)$, there exists a strict affinoid neighborhood of $y$ in $Y$.
Proof. Let $p$ denote the characteristic exponent of $k$. Then, by [21, Théorème 6.10], there exists $n$ such that $Y^{\prime}:=\left(Y \times k^{1 / p^{n}}\right)_{\text {red }}$ is geometrically reduced. Since $k^{1 / p^{n}} / k$ is a purely inseparable field extension, the map $f: Y^{\prime} \rightarrow Y$ is a homeomorphism (see [21, Remarque 0.5]). As $Y^{\prime}$ is geometrically reduced, the set of its smooth points is a non-empty Zariski-open subset (see [21, Théorème 3.4]), i.e. by Lemma 1.8.5, the complement of a set of rigid points. Consequently, since $y^{\prime}:=f^{-1}(y)$ is non-rigid, it is smooth in $Y^{\prime}$. Remark also that by [20, Proposition 4.2.14], the image (resp. preimage) of a connected affinoid domain is a connected analytic domain, and thus by [20, Théorème 6.1.3], a connected affinoid domain. Finally, for any affinoid domain $U$ of $Y^{\prime}$, we have that $\Gamma(U)=f^{-1}(\Gamma(f(U)))$ : by Proposition 1.5.31 and Theorem 1.5.27 (while taking into account Proposition 1.8.10), this is true for finite morphisms, and taking the reduction of an affinoid space does not change its Shilov boundary. Set $Z^{\prime}:=f^{-1}(Z)$. It suffices to prove the statement for $Y^{\prime}, y^{\prime}, Z^{\prime}$.
(1) By [20, Théorème 4.5.4], $y^{\prime}$ has an affinoid neighborhood $A^{\prime}$ in $Y^{\prime}$ that is a closed virtual annulus, implying $\partial_{B}\left(A^{\prime}\right)$ contains exactly 2 points. We may assume, seeing as type 3 points are dense in $Y^{\prime}$ (Proposition 1.8.7), that $\partial A^{\prime}$ constists of only type 3 point.

Thus, $A^{\prime}$ has at most two connected components at the neighborhood of $y^{\prime}$, and it is connected there if and only if $y^{\prime} \in \Gamma\left(A^{\prime}\right)$.

Finally, $Y^{\prime}$ has at most two connected components at the neighborhood of $y^{\prime}$, and by Lemma 3.2.6, it is connected there if and only if $y^{\prime} \in \Gamma\left(Y^{\prime}\right)$.
(2) Suppose furthermore that $y^{\prime} \in \Gamma\left(Y^{\prime}\right)$, implying $y^{\prime} \in \Gamma\left(A^{\prime}\right)$. Set $\Gamma\left(A^{\prime}\right)=\left\{y^{\prime}, z^{\prime}\right\}$, where $z^{\prime}$ is a type 3 point. Then, $\partial A^{\prime}=\left\{z^{\prime}\right\}$ and by Theorem 1.8.15, $B^{\prime}:=\left(Y^{\prime} \backslash A^{\prime}\right) \cup\left\{z^{\prime}\right\}$ is an affinoid domain. We have: $A^{\prime} \cup B^{\prime}=Y^{\prime}, A^{\prime} \cap B^{\prime}=\left\{z^{\prime}\right\}$ (which implies $B^{\prime}$ is connected). Finally, by shrinking $A^{\prime}$ if necessary, we can always assume $z^{\prime} \notin \Gamma\left(Y^{\prime}\right)$, and since $\Gamma\left(Y^{\prime}\right) \cap A^{\prime} \subseteq \Gamma\left(A^{\prime}\right)$, this implies $\Gamma\left(Y^{\prime}\right) \cap A^{\prime}=\left\{y^{\prime}\right\}$.
(3) If $y^{\prime} \notin \Gamma\left(Y^{\prime}\right)$, then $y^{\prime} \notin \Gamma\left(A^{\prime}\right)$, and for the non-trivially valued field $k^{1 / p^{n}}$, the statement follows from the fact that $A^{\prime}$ is a closed virtual annulus.

By the terminology introduced in [20, Section 1.7] and [20, Théorème 3.5.1], the first part of Lemma 3.2.7 shows that points of type 3 of certain $k$-analytic curves have at most two branches. Furthermore, in view of Lemma 1.8.8 and Theorem 1.5.27(1), it has one branch if and only if it is in the Berkovich boundary of the curve.

The following argument will be used often in what follows.
Lemma 3.2.8. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible $k$-analytic curve. Set $F=\mathscr{M}(C)$. Let $X / F$ be a variety, and $G / F$ a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on $X$.
(1) Suppose $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in C$. Let $Z$ be any affinoid domain of $C$. Then, $G_{Z}:=G \times_{F} \mathscr{M}(Z)$ is a connected rational linear algebraic group over $\mathscr{M}(Z)$ acting strongly transitively on the $\mathscr{M}(Z)$-variety $X_{Z}:=X \times_{F} \mathscr{M}(Z)$. Furthermore, $X_{Z}\left(\mathscr{M}_{Z, x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in Z$, where $\mathscr{M}_{Z}$ is the sheaf of meromorphic functions over $Z$.
(2) Let $U_{1}, U_{2}$ be connected affinoid domains of $C$ such that $U_{1} \cap U_{2}=\{s\}$, where $s$ is a type 3 point. If $X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset, i=1,2$, then $X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{1} \cup U_{2}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$.

Proof. (1) That $G_{Z}=G \times_{F} \mathscr{M}(Z)$ is still a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on the variety $X_{Z}=X \times{ }_{F} \mathscr{M}(Z)$ is immediate. Also, seeing as $X, Z$ are normal, $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ and $\mathscr{M}_{Z, x}$ are fields, so the restriction morphism $\mathscr{M}_{x} \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}_{Z, x}$ is injective for all $x \in Z$. Thus, $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ implies $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{Z, x}\right)=X_{Z}\left(\mathscr{M}_{Z, x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for any $x \in Z$.
(2) Let $x_{i} \in X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i}\right)\right), i=1,2$. By the transitivity of the action of $G$, there exists $g \in G(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))$, such that $x_{1}=g \cdot x_{2}$ in $X(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))$. By Theorem 2.2 .3 , there exist $g_{i} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i}\right)\right)$ such that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))$. Thus $g_{1}^{-1} \cdot x_{1}=g_{2} \cdot x_{2}$ in $X(\mathscr{M}(\{s\}))$. Set $x_{1}^{\prime}=g_{1}^{-1} \cdot x_{1}$ and $x_{2}^{\prime}=g_{2} \cdot x_{2}$. They represent meromorphic functions over $U_{1}$ and $U_{2}$, respectively, whose restrictions to $U_{1} \cap U_{2}$ are compatible. Thus, they can be glued to give a meromorphic function $x$ over $\mathscr{M}\left(U_{1} \cup U_{2}\right)$, where $x \in X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{1} \cup U_{2}\right)\right)$, implying $X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{1} \cup U_{2}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$.

Recall that unless mentioned otherwise, $k$ is a complete non-trivially valued ultrametric field such that $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$.

Theorem 3.2.9. Let $Y$ be a normal irreducible $k$-affinoid curve. Set $K=\mathscr{M}(Y)$. Let $X / K$ be a variety, and $G / K$ a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on $X$. The following local-global principles hold:

- $X(K) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in Y$;
- for any open cover $\mathcal{P}$ of $Y, X(K) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X(\mathscr{M}(U)) \neq \emptyset$ for all $U \in \mathcal{P}$.

Proof. Seeing as $K \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}_{x}$ for any $x \in Y$, the implication " $\Rightarrow$ " is true.
For the other one, let us use induction on the number $n$ of type 3 points in the Shilov boundary of $Y$. If $n=0$, then by Proposition $1.8 .12, Y$ is a strict $k$-affinoid curve, in which case the statement has already been proven in Proposition 3.2.5. Assume we know the statement for any positive integer not larger than $n-1, n>0$.

Suppose $\Gamma(Y)$ contains $n$ type 3 points. Let $u \in \Gamma(Y)$. Since $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{u}\right) \neq \emptyset$, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $U_{1}^{\prime}$ of $u$ in $Y$, such that $X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{1}^{\prime}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$. By Lemma 3.2.7(2), there exist two connected affinoid domains $U_{1}, U_{2}$ of $Y$, such that $U_{1}$ is a neighborhood of $u$ in $U_{1}^{\prime}, \Gamma(Y) \cap U_{1}=\{u\}, U_{1} \cup U_{2}=Y$, and $U_{1} \cap U_{2}=\{s\}$, where $s$ is a type 3 point. Since $U_{1} \subseteq U_{1}^{\prime}$, we obtain $X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{1}^{\prime}\right)\right) \subseteq X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{1}\right)\right)$, so $X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{1}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$. Let $U_{s}$ be a connected strict affinoid neighborhood of $s$ in $Y$ (see Lemma 3.2.7(3)). Set $Z_{i}:=U_{i} \cup U_{s}, i=1,2$. It is an integral affinoid domain. Let us show $\Gamma\left(Z_{2}\right)$ contains at most $n-1$ type 3 points.

For any $y \in U_{s}$ of type 3 , seeing as $\Gamma\left(U_{s}\right)$ doesn't contain any type 3 points, $y \notin \Gamma\left(U_{s}\right)$. Taking into account $\Gamma\left(Z_{i}\right) \cap U_{s} \subseteq \Gamma\left(U_{s}\right)$, we obtain $y \notin \Gamma\left(Z_{i}\right)$. Similarly, for any $y \in U_{i} \backslash \Gamma\left(U_{i}\right)$, we have $y \notin \Gamma\left(Z_{i}\right)$. Thus, if $z$ is a type 3 point in the Shilov boundary of $Z_{i}$, then $z \notin U_{s} \cup \bigcup_{i=1}^{2}\left(U_{i} \backslash \Gamma\left(U_{i}\right)\right)$, implying $z \in \Gamma\left(U_{i}\right)$. For a subset $S$ of $Y$, let us denote by $S_{3}$ the set of type 3 points contained in $S$. We have just shown that $\Gamma\left(Z_{i}\right)_{3}=\Gamma\left(U_{i}\right)_{3} \backslash\{s\}, i=1,2$. At the same time, $\Gamma(Y)_{3}$ is a disjoint union of $\Gamma\left(U_{i}\right)_{3} \backslash\{s\}, i=1,2$. By construction, $u \in \Gamma\left(U_{1}\right)_{3} \backslash\{s\}$, so the cardinality of $\Gamma\left(Z_{2}\right)_{3}$ is at most $n-1$.

By the first part of Lemma 3.2.8, $X_{Z_{2}}\left(\mathscr{M}_{Z_{2}, x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for any $x \in Z_{2}$. In view of the paragraph above and the induction hypothesis, $X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(Z_{2}\right)\right)=X_{Z_{2}}\left(\mathscr{M}\left(Z_{2}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$. Seeing as $\mathscr{M}\left(Z_{2}\right) \subseteq \mathscr{M}\left(U_{2}\right)$, we obtain $X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{2}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$. Considering we also have $X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{1}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$, we can conclude by applying the second part of Lemma 3.2.8.

The second version of this local-global principle is a direct consequence of the first one.

We are now able to prove the following:
Theorem 3.2.10. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field such that $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible projective $k$-analytic curve. Set $F=\mathscr{M}(C)$. Let $X / F$ be a variety, and $G / F$ a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on $X$. The following local-global principles hold:

- $X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in C$;
- for any open cover $\mathcal{P}$ of $C, X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X(\mathscr{M}(U)) \neq \emptyset$ for all $U \in \mathcal{P}$.

Proof. Since $F \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}_{x}$ for any $x \in C$, the direction " $\Rightarrow$ " is true.
Suppose $k$ is non-trivially valued. By Proposition 3.1.14, there exists a nice cover $\left\{Z_{1}, Z_{2}\right\}$ of $C$, such that $Z_{1} \cap Z_{2}$ is a single type 3 point $\eta$. By the first part of Lemma 3.2.8, $G_{Z_{i}}$ is a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on the variety $X_{Z_{i}}$, and $X_{Z_{i}}\left(\mathscr{M}_{Z_{i}, x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for any $x \in Z_{i}, i=1,2$. Thus, by Theorem 3.2.9, $X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(Z_{i}\right)\right)=$ $X_{Z_{i}}\left(\mathscr{M}\left(Z_{i}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$. We now conclude by the second part of Lemma 3.2.8.

Suppose $k$ is trivially valued. Being a projective analytic curve over a trivially valued field, the curve $C$ has exactly one type 2 point $x$ (see Lemma 1.8.6). In that case, $\mathscr{M}_{x}=F$, so the statement is trivially satisfied.

The second version of this local-global principle is a direct consequence of the first one.

The condition on the value group of $k$ can be removed using model-theoretic arguments. We are very grateful to Antoine Ducros for bringing this to our attention.

Theorem 3.2.11. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $C$ be an irreducible normal projective $k$-analytic curve. Set $F=\mathscr{M}(C)$. Let $X / F$ be a variety, and $G / F$ a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on $X$. The following local-global principles hold:

- $X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in C ;$
- for any open cover $\mathcal{P}$ of $C, X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X(\mathscr{M}(U)) \neq \emptyset$ for all $U \in \mathcal{P}$.

Proof. If $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, then the statement was already proven in Theorem 3.2.10. Let us show that we can always reduce to this case.

Since $F \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}_{x}$ for all $x \in C$, the direction " $\Rightarrow$ " is clear. Assume $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in C$. Since $C$ is compact, there exists a finite cover $\mathcal{V}$ of $C$ containing only affinoid domains, such that $\{\operatorname{Int}(V): V \in \mathcal{V}\}$ is also a cover of $C$, and $X(\mathscr{M}(V)) \neq \emptyset$ for all $V \in \mathcal{V}$. Let $x_{V} \in X(\mathscr{M}(V))$.

Recall that for any $V, \mathscr{M}(V)$ is the fraction field of an algebra of convergent series over $k$. Hence, $C, X, G$, the action of $G$ on $X$, the isomorphism of a Zariski open of $G$ to an open of some $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$, and $x_{V}, V \in \mathcal{V}$, are all determined by countably many elements of $k$. Let $S \subseteq k$ denote a countable subset containing all these elements.

Let $k_{0}$ be the prime subfield of $k$. Let $k_{1}$ be the field extension of $k_{0}$ generated by $S$. Remark that $k_{1}$ is countable. By [52, Theorem 2.3.7], there exists a subfield $k_{2}$ of $k$ that is a countable extension of $k_{1}$, such that $k_{2} \subseteq k$ is an elementary embedding in the language of valued fields.

Then, by [52, Theorem 2.5.36], there exists a field extension $K$ of $k$, such that $K=k_{2}^{I} / D$, where $I$ is an index set and $D$ is a non-principal ultra-filter on $I$. Furthermore, by [52, Exercise 2.5.22], it is an elementary extension.

Since $k_{2}$ is a countable subfield of $k$, the value group of $k_{2}$ with respect to the valuation induced by that of $k$ satisfies $\sqrt{\left|k_{2}^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. Let $k^{\prime}$ be the completion of $k_{2}$ with respect to this valuation. Then, $\sqrt{\left|k^{\prime \times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$.

Since $C$ is defined over $k^{\prime}$, there exists a connected compact normal $k^{\prime}$-analytic curve $C^{\prime}$, such that $C^{\prime} \times_{k^{\prime}} k=C$. Since $C$ is projective, by Theorem 1.8.15, $C^{\prime}$ is projective as well.

Set $F^{\prime}=\mathscr{M}\left(C^{\prime}\right)$. By construction, there exists an $F^{\prime}$-variety $X^{\prime}$, and a connected rational linear algebraic group $G^{\prime} / F^{\prime}$ acting on $X^{\prime}$, such that $X=X^{\prime} \times{ }_{F^{\prime}} F, G=G^{\prime} \times{ }_{F^{\prime}} F$, and the action of $G$ induced on $X$ is the one given in the statement. Let us show that $G^{\prime}$ acts strongly transitively on $X^{\prime}$. Let $L / F^{\prime}$ be any field extension such that $X^{\prime}(L) \neq \emptyset$. Set $L_{1}=L^{I} / D$. This is a field containing $F^{\prime}$ and $k$ (since $k \subseteq k^{\prime I} / D \subseteq L_{1}$ ), so it is a field extension of $F$. Consequently, $G^{\prime}\left(L_{1}\right)=G\left(L_{1}\right)$ acts transitively on $X^{\prime}\left(L_{1}\right)=X\left(L_{1}\right)$, and since by [52, Exercise 2.5.22], $L \subseteq L_{1}$ is an elementary embedding, $G^{\prime}(L)$ acts transitively on $X^{\prime}(L)$.

For any $V \in \mathcal{V}$, let $V^{\prime}$ denote the image of $V$ with respect to the projection morphism $C \rightarrow C^{\prime}$. By construction, $X^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}\left(V^{\prime}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$. Hence, $X^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in C^{\prime}$, implying $X^{\prime}\left(F^{\prime}\right) \neq \emptyset$, thus in particular $X^{\prime}\left(F^{\prime}\right)=X\left(F^{\prime}\right) \subseteq X(F) \neq \emptyset$.

The second part of the statement is a direct consequence of the first one.
3.2.3. Valuations, Berkovich Curves, and the local-global principle. Because of the relation of Berkovich points to valuations of the function field of a curve, as a result of Theorem 3.2.11 we will obtain a local-global principle with respect to completions, thus evoking some resemblance to "classical local-global principles". Let us start by making said relation precise.

Definition 3.2.12. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $F$ be a field extension of $k$. For any valuation $v$ on $F$, we denote by $R_{v}$ the valuation ring of $F$ with respect to $v$, and $m_{v}$ its maximal ideal. We denote by $F_{v}$ the completion of $F$ with respect to $v$. We use the following notations:

- $V_{k}(F)$ is the set of all rank 1 valuations $v$ on $F$ that extend the valuation of $k$;
- $V_{0}(F)$ is the set of all non-trivial rank 1 discrete valuations on $F$ that when restricted to $k$ are trivial;
- for a $k$-subalgebra $R$ of $F, R \neq k, V_{R}^{\prime}(F)$ is the set of valuations $v \in V_{0}(F)$ such that $R \subseteq R_{v}$;
- $V(F):=V_{k}(F) \cup V_{0}(F)$;
- for a $k$-subalgebra $R$ of $F, R \neq k, V_{R}(F):=V_{k}(F) \cup V_{R}^{\prime}(F)$.

Remark that if $k$ is trivially valued, then $V(F)$ contains the trivial valuation on $F$.
Remark 3.2.13. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible $k$-analytic curve. Then, for any point $x \in C, \mathcal{O}_{x}$ is either a field or a discrete valuation ring (see Lemma 1.8.4). If $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field, then $\mathscr{M}_{x}=\mathcal{O}_{x} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}(x)$, so we endow $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ with the valuation induced from $\mathcal{H}(x)$. If $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a discrete valuation ring, then we endow $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ with the corresponding discrete valuation.

Proposition 3.2.14. Let $k$ be a non-trivially valued complete ultrametric field. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible $k$-analytic curve.
(1) Suppose there exists an affine curve $S$ over $k$, such that $S^{\mathrm{an}}=C$. Let $F$ denote the function field of $S$. Then, there exists a bijective correspondence $C \longleftrightarrow V_{\mathcal{O}(S)}(F)$.
(2) If $C$ is projective, set $F=\mathscr{M}(C)$. Then, there exists a bijective correspondence $C \longleftrightarrow V(F)$.
In either case, if to $x \in C$ is associated the valuation $v$ of $F$, then $\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{x}}=F_{v}$, where the completion of $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ is taken with respect to the valuation introduced in Remark 3.2.13.

Proof. (1) Let $x \in C$. If $x$ is a non-rigid point, then $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field (Lemma 1.8.3), so $|\cdot|_{x}$ is a norm on $A:=\mathcal{O}(S)$ extending that of $k$. Consequently, it extends to $F=$ Frac $A$ and defines a valuation $v_{x}$ on $F$ extending that of $k$, i.e. $v_{x} \in V_{k}(F)$. If $x$ is a rigid point, $\mathcal{O}_{C, x}$ is a dvr (Lemma 1.8.4), and $k^{\times} \subseteq \mathcal{O}_{C, x}^{\times}$, so the embedding $A \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}_{C, x}$ induces a discrete valuation on $A$ whose restriction to $k$ is trivial, i.e. a discrete valuation $v_{x}$ on $F$ whose restriction to $k$ is trivial. Moreover, $A \subseteq R_{v_{x}}$ by definition, so $v_{x} \in V_{A}^{\prime}(F)$.

Let us look at the function $C \longrightarrow V_{A}(F), x \mapsto v_{x}$. It is injective by the paragraph above. It is also surjective: if $v \in V_{k}(F)$, then it determines a norm on $A$ that extends that of $k$, so it corresponds to a non-rigid point of $C$; if $v \in V_{A}^{\prime}(F)$, then $A \subseteq R_{v}$, and $P:=A \cap m_{v}$ is a prime ideal of $A$, so it corresponds to a rigid point $x$ of $C$ for which ker $\mid \cdot{ }_{x}=P$ (see Theorem 1.6.6(1)).

If $x \in C$ is non-rigid, then $\widehat{\mathscr{M}}_{x}=\mathcal{H}(x)$, which is the completion of $F$ with respect to $v_{x}$ (see Remark 1.6.7). If $x$ is a rigid point of $C$, and $P$ its corresponding prime ideal in $A$, then by Theorem $1.6 .6(2), \widehat{\mathcal{O}_{C, x}}=\widehat{A_{P}}=\widehat{A}$, where $\widehat{A}$ denotes the completion of $A$ with respect to the ideal $P$. Consequently, $\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{x}}=\operatorname{Frac} \widehat{A}=F_{v_{x}}$.
(2) Suppose $C$ is projective. Let $C^{\text {alg }}$ be the normal irreducible projective $k$-algebraic curve such that its Berkovich analytification is $C$, and $\pi: C \rightarrow C^{\text {alg }}$ the canonical analyti-
 Since $C$ is irreducible, the function field of $S^{\prime}$ is $F$. By (1), there exists an injective map: $C \longrightarrow V(F), x \mapsto v_{x}$.

Let us show it is also surjective. Let $v \in V(F)$ such that $v_{\mid k}$ is the starting valuation on $k$. Then, by taking any affine Zariski open subset $S^{\prime}$ of $C^{\text {alg }}$ (as in the paragraph above), seeing as its function field is $F$, we obtain that $v$ corresponds to some non-rigid point of $S^{\prime \text { an }} \subseteq C$.

Suppose $v \in V(F)$ is such that $v_{\mid k}$ is trivial. Let us consider an embedding $C^{\text {alg }} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{k}^{n}=$ Proj $k\left[x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right]$. Let $\left\{U_{i}:=\operatorname{Spec} k\left[x_{j} / x_{i}\right]_{j \neq i} / I_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ be a cover of $C^{\text {alg }}$ by standard open sets. Let $i_{0}$ be such that $\left|x_{i_{0}}\right|_{v} \geqslant\left|x_{i}\right|_{v}$ for all $i$. Since $\left|x_{i} / x_{i_{0}}\right|_{v} \leq 1, \mathcal{O}\left(U_{i_{0}}\right) \subseteq R_{v}$, so by (1), $v$ corresponds to a rigid point of $U_{i_{0}}^{\text {an }} \subseteq C$.

That $\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{x}}=F_{v_{x}}$ for all $x \in C$ follows from part (1) by taking an affine Zariski open containing the point $x$.

REMARK 3.2.15. Proposition 3.2 .14 shows that if $X / k$ is a normal irreducible projective algebraic curve over $k$ with function field $F$, then there is a bijective correspondence $X^{\text {an }} \rightarrow V(F), x \mapsto v_{x}$, and $F_{v_{x}}=\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C, x}}$.

Let us now show a local-global principle with respect to all such completions of the field $F$.

We are very greatful to the referee (of the article that arose from the contents of this chapter) for bringing to our attention the following lemma:

Lemma 3.2.16. Let $K$ be a complete valued field and $K_{0}$ a dense Henselian (called quasicomplete in [4, Definition 2.3.1]) subfield. Let $F$ be a subfield of $K_{0}$ and $X$ an $F$ variety. Then, if $F$ is perfect or $X$ is smooth,

$$
X\left(K_{0}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X(K) \neq \emptyset
$$

Proof. Since $K_{0}$ is a subfield of $K$, the implication " $\Rightarrow$ " is clear. Suppose $X(K) \neq \emptyset$.
Suppose $F$ is perfect. By taking the reduction of $X$ if necessary, we may assume that $X$ is reduced. Let $a \in X(K)$. Denote by $X^{\prime}$ the (reduced) Zariski closure of $\{a\}$ in $X$. Since $F$ is perfect, the smooth locus $X^{\prime \prime}$ of $X^{\prime}$ is a dense Zariski open subset of $X^{\prime}$ containing $a$. Thus, $X^{\prime \prime}$ is a smooth $F$-variety such that $X^{\prime \prime}(K) \neq \emptyset$, implying it suffices to prove the statement in the case $X$ is smooth.

Suppose $X$ is smooth. Let $a \in X(K)$. Since $X$ is smooth, there exists a neighborhood $U$ of $a$ in $X$, such that there exists an étale morphism $\varphi: U \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{F}^{d}$ for some $d \in \mathbb{N}$. Let $\varphi_{K}: U_{K} \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{K}^{d}$ be the tensorization by $K$, and let us look at its analytification $\varphi_{K}^{\text {an }}$. Since $a$ is a rational point, $\varphi_{K}^{\text {an }}$ induces an isomorphism between a neighborhood $V$ of $x$ in $U_{K}^{\text {an }}$ and an open $V^{\prime}$ of $\mathbb{A}_{K}^{d, \text { an }}$. Since $K_{0}$ is dense in $K$, there exists $b$ in $V^{\prime}$, such that $b \in \mathbb{A}^{d}(K)=K^{d}$ has coordinates over $K_{0}$ (recall Theorem 1.6.6(1)). Let $c$ be the only pre-image of $b$ in $V$. Then, $c$ is a $K$-rational point over $b$.


Set $b^{\prime}:=g(b) \in \mathbb{A}_{K_{0}}^{d}$. By commutativity of the diagram, since $b$ has coordinates over $K_{0}$, $b^{\prime}$ is a closed point of $\mathbb{A}_{K_{0}}^{d}$ which is in the image of $\varphi_{K_{0}}$.

Since $\varphi$ is étale, $\varphi_{K_{0}}^{-1}\left(b^{\prime}\right)$ is a disjoint union $\bigsqcup_{i} \operatorname{Spec} F_{i}$, where $F_{i}$ are separable finite field extensions of $\kappa\left(b^{\prime}\right)=K_{0}$. At the same time, $\varphi_{K}^{-1}(b)=\bigsqcup_{i} F_{i} \otimes_{K_{0}} K$. Set $\widehat{F}_{i}:=F_{i} \otimes_{K_{0}} K$. It is a field by [4, Proposition 2.4.1].

We know that $\varphi_{K}^{-1}(b)(K) \neq \emptyset$. Then, there exists $i$, such that (Spec $\left.\widehat{F}_{i}\right)(K) \neq \emptyset$, so $\widehat{F}_{i}=K$. By Proposition 2.4.1 of [4], this implies that $F_{i}=K_{0}$, and so $\varphi_{K_{0}}^{-1}\left(b^{\prime}\right)\left(K_{0}\right) \neq \emptyset$, implying $X\left(K_{0}\right) \neq \emptyset$.

Corollary 3.2.17. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible $k$-analytic curve. Set $F=\mathscr{M}(C)$. Let $X$ be an $F$-variety. Then, if char $k=0$ or $X$ is smooth:

$$
X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset
$$

for all $x \in C$, where the completion $\widehat{\mathscr{M}}_{x}$ of $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ is taken with respect to the valuations introduced in Remark 3.2.13.

Proof. Remark that $F$ is perfect if and only if char $k=0$.
If $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field, then $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ is Henselian by [4, Theorem 2.3.3]. If $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is not a field, then it is a discrete valuation ring that is Henselian (see [4, Theorem 2.1.5]), so $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ is Henselian by [4, Proposition 2.4.3]. We conclude by Lemma 3.2.16.

Recall once again that an irreducible compact analytic curve is either projective or affinoid (see Theorem 1.8.15).

Corollary 3.2.18. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric valued field. Let $C$ be a compact irreducible normal $k$-analytic curve. Set $F=\mathscr{M}(C)$. Let $X / F$ be a variety, and $G / F$ a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on $X$. The following local-global principles hold if char $k=0$ or $X$ is smooth:
(1) if $C$ is affinoid and $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$,

$$
X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(F_{v}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } v \in V_{\mathcal{O}(C)}(F)
$$

(2) if $C$ is projective,

$$
X(F) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow X\left(F_{v}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } v \in V(F)
$$

Proof. If $k$ is trivially valued, then the trivial valuation $v_{0}$ of $F$ is in $V_{\mathcal{O}(C)}(F)$ (resp. $V(F))$, and since $F_{v_{0}}=F$, the statement is clear in this case.

Otherwise, it is a consequence of Theorem 3.2.9, and Theorem 3.2.11 in view of Proposition 3.2.14 and Corollary 3.2.17.

Remark 3.2.19. Recall that for any finitely generated field extension $F / k$ of transcendence degree 1, there exists a unique normal projective $k$-algebraic curve $C^{\text {alg }}$ with function
 so the local-global principles above are applicable to any such field $F$.

In particular, Corollaries 3.2.18 and 3.4.2 can be stated independently from Berkovich's theory.

By Corollary 3.8 of [34], if $G_{1}$ and $G_{2}$ are linear algebraic groups such that $G_{1} \times G_{2}$ is a connected rational linear algebraic group, then all the results proven in this section remain true for $G_{1}$ and $G_{2}$.

### 3.3. Comparison of Overfields

The purpose of this section is to draw a comparison between one of the local-global principles we proved (Theorem 3.2.11) and the one proven in ([34, Theorem 3.7]). More precisely, we will interpret what the overfields appearing in [34] represent in the Berkovich setting, and show that [34, Theorem 3.7] can be obtained as a consequence of Theorem 3.2.11. When working over a "fine" enough model, we show that the converse is also true.

Throughout this section, for a non-Archimedean valued field $E$, we will denote by $E^{\circ}$ the ring of integers of $E, E^{\circ \circ}$ the maximal ideal of $E^{\circ}$, and by $\widetilde{E}$ the residue field of $E$.

Until the end of this section, we assume $k$ to be a complete discretely valued field.
3.3.1. Analytic generic fiber and the specialization map. We will be using the notion of generic fibre in the sense of Berkovich. To see the construction in more detail and under less constrictive conditions, we refer the reader to [7, Section 1] and [8, Section 1].

Let $\mathscr{X}=\operatorname{Spec} A$ be a flat finite type scheme over $k^{\circ}$. Then, the formal completion $\widehat{\mathscr{X}}$ of $\mathscr{X}$ along its special fiber is $\operatorname{Spf}(\widehat{A})$, where $\widehat{A}$ is a topologically finitely presented ring over $k^{\circ}$ (i.e. isomorphic to some $k^{\circ}\left\{T_{1}, \ldots, T_{n}\right\} / I$, where $I$ is a finitely generated ideal). Remark that $\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k$ is a strict $k$-affinoid algebra.

The analytic generic fiber of $\widehat{\mathscr{X}}$, denoted by $\widehat{\mathscr{X}}$, is defined to be $\mathcal{M}\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)$, where $\mathcal{M}(\cdot)$ denotes the Berkovich spectrum. There exists a specialization map $\pi: \widehat{\mathscr{X}_{\eta}} \rightarrow \widehat{\mathscr{X}_{s}}$
(often called reduction map in the litterature, which we avoid because of Subsection 1.4.7), where $\widehat{\mathscr{X}}$ is the special fiber of $\widehat{\mathscr{X}}$, which is anti-continuous, meaning the pre-image of a closed subset is open. We remark that $\widehat{\mathscr{X}_{s}}=\mathscr{X}_{s}$, where $\mathscr{X}_{s}$ is the special fiber of $\mathscr{X}$. Let us describe $\pi$ more explicitly.

There are embeddings $A \hookrightarrow \widehat{A} \hookrightarrow\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)^{\circ}$, where $\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)^{\circ}$ is the set of all elements $f$ of $\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k$ for which $|f|_{x} \leqslant 1$ for all $x \in \mathcal{M}\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)$ (if $\rho$ is the spectral seminorm on $\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k$, this is equivalent to asking that $\left.\rho(f) \leqslant 1\right)$. Let $x \in \mathcal{M}\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)$. This point then determines a bounded morphism $A \rightarrow \mathcal{H}(x)^{\circ}$, which induces an application $\varphi_{x}: A \otimes_{k^{\circ}} \widetilde{k} \rightarrow \widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)}$. The specialization map $\pi$ sends $x$ to $\operatorname{ker} \varphi_{x}$.

The following commutative diagram, where $\phi: \operatorname{Spec}\left(\widetilde{A \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k}\right) \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec}\left(A \otimes_{k^{\circ}} \widetilde{k}\right)$ is the canonical map, gives the relation between the specialization map and the reduction map from [ $\mathbf{6}$, Section 2.4]. The morphism $\phi$ is finite and dominant (see [11, 6.1.2 and 6.4.3] and $[68$, pg. 17]).


The construction above has nice gluing properties. Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a finite type scheme over $k^{\circ}$, and $\widehat{\mathscr{X}}$ its formal completion along the special fiber. Then, the analytic generic fiber $\widehat{\mathscr{X}_{\eta}}$ of $\widehat{\mathscr{X}}$ is the $k$-analytic space we obtain by gluing the analytic generic fibers of an open affine cover of the formal scheme $\widehat{\mathscr{X}}$. In general, $\widehat{\mathscr{X}_{\eta}}$ is a compact analytic domain of the Berkovich analytification $\mathscr{X}^{\text {an }}$ of $\mathscr{X}$. If $\mathscr{X}$ is proper, then $\mathscr{X}^{\text {an }}=\widehat{\mathscr{X}_{\eta}}$ (see [56, 2.2.2]). Similarly, there exists an anti-continuous specialization map $\pi$ : $\widehat{\mathscr{X}_{\eta}} \rightarrow \mathscr{X}_{s}$, where $\mathscr{X}_{s}$ is the special fiber of $\mathscr{X}$.

Recall $k$ is assumed to be discretely valued. A property we will need is the following:
Proposition 3.3.1. With the same notation as above, suppose $A$ is a normal domain. Then, $\widehat{A}=\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)^{\circ}$, and the finite morphism $\phi$ from the diagram above is a bijection.

Proof. Let us denote by $t$ a uniformizer of $k^{\circ}$, and by $I$ the ideal $t \widehat{A}$. Recall that $\widehat{A}$ is the completion of $A$ with respect to the ideal $t A$ (and is isomorphic to some $k^{\circ}\left\{T_{1}, T_{2}, \ldots, T_{n}\right\} / P$; remark that then $\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k$ is isomorphic to the $k$-affinoid algebra $\left.k\left\{T_{1}, T_{2}, \ldots, T_{n}\right\} / P\right)$.

Set $B=\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)^{\circ}$ and $J=\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)^{\circ \circ}$ - the elements $f$ of $\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k$ such that $|f|_{x}<1$ for all $x \in \mathcal{M}\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)\left(\right.$ i.e. $\rho(f)<1$, where the $\rho$ is the spectral norm on $\left.\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)$.

Remark that for any maximal ideal $m$ of $A, t \in m$ (i.e. the closed points of Spec $A$ are in the special fiber). This means that $t A$ is contained in the Jacobson radical of $A$. Considering this and the fact that $A$ is excellent and normal, by [26, 7.8.3.1], $\widehat{A}$ is also normal. At the same time, by $[\mathbf{1 1}, 6.1 .2,6.3 .4], B$ is the integral closure of $\widehat{A}$ in $\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{o}} k$. Since Frac $\widehat{A}=\operatorname{Frac} B$, we obtain $\widehat{A}=B$.

Let us look at the canonical map $A / t=\widehat{A} / I \rightarrow B / J$ inducing $\phi$. Let $|\cdot|$ be the norm on the affinoid algebra $\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k$.

Remark that $\sqrt{I}=J$ : let $x \in J$, so that $\rho(x)=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|x^{n}\right|^{1 / n}<1$, implying $\left|x^{n}\right| \rightarrow 0$, $n \rightarrow+\infty$. Thus, for large enough $n, x^{n} \in I$, so $J \subseteq \sqrt{I}$. The other containment is clear seeing as $\rho(\cdot) \leqslant|\cdot|$. This means that any prime ideal of $\widehat{A}$ contains $I$ if and only if it contains $J$, and thus that $\phi$ is a bijection.
3.3.2. The setup of HHK's [34]. Let us start by recalling HHK's framework (see [34, Notation 3.3]):

Notation 3.3.2. Let $T=k^{\circ} \underset{\sim}{\text { be }}$ a complete discrete valuation ring with uniformizer $t$, fraction field $k$, and residue field $\widetilde{k}$. Let $\mathscr{C}$ be a flat normal irreducible projective $T$-curve with function field $F$. Let us denote by $\mathscr{C}_{s}$ the special fiber of $\mathscr{C}$.

For any point $P \in \mathscr{C}_{s}$, set $R_{P}=\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{C}, P}$. Since $T$ is complete discretely valued, $R_{P}$ is an excellent ring. Let us denote by $\widehat{R_{P}}$ the completion of $R_{P}$ with respect to its maximal ideal. Since $R_{P}$ is normal and excellent, $\widehat{R_{P}}$ is also a domain. Set $F_{P}=$ Frac $\widehat{R_{P}}$.

Let $U$ be a proper subset of one of the irreducible components of $\mathscr{C}_{s}$. Set $R_{U}=\bigcap_{P \in U} \mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{C}, P}$. Let us denote by $\widehat{R_{U}}$ the $t$-adic completion of $R_{U}$. By [34, Notation 3.3], for any $Q \in U$, $\widehat{R_{U}} \subseteq \widehat{R_{Q}}$. Thus, $\widehat{R_{U}}$ is an integral domain. Set $F_{U}=$ Frac $\widehat{R_{U}}$.

Let $\mathscr{P}$ be a finite set of closed points of $\mathscr{C}_{s}$ containing all points at which distinct irreducible components of $\mathscr{C}_{s}$ meet. Let $\mathscr{U}$ be the set of all irreducible components of $\mathscr{C}_{s} \backslash \mathscr{P}$ (which here are also its connected componenets).

The following is the local-global principle proven by HHK in [34] and [35]:
Theorem 3.3.3 ([34, Theorem 3.7], [35, Theorem 9.1]). Let $G$ be a connected rational linear algebraic group over $F$ that acts strongly transitively on an $F$-variety $X$. The following statements are equivalent:
(1) $X(F) \neq \emptyset$;
(2) $X\left(F_{P}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $P \in \mathscr{P}$ and $X\left(F_{U}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $U \in \mathscr{U}$;
(3) $X\left(F_{Q}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $Q \in \mathscr{C}_{s}$.

The implication (1) $\Rightarrow(2)$ is immediate seeing as $F$ is embedded into $F_{P}$ and $F_{U}$ for all $P \in \mathscr{P}$ and $U \in \mathscr{U}$. Considering for any $U \in \mathscr{U}$ and any $Q \in U, F_{U} \subseteq F_{Q}$, we obtain that $(2) \Rightarrow(3)$.

We now proceed to show that the remaining implication $(3) \Rightarrow(1)$ is a consequence of Theorem 3.2.11. To do this, a comparison will be drawn between the fields $F_{Q}, Q \in \mathscr{C}_{s}$, and the ones appearing in Theorem 3.2.11.
3.3.3. The comparison. Let us denote by $C$ the Berkovich analytification of the generic fiber of $\mathscr{C}$. It is a normal irreducible projective $k$-analytic curve. By [6, Proposition 3.6.2], $\mathscr{M}(C)=F$, where $\mathscr{M}$ is the sheaf of meromorphic functions on $C$. Since $\mathscr{C}$ is projective, $C=\widehat{\mathscr{C}}_{\eta}$. Let $\pi: C \rightarrow \mathscr{C}_{s}$ be the specialization map.

Let $\mu$ be the generic point of one of the irreducible components of $\mathscr{C}_{s}$. Then, $\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{C}, \mu}$ is a discrete valuation ring with fraction field $F$, whose valuation extends that of $k$. Considering the residue field of $\mu$ is of transcendence degree one over $\widetilde{k}, \mu$ determines a unique type 2 point $x_{\mu}$ on the Berkovich curve $C$ (recall the classification of points in a curve, Definition 1.8.1). Moreover:

Lemma 3.3.4. Let $\mu$ be the generic point of one of the irreducible components of $\mathscr{C}_{s}$. Then, $\pi^{-1}(\mu)=\left\{x_{\mu}\right\}$.

Proof. Let $U=\operatorname{Spec} A$ be an open affine neighborhood of $\mu$ in $\mathscr{C}$. Since $\mathscr{C}$ is irreducible, we obtain that Frac $A=F$. By [7, pg. 541], $\pi^{-1}\left(U_{s}\right)=\widehat{U_{\eta}}$, and the restriction of $\pi$ on $\widehat{U}_{\eta}$ is the specialization map $\widehat{U}_{\eta} \rightarrow U_{s}$. Explicitly, we have $\pi: \mathcal{M}\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right) \rightarrow$ $\operatorname{Spec}\left(A \otimes_{k^{\circ}} \widetilde{k}\right)$, where $x \in \mathcal{M}\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)$ is sent to the kernel of the map $A \otimes_{k^{\circ}} \widetilde{k}=$ $A / k^{\circ \circ} A \rightarrow \widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)}$.

By construction, for any $x \in \pi^{-1}(\mu)$ and any $f \in A, f(\mu)=0$ if and only if $|f|_{x}<1$, and $f(\mu) \neq 0$ if and only if $|f|_{x}=1$. As a consequence, $|f|_{x_{\mu}}<1$ if and only if $|f|_{x}<1$, and $|f|_{x_{\mu}}=1$ if and only if $|f|_{x}=1$. This implies that $x$ and $x_{\mu}$ define the same norm on $A$ (and hence on $F$ ), so $x_{\mu}=x$ in $C$, and $\pi^{-1}(\mu)=\left\{x_{\mu}\right\}$.

Proposition 3.3.5. Let $\mu$ be the generic point of one of the irreducible components of $\mathscr{C}_{s}$. Set $\left\{x_{\mu}\right\}:=\pi^{-1}(\mu)$. Then, $F_{\mu}=\mathcal{H}\left(x_{\mu}\right)$. Let $X$ be an $F$-variety. If $X\left(F_{\mu}\right) \neq \emptyset$, then $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, x_{\mu}}\right) \neq \emptyset$.

Proof. Remark that $F_{\mu}=\operatorname{Frac} \widehat{\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{C}, \mu}}$ is the completion of $F$ with respect to the valuation $x_{\mu}$. Seeing as $x_{\mu}$ is of type $2, \mathcal{O}_{C, x_{\mu}}=\mathscr{M}_{C, x_{\mu}}$, and by Proposition 3.2.14, $F_{\mu}=\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C, x_{\mu}}}$ $=\mathcal{H}\left(x_{\mu}\right)$.

If $X$ is smooth or char $k=0$, we can conclude by Corollary 3.2.17.
Otherwise, the restriction morphism of the sheaf of meromorphic functions gives us Frac $\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{C}, \mu}=F=\mathscr{M}(C) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}_{C, x_{\mu}}$, so there exist embeddings $\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{C}, \mu} \subseteq \mathcal{O}_{C, x_{\mu}} \subseteq \mathcal{H}\left(x_{\mu}\right)$. Seeing as all elements of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{C}, \mu}$ have norm at most $1, R_{\mu}=\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{C}, \mu} \subseteq \mathcal{O}_{C, x_{\mu}}^{\circ}$ - the valuation ring of $\mathcal{O}_{C, x_{\mu}}$.

By the proof of [35, Proposition 5.8], $X\left(F_{\mu}\right) \neq \emptyset$ implies $X\left(\widehat{R_{\mu}}\right) \neq \emptyset$. The ring $R_{\mu}=\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{C}, \mu}$ is excellent, so by Artin's Approximation Theorem ( $\left[\mathbf{1}\right.$, Theorem 1.10]), $X\left(R_{\mu}^{h}\right) \neq$ $\emptyset$, where $R_{\mu}^{h}$ denotes the henselization of the local ring $R_{\mu}$. Seeing as $\mathcal{O}_{C, x_{\mu}}^{o}$ is Henselian $\left(\left[4\right.\right.$, Thm. 2.3.3, Prop. 2.4.3]), $R_{\mu} \subseteq R_{\mu}^{h} \subseteq \mathcal{O}_{C, x_{\mu}}^{\circ} \subseteq \mathscr{M}_{C, x_{\mu}}$. Consequently, $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, x_{\mu}}\right) \neq \emptyset$.

We recall that the specialization map is anti-continuous. For any analytic domain $U$ of $C$, let us denote $|\cdot|_{\text {sup }}:=\sup _{x \in U}|\cdot|_{x}$.

Proposition 3.3.6. Let $P$ be a closed point of $\mathscr{C}_{s}$. Then, $\widehat{R_{P}}=\mathcal{O}_{C}^{\circ}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right)$, where $\mathcal{O}^{\circ}$ is the sheaf of analytic functions $f$ such that $|f|_{\text {sup }} \leqslant 1$. Consequently, if $X\left(F_{P}\right) \neq \emptyset$, then $X\left(\mathscr{M}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$.

Proof. Let $V=\operatorname{Spec} A$ be an open integral affine neighborhood of $P$ in $\mathscr{C}$. As $\mathscr{C}$ is normal, so is $A$. Note that $P \in V_{s}$, where $V_{s}$ is the special fiber of $V$.

Let $\pi$ denote the specialization map correspoding to $\mathscr{C}$. By $c f .\left[\mathbf{7}\right.$, pg. 541], $\pi^{-1}(V)=\widehat{V_{\eta}}$ - the analytic generic fiber of $V$, and the restriction of $\pi$ to $\widehat{V}_{\eta}$ is the specialization map $\widehat{V}_{\eta} \rightarrow V_{s}$ of $V$. Thus, $\pi^{-1}(P) \subseteq \widehat{V}_{\eta}$. Let us come back to the commutative diagram 3:


Set $B=\left(\widehat{A} \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k\right)^{\circ}$. By Proposition 3.3.1, $\phi$ is a bijection, and $B=\widehat{A}$. Let $m_{P}$ be the maximal ideal of $A$ corresponding to the point $P$ on the special fiber, and $\widehat{m_{P}}$ the corresponding ideal in $\widehat{A}$, i.e. the completion of $m_{P}$ along the special fiber. Then, $\phi^{-1}(P)$ is a closed point of $\operatorname{Spec}\left(\widehat{A \otimes_{k^{\circ}} k}\right)$ corresponding to the maximal ideal $\widehat{m_{P}}$ of $B=\widehat{A}$.

Since $k^{\circ \circ} A \subseteq m_{P}, \widehat{A}^{m_{P}}=\widehat{\hat{A}}^{\widehat{m_{P}}}=\widehat{B}^{\widehat{m_{P}}}$, where the notation $\widehat{R}^{S}$ is used for the completion of a ring $R$ with respect to the topology induced by an ideal $S$.

As $V$ is reduced, so is its analytification $V^{\text {an }}$ ([21, Théorème 3.4]). Since $\widehat{V}_{\eta}$ is an analytic domain of $V^{\text {an }}$, it is reduced (see [21, Théorème 3.4]). By a theorem of Bosch (see [53, Theorem 3.1], [10, Theorem 5.8]),

$$
\widehat{B^{\widehat{m_{P}}}}=\mathcal{O}_{\widehat{V_{\eta}}}^{\circ}\left(r^{-1}\left(\phi^{-1}(P)\right)\right)=\mathcal{O}_{\widehat{V_{\eta}}}^{\circ}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right) .
$$

As $P$ is a closed point of $\mathscr{C}_{s}$ (resp. $V_{s}$ ), $\pi^{-1}(P)$ is an open subset of $C$ (resp. $\widehat{V_{\eta}}$ ), implying $\mathcal{O}_{\widehat{V}_{\eta}}^{\circ}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right)=\mathcal{O}_{C}^{\circ}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right)$.

As a consequence,

$$
\widehat{R_{P}}=\widehat{\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{C}, P}}=\widehat{A}^{m_{P}}=\widehat{B^{m_{P}}}=\mathcal{O}_{C}^{\circ}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right) .
$$

This implies that $F_{P}=\operatorname{Frac} \mathcal{O}^{\circ}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right) \subseteq \mathscr{M}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right)$. The last part of the statement is now immediate.

We are now able to state and prove the following argument, thus concluding the proof that HHK's local-global principle (Theorem 3.3.3) can be obtained as a consequence of Theorem 3.2.11.

Proposition 3.3.7. Using the same notation as in Theorem 3.3.3, (3) $\Rightarrow$ (1).
Proof. Let $x$ be any point of $C$. Recall $\pi$ denotes the specialization map $C \rightarrow \mathscr{C}_{s}$.
(1) If $\pi(x)=\mu \in \mathscr{C}_{s}$ is the generic point of one of the irreducible components of $\mathscr{C}_{s}$, then by Proposition 3.3.5, $X\left(F_{\mu}\right) \neq \emptyset$ implies $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, x}\right) \neq \emptyset$.
(2) If $\pi(x)=P \in \mathscr{C}_{s}$ is a closed point, by Proposition 3.3.6, $F_{P} \subseteq \mathscr{M}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right)$. Since $x \in \pi^{-1}(P)$ and $\pi^{-1}(P)$ is open, we obtain $\mathscr{M}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right) \subseteq \mathscr{M}_{\pi^{-1}(P), x}=\mathscr{M}_{C, x}$. Hence, $X\left(F_{P}\right) \neq \emptyset$ implies $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, x}\right) \neq \emptyset$.
Finally, seeing as $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in C$, by Theorem 3.2.11, $X(F) \neq \emptyset$.
Lastly, using Ducros' work on semi-stable reduction in the analytic setting (see [20], in particular Chapter 6), we can say something in the other direction as well:

Proposition 3.3.8. Let $F$ be a finitely generated field extension of $k$ of transcendence degree 1. Let $C$ be the normal irreducible projective Berkovich $k$-analytic curve for which $F=\mathscr{M}(C)$. Let $X / F$ be a variety. Then, there exists a flat normal irreducible projective model $\mathscr{C}^{\prime}$ over $T=k^{\circ}$ of $F$, such that

$$
X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } x \in C \Rightarrow X\left(F_{P}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } P \in \mathscr{C}_{s}^{\prime}
$$

where $F_{P}=\widehat{\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{C}}, P}$, , and $\mathscr{C}_{s}^{\prime}$ is the special fiber of $\mathscr{C}^{\prime}$.
Consequently, a local-global principle with respect to the overfields $F_{P}, P \in \mathscr{C}_{s}^{\prime}$, implies a local-global principle with respect to the $\mathscr{M}_{x}, x \in C$.

Proof. Suppose $X\left(\mathscr{M}_{x}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $x \in C$. As the analytification of an algebraic curve, $C$ is strict, so the strict affinoid domains form a basis of neighborhoods ([6, Proposition 2.2.3(iii)]). Taking into account $C$ is compact, there exists a finite cover $\mathcal{U}$ of $C$ such that:
(1) for any $U \in \mathcal{U}, U$ is a connected strict affinoid domain in $C$;
(2) $\bigcup_{U \in \mathcal{U}} \operatorname{Int}(U)=C$;
(3) for any $U \in \mathcal{U}, X(\mathscr{M}(U)) \neq \emptyset$.

Let $S$ be the set of all boundary points of the elements of $\mathcal{U}$. By construction, $S$ is a finite set of type 2 points.

Let us show that $S$ is a vertex set of $C$ using [ $\mathbf{2 0}$, Théorème 6.3.15] (see [ $\mathbf{2 0}, 6.3 .17$ ] for the definition of a vertex set, which is called ensemble sommital there). Since $C$ is projective (implying boundaryless) and irreducible, conditions $\alpha$ ), $\beta$ ) and $\gamma$ ) of [ $\mathbf{2 0}$, Théorème 6.3.15 (ii)] are satisfied. Finally, condition $\delta$ ) is a consequence of the fact that $S$ contains only type 2 points (see [20, Commentaire 6.3.16]).

By $[\mathbf{2 0}, 6.3 .23]$, this implies the existence of an irreducible projective model $\mathscr{C}^{\prime}$ of $F$ over $T$ with special fiber $\mathscr{C}_{s}^{\prime}$, and specialization map $\pi: C \rightarrow \mathscr{C}_{s}^{\prime}$, such that $\pi$ induces a bijection between $S$ and the generic points of the irreducible components of $\mathscr{C}_{s}^{\prime}$. Furthermore, by [20, 6.3.9.1], since $k$ is discretely valued and $C$ reduced, $\mathscr{C}^{\prime}$ is locally topologically finitely presented. Finally, by $[\mathbf{2 0}, 6.3 .10]$, since $C$ is normal, the model $\mathscr{C}^{\prime}$ is flat and normal.

By Proposition 3.3.6, for any closed point $P \in \mathscr{C}^{\prime}, \widehat{\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{G}}, P}=\mathcal{O}^{o}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right)$, where $\mathcal{O}^{o}$ is the sheaf of holomorphic functions $f$, such that $|f|_{\text {sup }} \leqslant 1$. In particular, remark that if $V$ is an affinoid domain of $C$, since all holomorphic functions are bounded on $V$, we have $\mathcal{O}^{o}(V) \subseteq \mathcal{O}(V)$. This implies Frac $\mathcal{O}^{o}(V) \subseteq \mathscr{M}(V)$. Let $\frac{f}{g} \in \mathscr{M}(V)$, with $f, g \in \mathcal{O}(V)$. Let $\alpha \in k$ be such that $|\alpha f|_{\text {sup }},|\alpha g|_{\text {sup }} \leqslant 1$ (it suffices to choose $\alpha$ so that $|f|_{\text {sup }},|g|_{\text {sup }} \leqslant\left|\alpha^{-1}\right|$, which is possible seeing as $k$ is non-trivially valued). Then, $\frac{f}{g}=\frac{\alpha f}{\alpha g} \in \operatorname{Frac} \mathcal{O}^{\circ}(V)$, implying $\mathscr{M}(V)=\operatorname{Frac} \mathcal{O}^{o}(V)$. By construction, there exists $U \in \mathcal{U}$ such that $\pi^{-1}(P) \subseteq U$. In particular, $\mathscr{M}(U)=\operatorname{Frac} \mathcal{O}^{o}(U) \subseteq \operatorname{Frac}\left(\mathcal{O}^{\circ}\left(\pi^{-1}(P)\right)\right)=F_{P}$, so $X\left(F_{P}\right) \neq \emptyset$.

If $P$ is a generic point of $\mathscr{C}_{s}^{\prime}$, then $\pi^{-1}(P)$ is a single type 2 point $x_{P}$, and by Proposition 3.3.5, $\mathscr{M}_{x_{P}} \subseteq \mathcal{H}\left(x_{P}\right)=F_{P}$. Thus $X\left(F_{P}\right) \neq \emptyset$.

Since $\pi$ is surjective ([53, Lemma 4.11]), this implies that $X\left(F_{P}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $P \in \mathscr{C}_{s}^{\prime}$.

### 3.4. Applications to Quadratic Forms and the $u$-invariant

We give applications to quadratic forms, and in particular, to the $u$-invariant of function fields. The results presented in this section generalize those of [34, Section 4].
3.4.1. Local-global principles for quadratic forms. The main example of a setting satisfying the conditions we have seen so far (e.g. see Theorem 3.2.11) are quadratic forms.

We can apply Theorem 3.2 .11 to the projective variety $X$ defined by a quadratic form $q$ over $F$. In [34, Theorem 4.2], HHK show that for a regular quadratic form $q$ over $F$, if $\operatorname{char}(F) \neq 2, S O(q)$ - the special orthogonal group of $q$, acts strongly transitively on $X$ when $\operatorname{dim} q \neq 2$, so in that case we can take $G=S O(q)$. If $\operatorname{dim} q=2$, then $X$ may not be connected and consequently the group $S O(q)$ doesn't necessarily act strongly transitively on $X$ (see [34, Example 4.4] and the proof of [34, Theorem 4.2]).

We will say that quadratic form $q$ defined over $F$ is isotropic over a field extension $K / F$ if there exists a non-zero $v$ over $K$ such that $q(v)=0$. In other words, $q$ is isotropic over a field $K$ if and only if the projetive variety defined by $q$ has a $K$-rational point.

Recall that by Theorem 1.8.15, an irreducible compact $k$-analytic curve is either projective or an affinoid space.

Theorem 3.4.1. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $C$ be a compact irreducible normal $k$-analytic curve. If $\left|k^{\times}\right|=\{1\}$, assume $C$ is projective. Set $F=\mathscr{M}(C)$. Suppose $\operatorname{char}(F) \neq 2$. Let $q$ be a quadratic form over $F$ of dimension different from 2 .
(1) The quadratic form $q$ is isotropic over $F$ if and only if it is isotropic over $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ for all $x \in C$.
(2) Let $\mathcal{U}$ be an open cover of $C$. Then, $q$ is isotropic over $F$ if and only if it is isotropic over $\mathscr{M}(U)$ for all $U \in \mathcal{U}$.

Proof. By Witt decomposition ([46, I.4.1]), $q=q_{t} \perp q_{r}$, where $q_{r}$ is regular and $q_{t}$ is totally isotropic. If $q_{t} \neq 0$, then $q$ is isotropic, so we may assume that $q$ is regular. Consequently, Theorem 3.2.9, and Theorem 3.2.11 are applicable, proving the statement.

Corollary 3.4.2. Let $k$ be a complete non-Archimedean valued field. Let $C$ be a compact irreducible normal $k$-analytic curve. Set $F=\mathscr{M}(C)$. Suppose char $(F) \neq 2$. Let $q$ be a quadratic form over $F$ of dimension different from 2. The following local-global principles hold:
(1) If $C$ is affinoid and $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}, q$ is isotropic over $F$ if and only if it is isotropic over all completions $F_{v}, v \in V_{\mathcal{O}(C)}(F)$, of $F$.
(2) If $C$ is projective, $q$ is isotropic over $F$ if and only if it is isotropic over all completions $F_{v}, v \in V(F)$, of $F$.

Proof. If $k$ is trivially valued, then the trivial valuation $v_{0}$ of $F$ is in $V_{\mathcal{O}(C)}(F)$ (resp. $V(F))$, and since $F_{v_{0}}=F$, the statement is clear in this case.

Otherwise, by Witt decomposition ([46, I.4.1]), $q=q_{t} \perp q_{r}$, where $q_{r}$ is regular and $q_{t}$ is totally isotropic. If $q_{t} \neq 0$, then $q$ is isotropic. Otherwise, $q$ is regular, so smooth, and we conclude by Corollary 3.2.18.
3.4.2. Local Calculations. In view of the local-global principle we proved for quadratic forms (Theorem 3.4.1), we now want to find sufficient conditions under which there is local isotropy. To do this, we will need to put further restrictions on the base field. Throughout this section, we will suppose the dimension of $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$as a $\mathbb{Q}$-vector space (i.e. the rational rank of $\left|k^{\times}\right|$) is $n \in \mathbb{Z}$. In the special case that $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module (e.g. if $k$ is a discretely valued field), the sufficient conditions for local isotropy can be refined. The class of such fields is quite broad, especially when it comes to arithmetic questions: if we work over a complete ultrametric base field $k$ satisfying this condition, then for any $k$-analytic space and any of its points $x$, the field $\mathcal{H}(x)$ also satisfies it.

For any valued field $E$, we denote by $E^{\circ}$ its ring of integers, by $E^{\circ \circ}$ the corresponding maximal ideal, and by $\widetilde{E}$ its residue field.

For the following two propositions, the case of characteristic 2 can be treated uniformly with the general one. Afterwards, we will restrict to residual characteristic different from 2.

Proposition 3.4.3. Let $l$ be a valued field. Suppose $\left|l^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of finite rank $n$. Let $L$ be a valued field extension of $l$. Let $q$ be a non-zero diagonal quadratic form
over L. Suppose for any non-zero coefficient a of $q,|a| \in\left|l^{\times}\right|$. There exists a family $Q$ of at most $2^{n}$ quadratic forms with coefficients in $\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$, such that $q$ is L-isometric to $\perp_{\sigma \in Q} C_{\sigma} \cdot \sigma$, where $C_{\sigma} \in L^{\times}$for any $\sigma \in Q$.

Proof. Let us fix $\pi_{1}, \pi_{2}, \ldots, \pi_{n} \in l^{\times}$, such that their norms form a basis of the $\mathbb{Z}$ module $\left|l^{\times}\right|$. Set $\mathcal{A}=\left\{\prod_{i=1}^{n} \pi_{i}^{\delta_{i}} \mid \delta_{i} \in\{0,1\}\right\}$. For any coefficient $a$ of $q$, let $p_{1}, p_{2}, \ldots, p_{n} \in \mathbb{Z}$ be such that $|a|=\prod_{i=1}^{n}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{p_{i}}$. Then, there exist $v_{a} \in\left(L^{o}\right)^{\times}$and $s_{a} \in \mathcal{A}$, such that $a \equiv v_{a} s_{a} \bmod \left(L^{\times}\right)^{2}$. Consequently, for any $A \in \mathcal{A}$, there exists a diagonal quadratic form $\sigma_{A}$ with coefficients in $\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$, such that $q$ is $L$-isometric to $\perp_{A \in \mathcal{A}} A \cdot \sigma_{A}$.

The following is the analogue of Proposition 3.4.3 in a more general case.
Proposition 3.4.4. Let $l$ be a valued field, such that $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{|l \times|}$ equals an integer $n$. Let $L$ be a valued field extension of $l$. Let $q$ be a non-zero diagonal quadratic form over L. Suppose for any non-zero coefficient a of $q,|a| \in \sqrt{\left|l^{\times}\right|}$. Then, there exists a family $Q$ of at most $2^{n+1}$ quadratic forms with coefficients in $\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$, such that $q$ is $L$-isometric to $\perp_{\sigma \in Q} C_{\sigma} \cdot \sigma$, where $C_{\sigma} \in L^{\times}$for any $\sigma \in Q$.

Proof. To ease the notation, let us start by introducing the following:
Notation 3.4.5. Let $M$ be a multiplicative $\mathbb{Z}$-module, such that the divisible closure $\sqrt{M}$ of $M$ as a group is a finite dimensional $\mathbb{Q}$-vector space. Set $n=\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{M}$. Set $M^{2}=\left\{m^{2}: m \in M\right\}$.

There exist $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{n} \in M$, such that for any $t \in M$, there exist unique $p_{1}, p_{2}, \ldots, p_{n} \in \mathbb{Q}$, for which $t=\prod_{i=1}^{n} t_{i}^{p_{i}}$. Let us fix such elements $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{n}$.

In the particular situation that is of interest to us, $M=\left|l^{\times}\right|$, and there exist $\pi_{1}, \pi_{2}, \ldots, \pi_{n} \in l$, with $\left|\pi_{i}\right|=t_{i}$, such that for any $\epsilon \in \sqrt{\left|l^{\times}\right|}$, there exist unique $p_{1}, p_{2}, \ldots, p_{n} \in \mathbb{Q}$, for which $\epsilon=\prod_{i=1}^{n}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{p_{i}}$. Let us fix such elements $\pi_{1}, \pi_{2}, \cdots, \pi_{n}$.

Definition 3.4.6. Let $\epsilon \in M$. Suppose $\epsilon=\prod_{i=1}^{n} t_{i}^{\frac{s_{i}}{r_{i}}}$, for $\frac{s_{i}}{r_{i}} \in \mathbb{Q}$ with $s_{i}$, $r_{i}$ coprime, $i=1,2, \ldots, n$.
(1) Let $r$ be the least common multiple of $r_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$. We will say $r$ is the order of $\epsilon$.
(2) Let $\frac{s_{i}}{r_{i}}=\frac{s_{i}^{\prime}}{r}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$. If there exists $i_{0}$, such that $s_{i_{0}}^{\prime}=1$, then $t_{i_{0}}$ will be said to be a base of $\epsilon$.
Let $\epsilon \in M$, and suppose $\epsilon=\prod_{i=1}^{n} t_{i}^{p_{i}}$, for $p_{i} \in \mathbb{Q}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$. Let $\alpha$ be the order of $\epsilon$.

Lemma 3.4.7. If $\alpha$ is odd, then for any $i=1,2, \ldots, n$, there exist $\delta_{i} \in\{0,1\}$, such that $\epsilon \equiv \prod_{i=1}^{n} t_{i}^{\delta_{i}} \bmod M^{2}$.

Proof. Remark that since $\alpha$ is odd, $\epsilon \equiv \epsilon^{\alpha} \bmod M^{2}$, and $\epsilon^{\alpha}=\prod_{i=1}^{n} t_{i}^{s_{i}}$, with $s_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}$ for all $i$. Let $s_{i}=2 s_{i}^{\prime}+\delta_{i}$, where $s_{i}^{\prime} \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\delta_{i} \in\{0,1\}$. Then, $\epsilon \equiv \prod_{i=1}^{n} t_{i}^{\delta_{i}} \bmod M^{2}$.

Lemma 3.4.8. If $\alpha$ is even, then there exist $m \in M, x_{i}, y \in \mathbb{Z}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, with $y>0$, satisfying:
(1) $\epsilon \equiv m \bmod M^{2}$;
(2) $m=\prod_{i=1}^{n} t_{i}^{x_{i} / 2^{y}}$;
(3) there exists $i_{0} \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$, such that $x_{i_{0}}=1$.

Remark that $t_{i_{0}}$ is a base of $m$ and its order is $2^{y}$.
Proof. Let $\alpha=2^{y} \cdot z$, with $z$ odd and $y>0$. Then, $\epsilon \equiv \epsilon^{z} \bmod M^{2}$, and $\left(\epsilon^{z}\right)^{2^{y}}=$ $\prod_{i=1}^{n} t_{i}^{e_{i}}$, with $e_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$. Furthermore, there exists $i_{0} \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$, such that $e_{i_{0}}$ is odd.

Seeing as $\left(2^{y}, e_{i_{0}}\right)=1$, there exist $A, B \in \mathbb{Z}$, with $A$ odd, such that $A e_{i_{0}}+2^{y} B=1$. Then, $\epsilon^{z} \equiv \epsilon^{z} \cdot\left(\epsilon^{z}\right)^{A-1} \bmod M^{2}$, and $\epsilon^{z A}=t_{i_{0}}^{1 / 2^{y}-B} \cdot \prod_{i \neq i_{0}} t_{i}^{A e_{i} / 2^{y}}$. Hence, there exists $m_{B}^{\prime} \in M$, such that $\epsilon^{z A} \equiv m_{B}^{\prime} \bmod M^{2}$, and

- $m_{B}^{\prime}=t_{i_{0}}^{1 / 2^{y}} \prod_{i \neq i_{0}} t_{i}^{A e_{i} / 2^{y}}$ if $B$ is even;
- $m_{B}^{\prime}=t_{i_{0}}^{1 / 2^{y}+1} \prod_{i \neq i_{0}} t_{i}^{A e_{i} / 2^{y}}$ if $B$ is odd.

If $B$ is odd, $m_{B}^{\prime \prime}:=m_{B}^{\prime} \cdot m_{B}^{\prime}{ }^{2 y} t_{i_{0}}^{-2-2^{y}} \equiv m_{B}^{\prime} \bmod M^{2}$, and $m_{B}^{\prime \prime}=t_{i_{0}}^{1 / 2^{y}} \prod_{i \neq i_{0}} t_{i}{ }^{\frac{A e_{i}}{2^{y}}\left(2^{y}+1\right)}$.
Consequently, in either case, there exist $m \in M$ and $x_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}$, for $i=1,2, \ldots n$, with $x_{i_{0}}=1$, such that $\epsilon \equiv m \bmod M^{2}$, and $m=\prod_{i=1}^{n} t_{i}^{x_{i} / 2^{y}}$.

For $\varepsilon \in L$, such that $|\varepsilon| \in \sqrt{\left|l^{\times}\right|}$, we will say that the order of $|\varepsilon|$ is the order of $\varepsilon$. If $\left|\pi_{i_{0}}\right|$ is a base of $|\varepsilon|$, we will say $\pi_{i_{0}}$ is a base of $\varepsilon$. By applying the last two lemmas to the valued field $L$, we obtain:

Corollary 3.4.9. Let $\varepsilon \in L^{\times}$. Suppose $|\varepsilon|=\prod_{i=1}^{n}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{p_{i}}$ for $p_{i} \in \mathbb{Q}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$.
(1) If the order of $|\varepsilon|$ is odd, then for any $i=1,2, \ldots, n$, there exists $\delta_{i} \in\{0,1\}$, such that $\varepsilon \equiv \prod_{i=1}^{n} \pi_{i}^{\delta_{i}} \bmod \left(L^{\times}\right)^{2}\left(L^{o}\right)^{\times}$.
(2) If the order of $|\varepsilon|$ is even, then there exist $\varepsilon^{\prime} \in L^{\times}, x_{i}, y \in \mathbb{Z}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, with $y>0$, satisfying:
(a) $\varepsilon \equiv \varepsilon^{\prime} \bmod \left(L^{\times}\right)^{2}\left(L^{o}\right)^{\times}$;
(b) $\left|\varepsilon^{\prime}\right|=\prod_{i=1}^{n}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{x_{i} / 2^{y}}$;
(c) there exists $i_{0} \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$, such that $x_{i_{0}}=1$.

We immediately obtain as a by-product of the proof:
Corollary 3.4.10. Let $\varepsilon \in L^{\times}$, such that $|\varepsilon| \in \sqrt{\left|l^{\times}\right|}$. Suppose the order of $|\varepsilon|$ is $2^{\nu}$, so that there exist $\nu_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, such that $|\varepsilon|=\prod_{i=1}^{n}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{\nu_{i} / 2^{\nu}}$. If $\nu_{i^{\prime}}$ is odd for some $i^{\prime}$, then there exists $\varepsilon^{\prime} \in L^{\times}$, such that $\varepsilon \equiv \varepsilon^{\prime} \bmod \left(L^{\times}\right)^{2}\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$, and $\left|\pi_{i^{\prime}}\right|$ is a base of $\left|\varepsilon^{\prime}\right|$.

Let $q_{1}$ (resp. $q_{2}$ ) be the part of $q$ whose coefficients have odd (resp. even) order. We remark that $q_{1}, q_{2}$ are diagonal quadratic forms over $L$, and that $q=q_{1} \perp q_{2}$.

Decomposition of $q_{1}$ : Set $\mathcal{A}=\left\{\prod_{i=1}^{n} \pi_{i}^{\delta_{i}} \mid \delta_{i} \in\{0,1\}\right\}$. Let $e$ be any coefficient of $q_{1}$. By Corollary 3.4.9 (1), there exist $u_{e} \in\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$and $A_{e} \in \mathcal{A}$, such that $e \equiv u_{e} \cdot A_{e} \bmod \left(L^{\times}\right)^{2}$. Consequently, for any $A \in \mathcal{A}$, there exists a diagonal quadratic form $\sigma_{A}$ with coefficients in $\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$, such that $q_{1}$ is $L$-isometric to $\perp_{A \in \mathcal{A}} A \cdot \sigma_{A}$.

Decomposition of $q_{2}$ : We first need an auxiliary result, which requires the following:
Definition 3.4.11. Let $\varepsilon \in L^{\times}$be such that there exist $p_{i} \in \mathbb{Q}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, for which $|\varepsilon|=\prod_{i=1}^{n}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{p_{i}}$. Let $I \subseteq\{0,1 \ldots, n\}$, such that $\left\{i: p_{i} \neq 0\right\} \subseteq I$. We will say that $\varepsilon$ is given in $|I|$ parameters, where $|I|$ is the cardinality of $I$, or that $\varepsilon$ is given in parameters over $I$.

Notice that $a \in L$ is given in 0 parameters if and only if $a \in\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$.

Lemma 3.4.12. Let $\tau$ be a diagonal quadratic form over $L$ with coefficients of order either 1 or an even number. Let $I \subseteq\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$, with $1 \leqslant|I|=m \leqslant n$, such that the coefficients of $\tau$ are given in parameters over I. Then, there exist:

- $J \subseteq I$, with $|J|=m-1$,
- $x_{1}, x_{2} \in L^{\times}$,
- diagonal quadratic forms $\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}$ over $L$ with coefficients of order either 1 or an even number and in parameters over $J$,
such that $\tau$ is L-isometric to $x_{1} \tau_{1} \perp x_{2} \tau_{2}$.
Proof. Roughly, the idea is to find some $i_{0}$ and a partition $A_{j}, j=1,2$, of the set of coefficients, for which there exist $x_{j} \in L^{\times}$, satisfying: if $a \in A_{j}$, there exists $B_{a} \in L^{\times}$, such that, modulo squares, $a=x_{j} \cdot B_{a}$, and $\left|B_{a}\right|=\prod_{i \neq i_{0}}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{p_{i, a}}, p_{i, a} \in \mathbb{Q}$. In what follows, we find suitable representatives of the coefficients modulo squares, from which we can read the factorization $x_{j} \cdot B_{a}$.

Without loss of generality, let us assume that $I=\{1,2, \ldots, m\}$. Suppose the coefficients of $\tau$ are all of order 1 . If they are given in zero parameters, the statement is clear. Otherwise, suppose that there is a coefficient given over a set of parameters containing $t_{1}$.

Let $d$ be any coefficient of the quadratic form. There exist $s_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, such that $|d|=\prod_{i=1}^{n}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{s_{i}}$. As a consequence, there exist $d^{\prime} \in L^{\times}$and $s_{i}^{\prime} \in \mathbb{Z}, i=2, \ldots, n$, for which $d \equiv d^{\prime} \bmod \left(L^{\times}\right)^{2}\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$, and either $\left|d^{\prime}\right|=\left.\prod_{i=2}^{n}\left|\pi_{i}\right|\right|^{s_{i}^{\prime}}$ or $\left|d^{\prime}\right|=\left|\pi_{1}\right| \cdot \prod_{i=2}^{n}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{s_{i}^{\prime}}$. Hence, there exist diagonal quadratic forms $\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}$, whose coefficients are all of order 1 , in parameters over $\{2,3, \ldots, m\}$, such that $\tau$ is $L$-isometric to $\pi_{1} \tau_{1} \perp \tau_{2}$.

Suppose there exists at least one coefficient of $\tau$ of even order. Let $\tau^{\prime}$ be the quadratic form obtained from $\tau$ by:
(1) leaving the coefficients of order 1 intact;
(2) applying Corollary 3.4.9 (2) to the coefficients of even order to substitute them by elements of $L^{\times}$that satisfy properties 2 and 3 of the lemma.
We remark that due to the proof of Corollary 3.4.9 (2) (i.e. Lemma 3.4.8), the set of parameters over which the coefficients of $\tau^{\prime}$ are given doesn't change. The quadratic form $\tau^{\prime}$ is $L$-isometric to $\tau$. Let us fix $a^{\prime}$, one of the coefficients of $\tau^{\prime}$ with largest order. Suppose the order of $a^{\prime}$ is $2^{\alpha^{\prime}}$. Without loss of generality, we may assume that $\pi_{1}$ is a base of $a^{\prime}$. For $i=2, \ldots, m$, let $\alpha_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}$ be such that $\left|a^{\prime}\right|=\left|\pi_{1}\right|^{1 / 2^{\alpha^{\prime}}} \cdot \prod_{i=2}^{m}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{\alpha_{i} / 2^{\alpha^{\prime}}}$.

Let $c$ be any other coefficient of $\tau^{\prime}$. Let $\pi_{i_{0}}$ be a base of $c$, and $2^{\gamma}, \gamma \geqslant 0$, its order. For $i=1,2, \ldots, m$, let $\gamma_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}$ be such that $|c|=\prod_{i=1}^{m}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{\gamma_{i} / 2^{\gamma}}$.
 $\left|c^{\prime}\right|=\left|\pi_{1}\right| \cdot \prod_{i=2}^{m}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{\frac{\gamma_{i}+\alpha_{i}\left(2 \gamma-\gamma_{1}\right)}{2 \gamma}}$.

- Suppose $\alpha^{\prime}=\gamma$ and $\gamma_{1}$ is odd. By Corollary 3.4.10, there exist $\alpha_{i}^{\prime} \in \mathbb{Z}, i=$ $2,3, \ldots, n$, and $c^{\prime \prime} \in L^{\times}$of order $2^{\alpha^{\prime}}$, having $\pi_{1}$ as a base, such that $c^{\prime \prime} \equiv$ $c \bmod \left(L^{\times}\right)^{2}\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$and $\left|c^{\prime \prime}\right|=\left|\pi_{1}\right|^{1 / 2^{\alpha^{\prime}}} \cdot \prod_{i=2}^{m}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{\alpha_{i}^{\prime} / 2^{\alpha^{\prime}}}$.
- Suppose $\alpha^{\prime}=\gamma$ and $\gamma_{1}$ is even. Let $\gamma_{1}^{\prime} / 2^{\delta}$ be the reduced form of $\gamma_{1} / 2^{\gamma}$, meaning $\gamma_{1}^{\prime}$ is odd. Set $c^{\prime \prime \prime}=c \cdot a^{\left(2^{\delta}-\gamma_{1}^{\prime}\right) \cdot 2^{\alpha^{\prime}-\delta}}$. Then, $c^{\prime \prime \prime} \equiv c \bmod \left(L^{\times}\right)^{2}\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$, and $\left|c^{\prime \prime \prime}\right|=\left|\pi_{1}\right| \cdot \prod_{i=2}^{m}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{\frac{\gamma_{i}+\alpha_{i}\left(2 \gamma-\gamma_{1}\right)}{2 \gamma}}$.
To summarize, there exist $\bar{c} \in L^{\times}$and $\epsilon_{2}, \cdots, \epsilon_{m} \in \mathbb{Z}$, such that $c \equiv \bar{c} \bmod \left(L^{\times}\right)^{2}\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$, and either $|\bar{c}|=\left|\pi_{1}\right|^{1 / 2^{\alpha}} \cdot \prod_{i=2}^{m}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{\mid \epsilon_{i} / 2^{\alpha^{\prime}}}=\left|a^{\prime}\right| \cdot \prod_{i=2}^{m}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{\frac{\epsilon_{i}-\alpha_{i}}{2^{\alpha^{\prime}}}}$ or $|\bar{c}|=\left|\pi_{1}\right| \cdot \prod_{i=2}^{m}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{\epsilon_{i} / 2^{\alpha^{\prime}}}$.

Therefore, there exist diagonal quadratic forms $\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}$ over $L$, such that $\tau \cong \pi_{1} \tau_{1} \perp a^{\prime} \tau_{2}$, and for any coefficient $h$ of $\tau_{1}$ or $\tau_{2}$, the order of $h$ is either 1 or an even integer. Furthermore, $h$ is with parameters over $\{2,3, \ldots, m\}$.

Using induction, an immediate consequence of Lemma 3.4.12 is that there exists a family $T$ of $2^{n}$ quadratic forms with coefficients in $\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$, such that $\tau$ is $L$-isometric to $\perp_{\sigma \in T} B_{\sigma} \cdot \sigma$, where $B_{\sigma} \in L^{\times}$for any $\sigma \in T$.

Finally, by combining the decomposition results of $q_{1}$ and $q_{2}$, we obtain the statement of Proposition 3.4.4.

The following framework corresponds to Berkovich curves:
Setting 3.4.13. Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $k \subseteq R$ be a Henselian valuation ring with maximal ideal $m_{R}$, and fraction field $F_{R}=\operatorname{Frac} R$. Set $L^{\prime}=R / m_{R}$, and suppose it is endowed with a valuation making it a Henselian (called quasicomplete in [4]) valued field extension of $k$. Let $L / L^{\prime}$ be an immediate Henselian extension. Set $t=$ $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\left|L^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}\right)=\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\left|L^{\prime \times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}\right)$ and $s=\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{L}=\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{L}^{\prime}$. Suppose $s+t \leqslant 1$.

The motivation behind this setup is:
Example 3.4.14. Let $C$ be any $k$-analytic curve, and $x \in C$ any point. The hypotheses of the setting above are satisfied for $R=\mathcal{O}_{x}, F_{R}=\mathscr{M}_{x}, L^{\prime}=\kappa(x)$, and $L=\mathcal{H}(x)$.

For any quadratic form $\sigma$ with coefficients in $R$, let us denote by $\sigma_{L}$ (resp. $\sigma_{L^{\prime}}$ ) its image over $L$ (resp. $L^{\prime}$ ).

We recall:
Definition 3.4.15. Let $K$ be a field.
(1) [Kaplansky] The $u$-invariant of $K$, denoted by $u(K)$, is the maximal dimension of anisotropic quadratic forms over $K$. We say that $u(K)=\infty$ if there exist anisotropic quadratic forms over $K$ of arbitrarily large dimension.
(2) [HHK] The strong $u$-invariant of $K$, denoted by $u_{s}(K)$, is the smallest real number $m$, such that:

- $u(E) \leqslant m$ for all finite field extensions $E / K$;
- $\frac{1}{2} u(E) \leqslant m$ for all finitely generated field extensions $E / K$ of transcendence degree 1 .
We say that $u_{s}(K)=\infty$ if there exist such field extensions $E$ of arbitrarily large $u$-invariant.
Notation 3.4.16. From now on, let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field, such that $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$equals an integer $n$. Also, suppose char $\widetilde{k} \neq 2$.

Proposition 3.4.17. Let $L / k$ be a valued field extension, such that $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\left|L^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right|\right.$ $\left.\otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}\right)=0$ and $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{L}=0$. Let $\tau$ be a quadratic form over $L$, with $\operatorname{dim} \tau>2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.
(1) Suppose $L$ is Henselian. Then, $\tau$ is isotropic.
(2) Under the same hypotheses as in Setting 3.4.13, let $q$ be a diagonal quadratic form over $R$, such that $q_{L}=\tau$. Then, $q$ is isotropic over $F_{R}$.

Proof. Since $\operatorname{char}(L) \neq 2$, we may assume that $\tau$ is a diagonal quadratic form. Seeing as $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{\left|L^{\times}\right|}=n$, by Proposition 3.4.4 there exists a set $Q$ of at most $2^{n+1}$ quadratic
forms with coefficients in $\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$, such that $\tau$ is $L$-isometric to $\perp_{\sigma \in Q} C_{\sigma} \cdot \sigma$, with $C_{\sigma} \in L^{\times}$ for every $\sigma \in Q$.

Since $\operatorname{dim} \tau>2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$, there exists $\tau^{\prime} \in Q$, such that $\operatorname{dim} \tau^{\prime}>u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$. Let $\widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}$ be the image of $\tau^{\prime}$ over $\widetilde{L}$. Seeing as the coefficients of $\tau^{\prime}$ are all in $\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}, \operatorname{dim} \tilde{\tau^{\prime}}=\operatorname{dim} \tau^{\prime}>u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$. Since $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{L}=0$, the extension $\widetilde{L} / \widetilde{k}$ is algebraic. Let $E$ be the finite field extension of $\widetilde{k}$ generated by the coefficients of $\widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}$. Then, $u(E) \leqslant u_{s}(\widetilde{k})<\operatorname{dim} \widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}$, implying $\widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}$ is isotropic over $E$, and hence over $\widetilde{L}$. Since $L$ is Henselian, $\tau^{\prime}$ is isotropic over $L$, and thus so is $\tau$.

For the second part, if $\tau=q_{L}$ for some diagonal $R$-quadratic form $q$, seeing as $\widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}$ is isotropic over $\widetilde{L}=\widetilde{L^{\prime}}$, the image of $q$ in $\widetilde{L^{\prime}}$ is so as well. From Henselianity of $L^{\prime}$, we obtain that the image of $q$ in $L^{\prime}$ is isotropic there. Finally, from Henselianity of $R$, the quadratic form $q$ is isotropic over $F_{R}$.

The bound $2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$ in Proposition 3.4.17 will remain the same regardless of whether we demand $\left|k^{\times}\right|$to be a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module or not. The reason behind this is that in any case, the hypotheses of said proposition tell us only that $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{\left|L^{\times}\right|}=n$, but not necessarily that $\left|L^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module.

Proposition 3.4.18. Let $L / k$ be a valued field extension, such that $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\left|L^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right|\right.$ $\left.\otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}\right)=0$ and $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\tilde{k}} \widetilde{L}=1$. Let $\tau$ be a quadratic form over $L$, with $\operatorname{dim} \tau>2^{n+2} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.
(1) Suppose $L$ is Henselian. Then, $\tau$ is isotropic.
(2) Under the same hypotheses as in Setting 3.4.13, let $q$ be a diagonal quadratic form over $R$, such that $q_{L}=\tau$. Then, $q$ is isotropic over $F_{R}$. If $\left|L^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-modules of dimension $n$, the statement is true for $\operatorname{dim} \tau>2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

Proof. Since $\operatorname{char}(L) \neq 2$, we may assume that $\tau$ is a diagonal quadratic form. Again, let $\perp_{\sigma \in Q} C_{\sigma} \sigma$ be the $L$-quadratic form isometric to $\tau$ obtained from Proposition 3.4.4 (resp. Proposition 3.4.3), where $Q$ has cardinality at most $2^{n+1}$ (resp. $2^{n}$ ). Then, there exists $\tau^{\prime} \in Q$, such that $\operatorname{dim} \tau^{\prime}>2 u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$. Let $\widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}$ be the image of $\tau^{\prime}$ over $\widetilde{L}$. Since the coefficients of $\tau^{\prime}$ are all in $\left(L^{o}\right)^{\times}, \operatorname{dim} \widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}=\operatorname{dim} \tau^{\prime}>2 u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

As the extension $\widetilde{L} / \widetilde{k}$ is finitely generated of transcendence degree 1 , one obtains $u(\widetilde{L}) \leqslant 2 u_{s}(\widetilde{k})<\operatorname{dim} \tau^{\prime}$. This implies that $\tau^{\prime}$ is isotropic over $\widetilde{L}$. Since $L$ is Henselian, the quadratic form $\tau^{\prime}$ is isotropic over $L$, and thus so is $\tau$.

For the second part, if $\tau=q_{L}$ for some diagonal quadratic form $q$ over $R$, we conclude by using the same argument as in Proposition 3.4.17, seeing as $\widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}$ is isotropic over $\widetilde{L^{\prime}}$.

Proposition 3.4.19. Let $L / k$ be a valued field extension, such that $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\left|L^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right|\right.$ $\left.\otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}\right)=1$ and $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{L}=0$. Let $\tau$ be a quadratic form over $L$, with $\operatorname{dim} \tau>2^{n+2} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.
(1) Suppose $L$ is Henselian. Then, $\tau$ is isotropic.
(2) Under the same hypotheses as in Setting 3.4.13, let $q$ be a diagonal quadratic form over $R$, such that $q_{L}=\tau$. Then, $q$ is isotropic over $F_{R}$. If $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module, the statement is true for $\operatorname{dim} \tau>2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

Proof. Since $\operatorname{char}(L) \neq 2$, we may assume that $\tau$ is a diagonal quadratic form. Since $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\left|L^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}\right)=1$, there exists $\rho \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$, such that the group $\left|L^{\times}\right|$is generated by $\left|k^{\times}\right|$and $\rho$. Let $T$ be an element of $L$ with $|T|=\rho$. Then, for any $a \in L^{\times}$, there exist $m \in \mathbb{Z}, p_{i} \in \mathbb{Q}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.p_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}\right), i=1,2, \ldots, n$, such that $|a|=|T|^{m} \cdot \prod_{i=1}^{n}\left|\pi_{i}\right|^{p_{i}}$.

Consequently, there exist diagonal quadratic forms $q_{1}, q_{2}$ over $L$, for which $\tau$ is isometric to $q_{1} \perp T q_{2}$, where the coefficients of $q_{1}, q_{2}$ have norms in $\left|k^{\times}\right|$.

By applying Proposition 3.4.4 (resp. Proposition 3.4.3) to $q_{1}$ and $q_{2}$, we obtain a family $S$ of at most $2^{n+2}$ (resp. $2^{n+1}$ ) diagonal quadratic forms with coefficients in $\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$, such that $\tau$ is isometric to $\perp_{\sigma \in S} C_{\sigma} \cdot \sigma$, where $C_{\sigma} \in L^{\times}$for every $\sigma \in S$. Thus, there exists $\tau^{\prime} \in S$, such that $\operatorname{dim} \tau^{\prime}>u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$. Let $\widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}$ be the image of $\tau^{\prime}$ in $\widetilde{L}$. Seeing as the coefficients of $\tau^{\prime}$ are all in $\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}, \operatorname{dim} \tilde{\tau^{\prime}}=\operatorname{dim} \tau^{\prime}>u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

The extension $\widetilde{L} / \widetilde{k}$ is finite algebraic, so $u(\widetilde{L}) \leqslant u_{s}(\widetilde{k})<\operatorname{dim} \widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}$, implying $\widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}$ is isotropic over $\widetilde{L}$. Since $L$ is Henselian, $\tau^{\prime}$ is isotropic over $L$, and thus so is $\tau$.

For the second part, if $\tau=q_{L}$ for some $q$, as $\widetilde{\tau^{\prime}}$ is isotropic over $\widetilde{L}^{\prime}$, we conclude as in Proposition 3.4.17.

Keeping the same notation, the three propositions above can be summarized into:
Theorem 3.4.20. Let $L / k$ be a valued field extension. Suppose that the inequality $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\left|L^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}\right)+\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{L} \leqslant 1$ holds. Let $\tau$ be a quadratic form over $L$, with $\operatorname{dim} \tau>2^{n+2} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.
(1) Suppose $L$ is Henselian. Then, $\tau$ is isotropic.
(2) Under the same hypotheses as in Setting 3.4.13, let $q$ be a diagonal quadratic form over $R$, such that $q_{L}=\tau$. Then, $q$ is isotropic over $F_{R}$.
If $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module, and $\left|L^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module with $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|L^{\times}\right|=n$ if $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{L}=1$ and $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\left|L^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}\right)=0$, then the statement is true for $\operatorname{dim} \tau>2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

A result we will be using often in what follows:
Lemma 3.4.21. Suppose $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of dimension $n$. Let $k^{\prime} / k$ be a valued field extension, such that $\left|k^{\prime \times}\right|$ is finitely generated over $\left|k^{\times}\right|$, and $\left|k^{\prime \times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a torsion group. Then, $\left|k^{\prime \times}\right|$ is also a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of dimension $n$.

Suppose $k^{\prime} / k$ is a finite field extension. Let $\tau$ be a diagonal quadratic form over $k^{\prime}$ with $\operatorname{dim} \tau>2^{n} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$. Then, $q$ is $k^{\prime}$-isotropic.

Proof. Seeing as $\left|k^{\prime \times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a torsion group, its rank as a $\mathbb{Z}$ module is 0 . Considering $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\prime \times}\right|=\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\prime \times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right|+\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\times}\right|$, we obtain $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\prime \times}\right|=n$. Furthermore, being a finitely generated torsion-free module over $\mathbb{Z}$, it is free.

Let $\perp_{\sigma \in Q} C_{\sigma} \cdot \sigma$ be the quadratic form $k^{\prime}$-isometric to $\tau$ obtained by applying Proposition 3.4.3. There exists $\sigma_{0} \in Q$ with coefficients in $\left(k^{\prime \circ}\right)^{\times}$, such that $\operatorname{dim} \widetilde{\sigma_{0}}=\operatorname{dim} \sigma_{0}>$ $u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$, where $\widetilde{\sigma_{0}}$ is the image of $\sigma_{0}$ over $\widetilde{k^{\prime}}$. Suppose $k^{\prime} / k$ is a finite field extension. Seeing as then $\widetilde{k^{\prime}} / \widetilde{k}$ is also finite, $\widetilde{\sigma_{0}}$ is $\widetilde{k^{\prime}}$-isotropic. From Henselianity of $k^{\prime}$, we obtain that $\sigma_{0}$ is $k^{\prime}$-isotropic, thus so is $\tau$.

The following shows that if $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free finitely generated $\mathbb{Z}$-module of dimension $n$, the last conditions of Theorem 3.4.20 are satisfied in the Berkovich setting.

Corollary 3.4.22. Suppose $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module with rank $_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\times}\right|=n$. Let $C$ be a $k$-analytic curve. If $x \in C$ is a type 2 point, then $\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module and $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|\right)=n$.

Proof. Since $x$ is an Abhyankar point, $\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|$is finitely generated over $\left|k^{\times}\right|$, and since it is of type $2,\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a torsion group, so this follows from Lemma 3.4.21.

Another result we will be needing in what is to come:
Lemma 3.4.23. Under the same hypotheses as in Setting 3.4.13, suppose $R$ is a discrete valuation ring. Let $q$ be a diagonal quadratic form over $F_{R}$. Then, there exist diagonal $F_{R}$-quadratic forms $q_{1}, q_{2}$ with coefficients in $R$, and $a \in F_{R}^{\times}$, such that:

- $q$ is isometric to $q_{1} \perp a q_{2}$;
- $q_{i, L}$ has coefficients in $\left(L^{\circ}\right)^{\times}, i=1,2$;
- there exists $i_{0} \in\{1,2\}$, such that $\operatorname{dim} q_{i_{0}, L} \geqslant \frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} q$.

In particular, if either of $q_{1}, q_{2}$ is isotropic over $F_{R}$, then so is $q$.
Proof. Let $\pi$ be a uniformizer of $R$. For any coefficient $b$ of $q$, either $b \equiv 1 \bmod \left(F_{R}^{\times}\right)^{2}\left(F_{R}^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$ or $b \equiv \pi \bmod \left(F_{R}^{\times}\right)^{2}\left(F_{R}^{\circ}\right)^{\times}$. Hence, there exist diagonal $F_{R}$-quadratic forms $q_{1}, q_{2}$ with coefficients in $\left(F_{R}^{\circ}\right)^{\times}=R^{\times}$, such that $q$ is $F_{R}$-isometric to $q^{\prime}=q_{1} \perp \pi q_{2}$. Then, $\operatorname{dim} q=\operatorname{dim} q^{\prime}$, and there exists $i_{0}$, such that $\operatorname{dim} q_{i_{0}} \geqslant \frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} q$. Since the coefficients of $q_{1}, q_{2}$ are in $R^{\times}$, their images over $L$ are of same dimension, so $\operatorname{dim} q_{i_{0}, L} \geqslant \frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} q$. Finally, the last sentence of the statement is obvious.

The following theorem gives the motivation behind the hypotheses we put upon $R, L^{\prime}$ and $L$.

Theorem 3.4.24. Suppose char $(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible $k$-analytic curve. Set $F=\mathscr{M}(C)$. Let $q$ be a quadratic form over $F$ of dimension $d$, with $d>2^{n+2} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$. Then, for any $x \in C$, the quadratic form $q$ is isotropic over $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ for all $x \in C$.

If $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module, the statement is true for $d>2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.
Proof. Seeing as char $(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$, neither of the overfields of $k$ has characteristic 2. In particular, $\operatorname{char}(F) \neq 2$, so there exists a diagonal quadratic form $q^{\prime}$ over $F$ isometric to $q$. By replacing $q$ with $q^{\prime}$ if necessary, we may directly assume that $q$ is a diagonal quadratic form.

Recall that $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ and $\kappa(x)$ are Henselian [4, Sections 2.1 and 2.3]. Furthermore, $\mathcal{H}(x)$ is the completion of $\kappa(x)$, so it is a Henselian immediate extension. We know that for any $x \in C$, the field $\mathcal{H}(x)$ is either a finite extension of $k$ or a completion of $F$ with respect to some valuation extending that of $k$. Abhyankar's inequality tells us that $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}\right)+\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)} \leqslant 1$. We will apply part 2 of Theorem 3.4 .20 by taking $R=\mathcal{O}_{x}, F_{R}=\mathscr{M}_{x}, L^{\prime}=\kappa(x)$, and $L=\mathcal{H}(x)$.

If $\mathcal{H}(x) / k$ is finite, i.e. if $x$ is a rigid point, then $\mathcal{H}(x)=\kappa(x)=\mathcal{O}_{x} / m_{x}$. Being a normal Noetherian local ring with Krull dimension one, $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a discrete valuation ring. By Lemma 3.4.23, there exists a diagonal $\mathscr{M}_{x}$-quadratic form $\tau$ with coefficients in $\mathcal{O}_{x}$, such that $\operatorname{dim} \tau_{L} \geqslant \frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} q>2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$ (resp. $\operatorname{dim} \tau_{L} \geqslant \frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} q>2^{n} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$ ) and the isotropy of $\tau$ implies that of $q$. Seeing as $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}\right)=\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{tr}_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{\mathcal{H}(x)}=0$, we can apply Proposition 3.4 .17 (resp. Lemma 3.4.21) to $\tau$.

Otherwise, $\mathcal{O}_{x}=\kappa(x)$ is a field, and $\mathcal{H}(x)$ is its completion. In the general case, we conclude by a direct application of Theorem 3.4.20. In particular, if $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module, then this is an application of Theorem 3.4.20 in view of Corollary 3.4.22.

We also obtain:
Corollary 3.4.25. Suppose char $(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible $k$-analytic curve. Let $x$ be any point of $C$. Let $q$ be a quadratic form over $\mathcal{H}(x)$, such that $\operatorname{dim} q>$ $2^{n+2} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$. Then, $q$ is isotropic.

If $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module, then the statement is true for $\operatorname{dim} q>2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.
Proof. This is a direct consequence of part (1) of Theorem 3.4.20 (in view of Corollary 3.4.22 for the special case).
3.4.3. The applications. We will now apply the results obtained in the previous section to the (strong) $u$-invariant.

We recall:
Definition 3.4.26. Let $K$ be a field.
(1) [Kaplansky] The $u$-invariant of $K$, denoted by $u(K)$, is the maximal dimension of anisotropic quadratic forms over $K$. We say that $u(K)=\infty$ if there exist anisotropic quadratic forms over $K$ of arbitrarily large dimension.
(2) [HHK] The strong $u$-invariant of $K$, denoted by $u_{s}(K)$, is the smallest real number $m$, such that:

- $u(E) \leqslant m$ for all finite field extensions $E / K$;
- $\frac{1}{2} u(E) \leqslant m$ for all finitely generated field extensions $E / K$ of transcendence degree 1.
We say that $u_{s}(K)=\infty$ if there exist such field extensions $E$ of arbitrarily large $u$-invariant.
Let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field.
ThEOREM 3.4.27. Suppose char $(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$. Let $F$ be a finitely generated field extension of $k$ of transcendence degree 1. Let $q$ be a quadratic form over $F$ of dimension $d$.
(1) If $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}=: n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $d>2^{n+2} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$, then $q$ is isotropic.
(2) If $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module with $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\times}\right|=: n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $d>2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$, then $q$ is isotropic.

Proof. There exists a connected normal projective $k$-analytic curve $C$ such that $F=\mathscr{M}(C)$. By Theorem 3.4.1, the quadratic form $q$ is isotropic over $F$ if and only if it is isotropic over $\mathscr{M}_{x}$ for all $x \in C$. The statement now follows in view of Theorem 3.4.24.

Corollary 3.4.28. Suppose $\operatorname{char}(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$.
(1) If $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}=: n \in \mathbb{N}$, then $u_{s}(k) \leqslant 2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.
(2) If $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module with $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\times}\right|=: n \in \mathbb{N}$, then $u_{s}(k) \leqslant 2^{n} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

Proof. Let $l / k$ be a finite field extension. Let $q$ be an l-quadratic form of dimension $d>2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$ (resp. $\left.d>2^{n} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})\right)$. Since $\operatorname{char}(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$, we may assume $q$ to be diagonal. In view of part 1 of Proposition 3.4.17 (resp. Lemma 3.4.21), $q$ is $l$-isotropic, so $u(l) \leqslant 2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$ (resp. $\left.u(l) \leqslant 2^{n} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})\right)$. In combination with Theorem 3.4.27, this completes the proof of the statement.

Corollary 3.4.29. Suppose char $(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$. Let $C$ be a normal irreducible $k$-analytic curve. Let $x$ be any point of $C$.
(1) If $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}=: n \in \mathbb{N}$, then $u(\mathcal{H}(x)) \leqslant 2^{n+2} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.
(2) If $\left|k^{\times}\right|$is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module with $\operatorname{rank}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left|k^{\times}\right|=: n \in \mathbb{N}$, then $u(\mathcal{H}(x)) \leqslant 2^{n+1} u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

Proof. See Corollary 3.4.25.

In particular, when $k$ is discretely valued we obtain the upcoming corollary. It is the most important result on quadratic forms in [34], and from it we obtain that $u\left(\mathbb{Q}_{p}(T)\right)=8$ when $p \neq 2$, originally shown in [58].

Corollary 3.4.30. Let $k$ be a complete discretely valued field, such that char $(\widetilde{k}) \neq 2$. Then, $u_{s}(k)=2 u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$.

Proof. The inequality $u_{s}(k) \leqslant 2 u_{s}(\widetilde{k})$ is a special case of Corollary 6.2. For the other direction, a proof that is independent of the patching method and relies on the theory of quadratic forms is given in [34, Lemma 4.9].

## CHAPTER 4

## Patching over Analytic Fibers and the Local-Global Principle

In this chapter we generalize patching to neighborhoods of certain fibers of a relative proper analytic curve. As an application, we obtain a local-global principle for the germs of meromorphic functions on said fibers.

We treat the case of the relative projective line $\mathbb{P}^{1, a n}$ first. In Section 4.1, we construct the notion of relative nice covers around a fiber of $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$, analoguous to (and a generalization of) nice covers for curves, and show that it possesses good properties, i.e. properties that are necessary for patching. To do this, we start by showing some complementary properties of affinoid domains in the analytic projective line that allow us to deduce a particular writing for them. This writing makes it possible to construct affinoid domains in a neighborhood of a fiber (of a relative $\mathbb{P}^{1, a n}$ ) from an affinoid domain on said fiber. We call this process thickening ${ }^{1}$ of an affinoid domain. A relative nice cover of the neighborhood of a fiber (of a relative $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$ ) is the thickening of a nice cover of the fiber.

In order to be able to apply the results of Chapter 2 to this setting, it is necessary to constantly "shrink" to smaller neighborhoods of the fiber. Because of this, we need some uniform boundedness results and explicit norm comparisons, which is the topic of Section 4.2. As a consequence, this is the most technical section of Chapter 4. It also contains an explicit description of the Banach algebras of analytic functions on certain affinoid domains of the relative projective line.

In Section 4.3, we show that the results of Chapter 2 are indeed applicable to relative nice covers of fibers of the relative $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$, and that patching (in the sense of Chapter 2) can be obtained as a consequence thereof. This is then extended (in the sense of Proposition 3.2.2) to include the level of generality necessary for proving the analoguous result around fibers of relative analytic curves. The arguments used in this section are of very topological nature.

In Section 4.4, we study the properties of the class of relative analytic curves over which we know how to apply patching around certain fibers. The condition that is required is not too restrictive; namely, the relative proper curve is assumed to be normal and algebraic around the fiber, so this is satisfied for the Berkovich analytification of any normal proper relative algebraic curve. Using Grothendieck's work on the projective limit of schemes, we show that smooth geometrically irreducible projective algebraic curves defined over certain fields give rise to a proper relative analytic curve satisfying this condition. In particular, this makes it possible to generalize some results from Chapter 3.

In Section 4.5, we construct covers (also called relative nice covers) on a neighborhood of fibers of a relative proper analytic curve and show that they satisfy the necessary

[^0]properties for patching to be applicable. For this, we use pullbacks of relative nice covers in the case of $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$. Once again, the arguments that are employed are of very topological nature. We then use these covers, as well as the corresponding result in the case of relative $\mathbb{P}^{1, a n}$, to prove that patching is possible in this setting.

Finally, in Section 4.6, we apply patching to prove local-global principles for the germs of meromorphic functions on a fiber of a proper relative curve. As in the case of curves, we first show a local-global principle where the overfields are the stalks of the sheaf of meromorphic functions, and then apply this to obtain a local-global principle with respect to completions. In order to show the latter from the former, we first prove there is a connection between the points of a fiber and the valuations on the field of germs of its meromorphic functions (which we show to have nice algebraic properties; namely, it can be realised as the function field of a certain algebraic curve).

The fibers around which we apply patching are those over points for which their corresponding stalk is a field. In Section 4.7, we calculate some examples of these fields.

### 4.1. Nice covers for the relative projective line

As in the case of curves, we construct covers around fibers of the relative projective line over which a generalized form of patching as seen in Proposition 3.2 .2 will be possible. More precisely, we construct relative analogues of nice covers (Definition 3.1.6).
4.1.1. Some results on the analytic projective line. Let us start with a couple of auxiliary results on the analytic projective line. Recall the nature of the points of $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$ presented in Subsection 1.8.4.

Proposition 4.1.1. Let $K$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $U$ be a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$ with only type 3 points in its boundary. Suppose $U$ is not a point. Let us fix a copy of $\mathbb{A}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$ and a coordinate $T$ on it. Let $\partial U=\left\{\eta_{R_{i}, r_{i}}: i=\right.$ $1,2, \ldots, n\}$, where $R_{i} \in K[T]$ are irreducible polynomials and $r_{i} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|K^{\times}\right|}$. Then, $U=\bigcap_{i}\left\{x:\left|R_{i}\right|_{x} \bowtie_{i} r_{i}\right\}$, where $\bowtie_{i} \in\{\leqslant, \geqslant\}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$.

Proof. We need the following two auxiliary results:
Lemma 4.1.2. For any $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$, either $U \subseteq\left\{x:\left|R_{i}\right|_{x} \leqslant r_{i}\right\}$ or $U \subseteq\left\{x:\left|R_{i}\right|_{x} \geqslant r_{i}\right\}$.
Proof. To see this, assume that the open subsets $V_{1}:=U \cap\left\{x:\left|R_{i}\right|_{x}<r_{i}\right\}$ and $V_{2}:=U \cap\left\{x:\left|R_{i}\right|_{x}>r_{i}\right\}$ of $U$ are non-empty. As intersections of two connected subets of $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$, both $V_{1}$ and $V_{2}$ are connected. Assume $V_{j} \cap \operatorname{Int}(U)=\emptyset, j=1,2$., This implies $V_{j} \subseteq \partial U$, and since $V_{j}$ is connected, it is a single type 3 point $\left\{\eta_{j}\right\}$. But then, this would be an isolated point of $U$, which is in contradiction with the connectedness of $U$. Consequently, there exist $x_{j} \in V_{j} \cap \operatorname{Int}(U), j=1,2$. By Lemma 1.8.16, $\operatorname{Int}(U)$ is a connected set, so there exists a unique arc $\left[x_{1}, x_{2}\right]$ connecting $x_{1}, x_{2}$ that is entirely contained in $\operatorname{Int}(U)$. Since $\left|R_{i}\right|_{x_{1}}<r_{i},\left|R_{i}\right|_{x_{2}}>r_{i}$, there exists $x_{0} \in\left[x_{1}, x_{2}\right]$ such that $\left|R_{i}\right|_{x_{0}}=r_{i}$. Since there is a unique point satisfying this condition (Proposition 1.8.25), and it is $\eta_{R_{i}, r_{i}}$, we obtain that $\eta_{R_{i}, r_{i}} \in\left[x_{1}, x_{2}\right] \subseteq \operatorname{Int}(U)$, which is in contradiction with the fact that $\eta_{R_{i}, r_{i}} \in \partial U$. Thus, there exists $j \in\{1,2\}$ such that $V_{j}=\emptyset$, implying the statement.

Lemma 4.1.3. For $n \in \mathbb{N}$, let $W_{i}:=\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{i}\right| \bowtie_{i} r_{i}\right\}$, where $P_{i} \in K[T]$ is irreducible, $r_{i} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}, \bowtie_{i} \in\{\leqslant, \geqslant\}, i \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$. Suppose for all $i \neq j$, $W_{i} \nsubseteq \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{j}\right)$. Then, for $V:=\bigcap_{i=1}^{n} W_{i}, \partial V=\bigcup_{i=1}^{n} \partial W_{i}$.

Proof. Since $\operatorname{Int}(V)=\bigcap_{j=1}^{n} \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{j}\right)$, we obtain that $\partial V=\left(\bigcap_{j=1}^{n} W_{j}\right) \backslash\left(\bigcap_{i=1}^{n} \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{i}\right)\right)=$ $\bigcup_{i=1}^{n} \bigcap_{j=1}^{n}\left(W_{i} \backslash \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{j}\right)\right)$. Suppose there exist $i, j \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$ such that $W_{i} \backslash \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{j}\right)=\emptyset$. Then, $W_{i} \subseteq \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{j}\right)$, contradicting the hypothesis of the statement.

Hence, for any $i, j, W_{i} \backslash \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{j}\right) \neq \emptyset$. In particular, this means that $W_{i} \cap \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{j}\right)$ is a strict open subset of $W_{i}$, so contained in $\operatorname{Int}\left(W_{i}\right)$. Consequently, $\left\{\eta_{P_{i}, r_{i}}\right\}=W_{i} \backslash \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{i}\right) \subseteq$ $W_{i} \backslash\left(W_{i} \cap \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{j}\right)\right) \subseteq W_{i} \backslash \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{j}\right)$. This implies that for any $i, \bigcap_{j=1}^{n}\left(W_{i} \backslash \operatorname{Int}\left(W_{j}\right)\right)=\left\{\eta_{P_{i}, r_{i}}\right\}$.

Finally, $\partial V=\left\{\eta_{P_{i}, r_{i}}: i=1,2, \ldots, n\right\}$, proving the statement.
If $U \subseteq\left\{x:\left|R_{i}\right|_{x} \leqslant r_{i}\right\}$ (resp. $U \subseteq\left\{x:\left|R_{i}\right|_{x} \geqslant r_{i}\right\}$ ), set $U_{i}=\left\{x:\left|R_{i}\right|_{x} \leqslant r_{i}\right\}$ (resp. $U_{i}=\left\{x:\left|R_{i}\right|_{x} \geqslant r_{i}\right\}$ ). Remark that for all $i, U_{i}$ is connected and contains $U$. Set $V=\bigcap_{i=1}^{n} U_{i}$. Let us show that $\partial V=\partial U$. Assume there exist $i, j$ such that $U_{i} \subseteq \operatorname{Int}\left(U_{j}\right)$. Then, $\eta_{R_{j}, r_{j}} \notin \in U_{i}$, so $\eta_{R_{j}, r_{j}} \notin U$, contradiction. Thus, Lemma 4.1.3 is applicable, and so $\partial V=\left\{\eta_{R_{i}, r_{i}}\right\}=\partial U$.

Remark that $V$ is a connected affinoid domain (as an intersection of connected affinoid domains) of $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$. Also, $U \subseteq V$ and $\partial U=\partial V$. Let us show that $U=V$. Suppose there exists some $x \in V \backslash U$. Then, $x \in \operatorname{Int}(V)$. Let $y \in \operatorname{Int}(U) \subseteq \operatorname{Int}(V)$. The unique arc $[x, y]$ in $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$ connecting $x$ and $y$ is contained in $\operatorname{Int}(V)$ (by connectedness of the latter, see Lemma 1.8.16). At the same time, since $x \notin U$ and $y \in U$, the arc $[x, y]$ intersects $\partial U=\partial V$, contradiction. Thus, $U=V=\bigcap_{i=1}^{n} U_{i}$.

In particular, the result above implies that every connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$ with only type 3 points in its boundary is a rational domain.

Recall Proposition 1.8.19. For any $x, y \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$, we denote by $[x, y]$ the unique arc in $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$ connecting $x$ and $y$.

Lemma 4.1.4. Let $K$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $U, V$ be connected affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, a n}$ containing only type 3 points in their boundaries, such that $U \cap V=$ $\partial U \cap \partial V$ is a single type 3 point $\left\{\eta_{R, r}\right\}$ (i.e. $R$ is an irreducible polynomial over $K$ and $\left.r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|K^{\times}\right|}\right)$.

- If $U \subseteq\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$ (resp. $U \subseteq\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{x} \geqslant r\right\}$ ), then $V \subseteq\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{x} \geqslant r\right\} \quad$ (resp. $V \subseteq\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$ ).
- Suppose $U \subseteq\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$. Set $\partial U=\left\{\eta_{R, r}, \eta_{P_{i}, r_{i}}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ and $\partial V=$ $\left\{\eta_{R, r}, \eta_{P_{j}^{\prime}, r_{j}^{\prime}}\right\}_{j=1}^{m}$, so that $U=\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{x} \leqslant r,\left|P_{i}\right|_{x} \bowtie_{i} r_{i}, i\right\}$ and $V=$ $\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{x} \geqslant r,\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{x} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, j\right\}$, where $\bowtie_{i}, \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} \in\{\leqslant, \geqslant\}, P_{i}, P_{j}^{\prime} \in K[T]$ are irreducible, and $r_{i}, r_{j}^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|K^{\times}\right|}$for all $i, j$.

Then, $U \cup V=\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{i}\right|_{x} \bowtie_{i} r_{i},\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{x} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, i=1, \ldots, n, j=1, \ldots, m\right\}$. If $n=m=0$, this means that $U \cup V=\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$.
Proof. (1) Remark that if $U \subseteq V$, then $U=\left\{\eta_{R, r}\right\}$, so the statement is trivially satisfied. The same is true if $V \subseteq U$. Let us suppose that neither of $U, V$ is contained in the other.

Suppose $U \subseteq\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$ and $V \subseteq\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{x} \leqslant r\right\}$. Let $u \in U \backslash V$ and $v \in V \backslash U$. Since $u, v \in\left\{x:|R|_{x}<r\right\}$ - which is a connected set (Lemma 1.8.16), $[u, v] \subseteq\left\{x:|R|_{x}<r\right\}$. At the same time, since $\left[u, \eta_{R, r}\right] \subseteq U$ and $\left[\eta_{R, r}, v\right] \subseteq V,\left[u, \eta_{R, r}\right] \cap\left[\eta_{R, r}, v\right]=\left\{\eta_{R, r}\right\}$, so the arc $[u, v]=\left[u, \eta_{R, r}\right] \cup\left[\eta_{R, r}, v\right]$ contains the point $\eta_{R, r}$. This is in contradiction with the fact that $[u, v] \subseteq\{x$ :
$\left.|R|_{x}<r\right\}$. The case $U, V \subseteq\left\{x \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{x} \geqslant r\right\}$ is shown to be impossible in the same way. (This property is true regardless of whether $\partial U \backslash\left\{\eta_{R, r}\right\}$ and $\partial V \backslash\left\{\eta_{R, r}\right\}$ contain only type 3 points or not.)
(2) The statement is clearly true if $m=n=0$, so we may assume that is not the case.

Remark that $\partial(U \cup V) \subseteq \partial U \cup \partial V$. Let $\eta \in \partial U \backslash V$. Let $G$ be any neighborhood of $\eta$ in $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$. Since $V$ is closed, there exists a neighborhood $G^{\prime} \subseteq G$ of $\eta$ such that $G^{\prime} \cap V=\emptyset$. Since $\eta \in \partial U, G^{\prime}$ contains points of both $U$ and $U^{C}$. Consequently, $G^{\prime}$, and thus $G$, contain points of both $U \cup V$ and $U^{C} \cap V^{C}=(U \cup V)^{C}$. Seeing as this is true for any neighborhood $G$ of $\eta$, we obtain that $\eta \in \partial(U \cup V)$, implying $\partial U \backslash V \subseteq \partial(U \cup V)$. Similarly, $\partial V \backslash U \subseteq \partial(U \cup V)$. It only remains to check for the point $\eta_{R, r}$.

Let $x \in \operatorname{Int}(U) \subseteq \operatorname{Int}(U \cup V)$ and $y \in \operatorname{Int}(V) \subseteq \operatorname{Int}(U \cup V)$. Remark that $x \notin V$ and $y \notin U$. Furthermore, $|R|_{x}<r$ and $|R|_{y}>r$. Consequently, $\eta_{R, r} \in[x, y]$. Since $U \cup V$ is a connected affinoid domain containing only type 3 points in its boundary, its interior is connected (see Lemma 1.8.16). Consequently, $[x, y] \subseteq \operatorname{Int}(U \cup V)$, and hence $\eta_{R, r} \in \operatorname{Int}(U \cup V)$.

We have shown that $\partial(U \cup V)=\left\{\eta_{P_{i}, r_{i}}, \eta_{P_{j}^{\prime}, r_{j}^{\prime}}: i, j\right\}$. Since $U \subseteq\left\{x:\left|P_{i}\right|_{x} \bowtie_{i} r_{i}\right\}$ and $V \subseteq\left\{x:\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{x} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}\right\}$ for all $i, j$, we obtain that

$$
U \cup V=\left\{x:\left|P_{i}\right|_{x} \bowtie_{i} r_{i},\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{x} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, i, j\right\} .
$$

### 4.1.2. The general setting.

Notation 4.1.5. Let $S$ be a normal good $k$-analytic space (i.e. affinoid domains form a basis of the Berkovich topology on $S$ ). Suppose that $\operatorname{dim} S<\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$. Let us denote by $\pi$ the structural morphism $\mathbb{P}_{S}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow S$. Let $x \in S$ be such that $\mathcal{O}_{S, x}$ is a field. Let $F_{x}$ be the fiber of $x$ on $\mathbb{P}_{S}^{1, a n}$, which can be endowed with the analytic structure of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ (see Proposition 1.5.7).

Remark that a connected affinoid domain of $S$ is integral.
Let us explain the hypothesis on the dimension of $S$ in Notation 4.1.5. As in Chapter 3, type 3 points play a very important role for obtaining patching results around the fiber $F_{x}$. Hence, their existence on the fiber is crucial and, as will be seen in the next lemma, this is guaranteed by the condition we imposed on the dimension of $S$. Recall that for a complete ultrametric field $K$, a $K$-analytic curve contains type 3 points if and only if $\sqrt{\left|K^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$.

Lemma 4.1.6. Let $Y$ be a $k$-analytic space such that $\operatorname{dim} Y<\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$. Then, for any $y \in Y, \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(y)^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$.

Proof. For any $y \in Y$, we have

$$
\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left|\mathcal{H}(y)^{\times}\right| /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q} \leqslant d(\mathcal{H}(y) / k) \leqslant \operatorname{dim} Y<\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}
$$

Consequently, $\sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(y)^{\times}\right|} \neq \mathbb{R}_{>0}$.
By Lemma 4.1.6, in Notation 4.1.5, $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ contains type 3 points.

Lemma 4.1.7. Let $U$ be a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ with only type 3 points in its boundary. Then, all the polynomials $R_{i}$ from Proposition 4.1.1 can be chosen so that their coefficients are in $\mathcal{O}_{x}$.

Proof. Let $\eta \in \partial U$. It suffices to show that there exist $P \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ and $p>0$, such that $\eta=\eta_{P, p}$.

The connected components of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }} \backslash\{\eta\}$ are virtual discs. Let us fix one that does not contain the point $\infty$. We need to show it contains a rigid point $\eta_{R, 0}$ with $R \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ with $R$ irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$. This follows immediately from the density of $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ in $\mathcal{H}(x)$.

REmARK 4.1.8. Let $U$ be a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ containing only type 3 points in its boundary. Then, there exist polynomials $R_{i} \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ and positive real numbers $r_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, such that $U=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|R_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i}, i=\right.$ $1,2, \ldots, n\}$, where $\bowtie_{i} \in\{\leqslant, \geqslant\}$ for all $i$. Consequently, there exists some connected affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$ in $S$, such that $R_{i} \in \mathcal{O}(Z)[T]$ for all $i$. Hence, the affinoid domain $U$ can be thickened to an affinoid domain $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|R_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n\right\}$ of $\pi^{-1}(Z)=\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$. The role of nice covers in this relative setting will be played by covers that are constructed by thickening affinoid domains of the fiber $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. We now study some properties of such domains which make patching possible.
4.1.3. A Theorem: Thickenings of Type 3 Points. Following Notation 4.1.5, the goal of this part is to show:

Theorem 4.1.9. Let $\eta_{R, r}$ be a type 3 point of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$, where $R \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ is irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ and $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}$. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{0}$ of $x$ in $S$, such that

- $R \in \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)[T]$,
- for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, the set $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=\right.$ $r\}$ is a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$.
Proof. Without loss of generality, since $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field, we may assume that $R(T)$ is a unitary polynomial.

To prove the statement, we need several auxiliary lemmas.
Lemma 4.1.10. Let $K$ be a complete ultrametric field. Let $R(T)$ be a split unitary polynomial over $K$. Let $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. Then, for any root $\alpha$ of $R(T)$ there exists a unique positive real number $s_{\alpha}$ such that $\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R(T)|_{y}=r\right\}=\bigcup_{R(\alpha)=0}\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|T-\alpha|_{y}=s_{\alpha}\right\}$. The point $\eta_{\alpha, s_{\alpha}}$ is the only point $y$ of the arc $\left[\eta_{\alpha, 0}, \infty\right]$ in $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$ for which $|R(T)|_{y}=r$. Furthermore, $r=s_{\alpha} \cdot \prod_{R(\beta)=0, \alpha \neq \beta} \max \left(s_{\alpha},|\alpha-\beta|\right)$.

Proof. Remark that if $y \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$ is such that $|R(T)|_{y}=0$, then $\prod_{R(\alpha)=0}|T-\alpha|_{y}=0$, meaning there exists a root $\alpha_{0}$ of $R(T)$ such that $\left|T-\alpha_{0}\right|_{y}=0$ (notice that we haven't assumed $R(T)$ to be separable, i.e. there could be roots with multiplicities). This determines the unique point $\eta_{\alpha_{0}, 0}$ in $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$. Thus, the zeros of $R(T)$ in $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$ are $\eta_{\alpha, 0}, R(\alpha)=0$. Remark also that $R$ has only one pole in $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$ and that is the point $\infty$.

By $[\mathbf{2 0}, 3.4 .23 .1]$, the analytic function $R(T)$ on $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$ is locally constant everywhere outside of the finite graph $\Gamma:=\bigcup_{R(\alpha)=0}\left[\eta_{\alpha, 0}, \infty\right]$. Furthermore, its variation is compatible
with the canonical retraction $d: \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow \Gamma$ in the sense that $|R(T)|_{y}=|R(T)|_{d(y)}$ for any $y \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}(c f .[\mathbf{2 0}, 3.4 .23 .8])$. By $[\mathbf{2 0}, 3.4 .24 .3], R(T)$ is continuously strictly increasing in all the arcs $\left[\eta_{\alpha, 0}, \infty\right], R(\alpha)=0$, where $|R(T)|_{\eta_{\alpha, 0}}=0$ and $|R(T)|_{\infty}=+\infty$. Consequently, $|R(T)|$ attains the value $r$ exactly one time on each $\operatorname{arc}\left[\eta_{\alpha, 0}, \infty\right]$. Suppose $s_{\alpha}$ is the unique positive real number for which $|R(T)|_{\eta_{\alpha, s_{\alpha}}}=r$. Then, $\prod_{R(\beta)=0}|T-\beta|_{\eta_{\alpha, s_{\alpha}}}=$ $s_{\alpha} \cdot \prod_{R(\beta)=0, \alpha \neq \beta} \max \left(s_{\alpha},|\alpha-\beta|\right)=r$.

We have shown that there exist positive real numbers $s_{\alpha}$ such that $\left\{y \in \Gamma:|R|_{y}=r\right\}=$ $\left\{\eta_{\alpha, s_{\alpha}}: R(\alpha)=0\right\}$. As mentioned before, the variation of $R$ is compatible with the canonical retraction $d$ of $\mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}$ to $\Gamma$. Since $d^{-1}\left(\eta_{\alpha, s_{\alpha}}\right)=\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|T-\alpha|_{y}=s_{\alpha}\right\}$, we finally obtain that $\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{y}=r\right\}=\bigcup_{R(\alpha)=0}\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{K}^{1, \text { an }}:|T-\alpha|_{y}=s_{\alpha}\right\}$ with $s_{\alpha}$ as above.

Let $Z_{1}$ be some connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ in $S$ such that $R \in \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{1}\right)[T]$. Let $E$ be a finite field extension of $\mathscr{M}\left(Z_{1}\right)$ on which $R(T)$ splits. Since $\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{1}\right)$ is Japanese (see [6, Proposition 2.1.14]), its integral closure in $E$ is a finite $\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{1}\right)$-algebra, and in particular, an integral $k$-affinoid algebra (see Proposition 1.3.19). Let us denote by $Z^{\prime}$ the corresponding integral $k$-affinoid space.

By construction, we have a finite morphism $\varphi: Z^{\prime} \rightarrow Z_{1}$ inducing a finite morphism $\psi: \mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{Z_{1}}^{1, \text { an }}$, and the polynomial $R(T)$ is split over $\mathcal{O}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)$. Set $\left\{x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{t}\right\}:=$ $\varphi^{-1}(x)$. Let us study the affinoid domain $|R(T)|=\prod_{R(\alpha)=0}|T-\alpha|=r$ in $\mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}$, i.e. the affinoid $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}: \prod_{R(\alpha)=0}|T-\alpha|_{u}=r\right\}$.

Since $\varphi$ is a finite morphism, $\sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}=\sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}\left(x_{i}\right)^{\times}\right|}$for any $i=1,2, \ldots, t$, so $r \notin \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}\left(x_{i}\right)^{\times}\right|}$. By Lemma 4.1.10, there exist positive real numbers $s_{\alpha, x_{i}}, R(\alpha)=0$, such that $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}\left(x_{i}\right)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}=\bigcup_{R(\alpha)=0}\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}\left(x_{i}\right)}^{1, \text { an }}:|T-\alpha|_{u}=s_{\alpha, x_{i}}\right\}$. Since $r \notin$ $\sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}\left(x_{i}\right)^{\times}\right|},\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}\left(x_{i}\right)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}$ cannot contain any type 2 points, so $s_{\alpha, x_{i}} \notin \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}\left(x_{i}\right)^{\times}\right|} \cup\{0\}$ and $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}\left(x_{i}\right)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}=\left\{\eta_{\alpha, s_{\alpha, x_{i}}}: R(\alpha)=0\right\}$ (for $a \in k, r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, recall the notation $\eta_{a, r}$ in Subsection 1.2.4).

Lemma 4.1.11. For any $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, t\}$, and any root $\alpha$ of $R(T)$, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{i}^{\prime}$ of $x_{i}$ and a continuous function $s_{\alpha}^{i}: Z_{i}^{\prime} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{>0}$ such that for any $y \in Z_{i}^{\prime}$,

$$
\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(y)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}=\bigcup_{R(\alpha)=0}\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(y)}^{1, \text { an }}:|T-\alpha|_{u}=s_{\alpha}^{i}(y)\right\} .
$$

Furthermore, we may assume that for any $j \neq i, x_{j} \notin Z_{i}^{\prime}$.
Proof. Let us fix an $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, t\}$ and a root $\alpha$ of $R(T)$ of multiplicity $m$. Let $\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}$ be the rest of the roots (with multiplicity) of $R(T)$, ordered in such a way that for any $j \leqslant l,\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right|_{x_{i}} \leqslant\left|\alpha-\alpha_{l}\right| x_{i}$. As remarked above, $s_{\alpha, x_{i}} \notin \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}\left(x_{i}\right)^{\times}\right|} \cup\{0\}$, so $s_{\alpha, x_{i}} \neq\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right| x_{i}$ for all $j=1,2, \ldots, n$. Set $\alpha_{0}:=\alpha$. Then, there exists a unique $j_{0} \in\{0,1, \ldots, n\}$, such that $\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right|_{x_{i}}<s_{\alpha, x_{i}}<\left|\alpha-\alpha_{l}\right|_{x_{i}}$ for all $j, l$ for which $j \leqslant j_{0}<l$ (in particular, if $j_{0}=0$, this means that $0<s_{\alpha, x_{i}}<\left|\alpha-\alpha_{1}\right| x_{i}$, and if $j_{0}=n$, that $\left|\alpha-\alpha_{n}\right|_{x_{i}}\left\langle s_{\alpha, x_{i}}\right)$. Since in $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}\left(x_{i}\right)}^{1, \text { an }}$ :

$$
r=|R|_{\eta_{\alpha, s_{\alpha}, x_{i}}}=|T-\alpha|_{\eta_{\alpha, s_{\alpha, x_{i}}}}^{m} \prod_{j=1}^{n}\left|T-\alpha_{i}\right|_{\eta_{\alpha, s_{\alpha, x_{i}}}}=s_{\alpha, x_{i}}^{m} \cdot \prod_{j=1}^{n} \max \left(s_{\alpha, x_{i}},\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right|_{x_{i}}\right),
$$

we obtain that $s_{\alpha, x_{i}}=\sqrt[j_{0}+m]{\frac{r}{\prod_{j=j_{0}+1}^{n}\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right| x_{i}}}$ (this means that $s_{\alpha, x_{i}}=\sqrt[n+m]{r}$ if $j_{0}=n$.) Note that $\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right|_{x_{i}} \neq 0$ for all $j>j_{0}$ seeing as $s_{\alpha, x_{i}}<\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right|_{x_{i}}$.

Since the function $Z^{\prime} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{>0}, y \mapsto\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right|_{y}$ is continuous for all $j=1,2, \ldots, n$, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{i, 1}$ of $x_{i}$ in $Z^{\prime}$ such that $\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right|_{y} \neq 0$ for all $j>j_{0}$ and all $y \in Z_{i, 1}$.

Let us define $s_{\alpha}^{i}: Z_{i, 1} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{>0}$ by $y \mapsto \sqrt[j_{0}+m]{\frac{r}{\prod_{j=j_{0}+1}^{n}\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right| y}}$. It is a continuous function and $s_{\alpha, x_{i}}=s_{\alpha}^{i}\left(x_{i}\right)$. Also, $\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right|_{x_{i}}<s_{\alpha}^{i}\left(x_{i}\right)<\left|\alpha-\alpha_{l}\right|_{x_{i}}$ for all $j, l$ for which $j \leqslant j_{0}<l$. Since on all sides of these strict inequalities we have continuous functions, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{i}^{\prime}$ of $x_{i}$ in $Z_{i, 1}$ such that for all $y \in Z_{i}^{\prime}, s_{\alpha}^{i}(y)$ is positive and $\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right|_{y}<s_{\alpha}^{i}(y)<\left|\alpha-\alpha_{l}\right|_{y}$ for all $j, l$ for which $j \leqslant j_{0}<l$.

Consequently, for $y \in Z_{i}^{\prime}$, in $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(y)}^{1, \text { an }},|R(T)|_{\eta_{\alpha, s_{\alpha}^{i}(y)}}=s_{\alpha}^{i}(y)^{j_{0}+m} \cdot \prod_{j=j_{0}+1}^{n}\left|\alpha-\alpha_{j}\right|_{y}=r$. We can now conclude by using Lemma 4.1.10.

Finally, the last part of the statement is a direct consequence of the fact that $Z^{\prime}$ is Hausdorff.

Remark 4.1.12. Lemma 4.1.11 is clearly true for any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x_{i}$ contained in $Z_{i}^{\prime}$.

Let $Z_{i}$ be any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x_{i}$ such that $Z_{i} \subseteq Z_{i}^{\prime}$. In view of Lemma 4.1.11, for any $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, t\},\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z_{i}}^{1, \text { an }}:|R(T)|_{u}=r\right\}=\bigcup_{R(\alpha)=0}\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z_{i}}^{1, \text { an }}:\right.$ $\left.|T-\alpha|_{u}=s_{\alpha}^{i}(\pi(u))\right\}$. For any root $\alpha$ of $R(T)$, set $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}:=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z_{i}}^{1, \text { an }}:|T-\alpha|_{u}=s_{\alpha}^{i}(\pi(u))\right\}$.

Lemma 4.1.13. For $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, t\}$, the set $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}$ is connected.
Proof. Seeing as $s_{\alpha}^{i}$ is a continuous function, $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}$ is a closed and hence compact subset of $\mathbb{P}_{Z_{i}}^{1, \text { an }}$. Suppose that $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}$ is not connected and assume it can be written as a disjoint union of two closed subsets $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime}$ and $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime \prime}$. Since $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}$ is compact in $\mathbb{P}_{Z_{i}}^{1, \text { an }}$, so are $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime}$ and $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime \prime}$. Since the morphism $\pi$ is proper, $\pi\left(S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime}\right)$ and $\pi\left(S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime \prime}\right)$ are both compact subsets of $Z_{i}$. Also, $\pi\left(S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}\right)=Z_{i}$, implying $Z_{i}=\pi\left(S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime}\right) \cup \pi\left(S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime \prime}\right)$. Assume that $\pi\left(S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime}\right) \cap \pi\left(S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime \prime}\right) \neq \emptyset$. This means that there exists a point $y \in Z_{i}$, such that both $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(y)}^{1, \text { an }} \cap S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime}$ and $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(y)}^{1, \text { an }} \cap S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime \prime}$ are non-empty. But then, the connected domain $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(y)}^{1, \text { an }}:|T-\alpha|_{u}=s_{\alpha}^{i}(y)\right\}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(y)}^{1, \text { an }}$ can be written as the union of two disjoint closed subsets, which is impossible. Thus, $\pi\left(S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime}\right) \cap \pi\left(S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}^{\prime \prime}\right)=\emptyset$, so $Z_{i}$ can be written as a disjoint union of two closed subsets. This is impossible seeing as $Z_{i}$ is connected. Consequently, $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}$ is connected.

Recall that the finite morphism $Z^{\prime} \rightarrow Z_{1}$ was denoted by $\varphi$. Let $U_{i} \subseteq Z_{i}^{\prime}$ be open neighborhoods of $x_{i}$ in $Z^{\prime}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$. Then, by [25, Lemma I.1.2], there exists a neighborhood $U$ of $x$ in $Z$, such that $\varphi^{-1}(U) \subseteq \bigcup_{i=1}^{t} U_{i} \subseteq \bigcup_{i=1}^{t} Z_{i}^{\prime}$. Let $Z_{0} \subseteq U$ be any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. Then, $\varphi^{-1}\left(Z_{0}\right)$ (which is a subset of $\bigcup_{i=1}^{t} Z_{i}^{\prime}$ ) is an affinoid domain of $Z^{\prime}$.

Any connected component $C$ of $\varphi^{-1}\left(Z_{0}\right)$ is mapped surjectively onto $Z_{0}$. To see this, remark that $\varphi$ is at the same time a closed and open morphism (see [ $\mathbf{6}$, Lemma 3.2.4]). Consequently, $\varphi(C)$ is a closed and open subset of $Z_{0}$. Since $Z_{0}$ is connected, $\varphi(C)=Z_{0}$. Thus, for any $i$, there exists exactly one connected component $Z_{i}$ of $\varphi^{-1}\left(Z_{0}\right)$ containing $x_{i}$ and $\varphi^{-1}\left(Z_{0}\right)=\bigcup_{i=1}^{t} Z_{i}$. By construction, $Z_{i} \subseteq Z_{i}^{\prime}$.

Let us look at the induced finite morphism $\psi: \mathbb{P}_{\varphi^{-1}\left(Z_{0}\right)}^{1, \text { an }}=\bigsqcup_{i=1}^{t} \mathbb{P}_{Z_{i}}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{Z_{0}}^{1, \text { an }}$. The preimage of $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z_{0}}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}$ by $\psi$ is the affinoid $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\varphi^{-1}\left(Z_{0}\right)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}$. Recall that for any $i,\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z_{i}}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}=\bigcup_{R(\alpha)=0} S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}$, so

$$
\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\varphi^{-1}\left(Z_{0}\right)}^{1, \mathrm{an}}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}=\bigcup_{i=1}^{t} \bigcup_{R(\alpha)=0} S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}
$$

By Lemma 4.1.13, each of the $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}$ is connected, and thus so is $\psi\left(S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}\right)$. Since $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}} \cap$ $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}\left(x_{i}\right)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\} \neq \emptyset$, we also have $\psi\left(S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}\right) \cap\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\} \neq \emptyset$. Consequently, the type 3 point $\eta_{R, r} \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ is contained in all of the $S_{\alpha, Z_{i}}$.

Finally, seeing as $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\varphi^{11}\left(Z_{0}\right)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}$ can be written as a finite union of connected sets, all of which contain a common point, it is connected.

It is immediate from the constructions we made that the same is true for any other connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ contained in $Z_{0}$.
4.1.4. Towards Relative Nice Covers. We construct here a relative version of nice covers around the fiber. We keep Notation 4.1.5.

Definition 4.1.14. Let $P_{i} \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ be irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ and $r_{i} \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, i=$ $1,2, \ldots, n$. The set $A=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n\right\}$, where $\bowtie_{i} \in\{\leqslant, \geqslant\}$, is an affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. For any affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$ for which $P_{i} \in \mathcal{O}(Z)[T]$ for all $i=1,2, \ldots, n$, we will denote by $A_{Z}$ the affinoid domain $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n\right\}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ and call it the $Z$-thickening of $A$.

Remark 4.1.15. The thickening of an affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ depends on the polynomials we choose to represent its boundary points. Hence, from now on, when speaking of the thickening of such an affinoid, we will, unless it plays a specific role (in which case we mention it explicitely), always assume that a writing of the boundary points was fixed a priori.

Recall Notation 4.1.5.
Let $U$ and $V$ be connected affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ containing only type 3 points in their boundaries. Suppose that $U \cap V$ is a single type 3 point $\{\eta\}$. This means that $U \cap V=\partial U \cap \partial V=\{\eta\}$. By Lemma 4.1.7, there exist $R(T) \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ and $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{|\mathcal{H}(x)|}$ such that $\eta=\eta_{R, r}$.

By Lemma 4.1.2, either $U \subseteq\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u} \leqslant r\right\}$ or $U \subseteq\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u} \geqslant r\right\}$. Without loss of generality, let us assume $U \subseteq\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u} \leqslant r\right\}$. Then, by Lemma 4.1.4, $V \subseteq\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u} \geqslant r\right\}$. Set $\partial U=\left\{\eta_{R, r}, \eta_{P_{i}, r_{i}}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ and $\partial V=$ $\left\{\eta_{R, r}, \eta_{P_{j}^{\prime}, r_{j}^{\prime}}\right\}_{j=1}^{m}$, where $P_{i}, P_{j}^{\prime} \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ are irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$, and $r_{i}, r_{j}^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}$, for all $i$ and $j$. By Proposition 4.1.1:

$$
\begin{aligned}
U & =\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u} \leqslant r,\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n\right\}, \\
V & =\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u} \geqslant r,\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, j=1,2, \ldots, m\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\bowtie_{i}, \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} \in\{\leqslant, \geqslant\}$ for all $i, j$. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$ in $S$, such that $P_{i}, P_{j}^{\prime}, R \in \mathcal{O}(Z)[T]$ for all $i, j$. Let us study the relationship between the $Z$-thickenings $U_{Z}, V_{Z}$ of $U$ and $V$, respectively.

Proposition 4.1.16. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$ such that:
(1) $U_{Z^{\prime}} \cap V_{Z^{\prime}}=(U \cap V)_{Z^{\prime}}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}$;
(2) $U_{Z^{\prime}} \cup V_{Z^{\prime}}=(U \cup V)_{Z^{\prime}}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i},\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, i, j\right\} \quad$ (see Lemma 4.1.4). If $n=m=0$, this means that $U_{Z^{\prime}} \cup V_{Z^{\prime}}=\mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}$.
The same is true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$.
Proof. Recall that we denote by $F_{x}$ the fiber of $x$ with respect to the morphism $\pi$. We will make use of the following:

Lemma 4.1.17. Let $A, B, C$ be closed subsets of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ such that $A \cap B \cap F_{x}=C \cap F_{x}$. Suppose there exists an open $W$ of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ such that $A \cap B \cap W=C \cap W$ and $C \cap F_{x} \subseteq W$. Then, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$ such that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x, A \cap B \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime \prime}\right)=C \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime \prime}\right)$.

Proof. Set $F_{1}=A \cap B \cap W^{c}$, and $F_{2}=C \cap W^{c}$, where $W^{c}$ is the complement of $W$ in $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$. Remark that $F_{i}$ is a closed hence compact set, and that $F_{i} \cap F_{x}=\emptyset, i=1,2$. Since $\pi$ is proper, $\pi\left(F_{i}\right)$ is a closed subset of $Z$, and it does not contain $x$. Thus, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$ such that $Z^{\prime} \cap \pi\left(F_{i}\right)=\emptyset, i=1,2$. Consequently, $\pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right) \cap F_{i}=\emptyset$.

Remark that $\pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right) \cap F_{1}=\pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right) \cap A \cap B \cap W^{c}=\emptyset$, so $\pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right) \cap A \cap B \subseteq W$. Similarly, $\pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right) \cap C \subseteq W$. Finally, $A \cap B \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)=A \cap B \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right) \cap W=C \cap W \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)=$ $C \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)$. Clearly, the same remains true when replacing $Z^{\prime}$ by any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$.
(1) Set $W=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i},\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, i, j\right\}$, where $\bowtie_{i}$ (resp. $\bowtie_{j}^{\prime}$ ) is the strict version of $\bowtie_{i}$ (resp. $\bowtie_{j}^{\prime}$ ), meaning for example if $\bowtie_{i}$ is $\leqslant$ then $\bowtie_{i}$ is $<$. Set also $A=U_{Z}, B=V_{Z}$, and $C=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}$. Remark that: $W$ is open, $A, B, C$ are closed, $A \cap B \cap W=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=\right.$ $\left.r,\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i},\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, i, j\right\}=C \cap W$, and $A \cap B \cap F_{x}=U \cap V=\left\{\eta_{R, r}\right\}=C \cap F_{x}$. By Lemma 4.1.17, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime}$ of $x$ such that $U_{Z^{\prime}} \cap V_{Z^{\prime}}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u}=r\right\}=(U \cap V)_{Z^{\prime}}$, and the same remains true when replacing $Z^{\prime}$ with any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$.
(2) Set $W=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, j=1, \ldots, m\right\}$, where $\unrhd_{j}^{\prime}$ is the strict version of $\bowtie_{j}^{\prime}$. Set also $A=C=U_{Z}$ and $B=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i},\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, i, j\right\}$. Clearly, $W$ is open and $A, B, C$ are closed. Also, $A \cap B \cap W=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{u} \leqslant r,\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i}\right.$ $\left.r_{i},\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, i, j\right\}=C \cap W$.

Let us look at the affinoid domain $V_{1}:=\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right| y \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, j=\right.$ $1, \ldots, m\}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. As $\partial V=\left\{\eta_{R, r}, \eta_{P_{j}^{\prime}, r_{j}^{\prime}}\right\}_{j=1}^{m}$, for any $i \neq j,\left\{\left|P_{i}^{\prime}\right| \bowtie_{i}^{\prime} r_{i}^{\prime}\right\} \nsubseteq$ $\left\{\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right| \unrhd_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}\right\}$. Otherwise, $V \subseteq\left\{\left|P_{i}^{\prime}\right| \bowtie_{i}^{\prime} r_{i}^{\prime}\right\} \subseteq\left\{\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right| \bigotimes_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}\right\}$, implying $\eta_{P_{j}^{\prime}, r_{j}^{\prime}} \notin V$, contradiction. By Lemma 4.1.3, $\partial V_{1}=\left\{\eta_{P_{j}^{\prime}, r_{j}^{\prime}}\right\}_{j=1}^{m}$, and so $\operatorname{Int}\left(V_{1}\right)$ is $W \cap \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. Remark that $V \subseteq V_{1}$, so $\eta_{R, r} \in V_{1}$.

LEMMA 4.1.18. $\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{y} \leqslant r\right\} \subseteq \operatorname{Int}\left(V_{1}\right)$.
Proof. Suppose there exists $w \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ such that $|R|_{w}<r$ and $w \notin V_{1}$. Then, there exists $j_{0} \in\{1,2, \ldots, m\}$, such that $\left|P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}\right|_{w} \bowtie_{j_{0}}^{\prime C} r_{j_{0}}^{\prime}$, where $\bowtie_{j_{0}}^{C}$ is the inverse sign to $\bowtie_{j_{0}}^{\prime}\left(e . g\right.$. if $\bowtie_{j_{0}}^{\prime}$ is $\leqslant$ then $\bowtie_{j_{0}}^{\prime C}$ is $\left.>\right)$. Let $v \in \operatorname{Int}(V) \subseteq \operatorname{Int}\left(V_{1}\right)$, so that $|R|_{v}>r$ and $\left|P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}\right|_{v} \bowtie_{j_{0}}^{\prime} r_{j_{0}}^{\prime}$. Let us look at the unique $\operatorname{arc}[v, w]$ in $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. Since $|R|_{v}>r$ and $|R|_{w}<r, \eta_{R, r} \in[v, w]$. The same is true for $\eta_{P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}, r_{j_{0}}^{\prime}}$.

We have that $[w, v]=\left[w, \eta_{P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}, r_{j_{0}}^{\prime}}\right] \cup\left[\eta_{P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}, r_{j_{0}}^{\prime}}, v\right]$. Since $|R|_{\eta_{P_{0}^{\prime}}^{\prime}, r_{j_{0}}^{\prime}}>r$ (recall $\eta_{P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}, r_{j_{0}}^{\prime}} \in V$ and the only point of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ satisfying $|R|=r$ is $\left.\eta_{R, r}\right)$ and $|R|_{w}<r$, we obtain that $\eta_{R, r} \in\left[w, \eta_{P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}, r_{j_{0}}^{\prime}}\right]$. Thus, we can write the following decomposition of the arc connecting $v$ and $w:[w, v]=\left[w, \eta_{R, r}\right] \cup\left[\eta_{R, r}, \eta_{P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}, r_{j_{0}}^{\prime}}\right] \cup\left[\eta_{P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}, r_{j_{0}}^{\prime}}, v\right]$. Similarly, $\left|P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}\right|_{\eta_{R, r}} \unrhd_{j_{0}}^{\prime} r_{j}$ and $\left|P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}\right|_{z} \bowtie_{j_{0}}^{\prime C} r_{j_{0}}^{\prime}$, so $\eta_{P_{j_{0}}^{\prime}, r_{j}^{\prime}} \in\left[w, \eta_{R, r}\right]$, which is in contradiction with the injectivity of $[w, v]$. Thus, $\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{y} \leqslant r\right\}=\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{y}<r\right\} \cup$ $\left\{\eta_{R, r}\right\} \subseteq V_{1}$.

We showed before that $\partial V_{1}=\left\{\eta_{P_{j}^{\prime}, r_{j}^{\prime}}\right\}_{j=1}^{n}$. Since for any $j, \eta_{P_{j}^{\prime}, r_{j}^{\prime}} \in V,|R|_{\eta_{P_{j}^{\prime}, r_{j}^{\prime}}}>$ $r$. This implies that $\eta_{P_{j}^{\prime}, r_{j}^{\prime}} \notin\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1 \text {,an }}:|R|_{y} \leqslant r\right\}$. Consequently, $\partial V_{1} \cap\{y \in$ $\left.\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{y} \leqslant r\right\}=\emptyset$, implying $\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{y} \leqslant r\right\} \subseteq \operatorname{Int}\left(V_{1}\right)$.

From the lemma above, $U \subseteq\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1 \text {,an }}:|R|_{y} \leqslant r\right\} \subseteq \operatorname{Int}\left(V_{1}\right)=W \cap \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. Thus, $A \cap B \cap F_{x}=\left\{y \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|R|_{y} \leqslant r,\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i},\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, i, j\right\}=U \cap V_{1}=$ $U=C \cap F_{x} \subseteq V_{1} \subseteq W$. This means that Lemma 4.1.17 is applicable, so there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1}^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$ such that $U_{Z} \cap B \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z_{1}^{\prime}\right)=$ $U_{Z} \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z_{1}^{\prime}\right)$, implying $U_{Z_{1}^{\prime}} \subseteq B \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z_{1}^{\prime}\right)$, and the same remains true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1}^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z_{1}^{\prime}$ of $x$.

Using similar arguments one shows that there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{2}^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$ such that $V_{Z_{2}^{\prime}} \subseteq B \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z_{2}^{\prime}\right)$, and the same remains true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{2}^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z_{2}^{\prime}$ of $x$.

Thus, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$ such that $U_{Z^{\prime}} \cup V_{Z^{\prime}} \subseteq B_{Z^{\prime}}:=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i},\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime}, i, j\right\}$, and the same is true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$. Let $u \in B_{Z^{\prime \prime}}:=$ $B_{Z^{\prime}} \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime \prime}\right)$. If $|R|_{u} \leqslant r$, then $u \in U_{Z^{\prime \prime}}$. If $|R|_{u} \geqslant r$, then $u \in V_{Z^{\prime \prime}}$. Consequently, $u \in U_{Z^{\prime \prime}} \cup V_{Z^{\prime \prime}}$, and $U_{Z^{\prime \prime}} \cup V_{Z^{\prime \prime}}=B_{Z^{\prime \prime}}$.

Let us show that this construction of affinoid domains in $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$, where $Z$ is a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$, gives us a family of neighborhoods of the points of $F_{x}$ in $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ (given we choose $Z$ small enough).

Lemma 4.1.19. Let $A$ be an open subset of $\mathbb{P}_{S}^{1, a n}$ such that $A \cap F_{x} \neq \emptyset$. Let $U=\{u \in$ $\left.\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n\right\}, \bowtie_{i} \in\{\leqslant, \geqslant\}$, be any affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ contained in $A \cap F_{x}$, where $P_{i} \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ is irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ and $r_{i} \in \mathbb{R}_{\geqslant 0}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$. Then, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$, such that $P_{i} \in \mathcal{O}(Z)[T]$ for all $i$, and $U_{Z} \subseteq A$. The same is true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$.

Proof. Let $Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ for which the thickening $U_{Z_{0}}$ exists. Suppose $U_{Z_{0}} \nsubseteq A$. Then, $U_{Z_{0}} \backslash A$ is a non-empty compact subset of $\mathbb{P}_{S}^{1, \text { an }}$. This implies that $\pi\left(U_{Z_{0}} \backslash A\right)$ is a compact subset of $S$. Furthermore, since $U \subseteq A, x \notin$ $\pi\left(U_{Z_{0}} \backslash A\right)$, so there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that $Z \cap \pi\left(U_{Z_{0}} \backslash A\right)=\emptyset$. This implies that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x, U_{Z^{\prime}} \backslash A=\pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right) \cap\left(U_{Z_{0}} \backslash A\right)=\emptyset$, and finally that $U_{Z^{\prime}} \subseteq A$.

Let $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ be a nice cover of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. Let $S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}=\left\{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}, \ldots, \eta_{t}\right\}$ be the set of intersection points of the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$. For any $\eta_{i} \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}, i=1,2, \ldots, t$, there exist $R_{i} \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ and $r_{i} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}$, such that $\eta_{i}=\eta_{R_{i}, r_{i}}$. Since $\bigcup_{U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}} \partial U=S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, all pieces of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ are a combination of intersections of the affinoid domains $\left\{\left|R_{i}\right| \bowtie_{i} r_{i}\right\}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$, where $\bowtie_{i} \in\{\leqslant, \geqslant\}, i=1,2, \ldots, t$.

For any affinoid neighborhood $Z_{a}$ of $x$ such that $R_{i} \in \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{a}\right)[T]$ for all $i$, let us denote by $\mathcal{U}_{Z_{a}}$ the set of $Z_{a}$-thickenings of the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$. Let $Z^{\prime}$ be a fixed connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ such that $R_{i} \in \mathcal{O}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)[T]$ for all $i=1,2, \ldots, t$.

Theorem 4.1.20. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$ such that the set $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ is a cover of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$, and
(1) for any $U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$, the $Z$-thickening $U_{Z}$ is a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$;
(2) for any different $U, V \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$, either $U_{Z} \cap V_{Z}=\emptyset$ or there exists a unique $j \in\{1, \ldots, t\}$ such that $U_{Z} \cap V_{Z}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|R_{j}\right|_{u}=r_{j}\right\}=(U \cap V)_{Z}$ is a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$; in particular, $U_{Z} \cap V_{Z} \neq \emptyset$ if and only if $U \cap V \neq \emptyset$;
(3) for any $U_{Z}, V_{Z} \in \mathcal{U}_{Z}, U_{Z} \cup V_{Z}$ is either $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ or a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ that is the $Z$-thickening of $U \cup V$.
The statement is true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$.
Proof. By Theorem 4.1.9, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$, such that $R_{i} \in \mathcal{O}(Z)[T]$ and the affinoid domains $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|R_{i}\right|_{u}=r_{i}\right\}$ are all connected. We may also assume that for any two non-disjoint elements $U=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{i}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{i} r_{i},|R|_{u} \leqslant r\right.$ : $i=1, \ldots, n\}$ and $V=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|P_{j}^{\prime}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{j}^{\prime} r_{j}^{\prime},|R|_{u} \geqslant r: j=1, \ldots, m\right\}$ of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$, Proposition 4.1.16 holds.

Let $\mathcal{U}_{x}=\left\{U_{1}, U_{2}, \ldots, U_{n}\right\}$. By Lemma 3.1.18, there exist $n-1$ elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ whose union is connected. Without loss of generality, let us assume that $V:=\bigcup_{l=1}^{n-1} U_{l}$ is connected. By Theorem 1.8.15, this is a connected affinoid domain, and $V \cup U_{n}=\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. Since $V, U_{n}$, and $U_{n} \cup V$ are connected subsets of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}, U_{n} \cap V$ is a non-empty connected set, hence a single type 3 point $\left\{\eta_{R_{j}, r_{j}}\right\}$ for some $j \in\{1,2, \ldots, t\}$. In particular, this implies that $U_{n}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|R_{j}\right|_{u} \bowtie r_{j}\right\}$, where $\bowtie \in\{\leqslant, \geqslant\}$. Let us assume without loss of generality that $U_{n}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|R_{j}\right|_{u} \geqslant r_{j}\right\}$. Then, $V=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|R_{j}\right|_{u} \leqslant r_{j}\right\}$ (see Lemma 4.1.4 to recall what the inequalities for the union of two non-disjoint elements of a nice cover look like). Consequently, $U_{n, Z}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, a n}:\left|R_{j}\right|_{u} \geqslant r_{j}\right\}$ and by Proposition 4.1.16, $V_{Z}=\left(\bigcup_{l=1}^{n-1} U_{i}\right)_{Z}=\bigcup_{i=1}^{n-1} U_{i, Z}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, a n}:\left|R_{j}\right|_{u} \leqslant r_{j}\right\}$, so $U_{n, Z} \cup V_{Z}=\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, a n}$, and $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ is a cover of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$.

Let $U \neq V \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$. Clearly, if $U_{Z} \cap V_{Z}=\emptyset$, then $U \cap V=\emptyset$. Assume $U \cap V=\emptyset$. Suppose $A:=U_{Z} \cap V_{Z} \neq \emptyset$. Remark that $A \cap F_{x}=\emptyset$. Since $A$ is compact and $\pi$ proper, $\pi(A)$ is a
compact subset of $Z$ not containing $x$. Thus, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1} \subseteq Z$, such that $A \cap \pi^{-1}\left(Z_{1}\right)=\emptyset$, and $U_{Z_{1}} \cap V_{Z_{1}}=\emptyset$. Thus, we may assume that for any disjoint $U, V \in \mathcal{U}_{x}, U_{Z} \cap V_{Z}=\emptyset$, which, taking into account Proposition 4.1.16, shows that property (2) of the statement is true.

Property (3) is a consequence of [ $\mathbf{6}$, Corollary 2.2.7(i)] if $U_{Z} \cap V_{Z}=\emptyset$, and of Proposition 4.1.16 if not. Let $Z$ be such that property (2) is satisfied. Suppose there exists $U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$ such that $U_{Z}$ is not connected. Let $C$ be a connected component of $U_{Z}$ that doesn't intersect $F_{x}$, and $B$ the connected component that does. For any $V \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$ for which $U \cap V=\emptyset$, $C \cap V_{Z} \subseteq U_{Z} \cap V_{Z}=\emptyset$. For any $V \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$ for which $U \cap V \neq \emptyset$, there exists a unique $j$ such that $U_{Z} \cap V_{Z}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|R_{j}\right|_{u}=r_{j}\right\}$ is a connected affinoid domain, so $U_{Z} \cap V_{Z}=B \cap V_{Z}$. Consequently, $C \cap V_{Z}=\emptyset$. This means that $C \cap\left(\left(U_{Z} \backslash C\right) \cup \bigcup_{V \in \mathcal{U}_{x}, U \neq V} V_{Z}\right)=\emptyset$, and $C \cup\left(\left(U_{Z} \backslash C\right) \cup \bigcup_{V \in \mathcal{U}_{x}, U \neq V} V_{Z}\right)=\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$, implying $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ is not connected, contradiction. This proves the first part of the statement.

The last part is immediate from the nature of the proof.
Finally:
Definition 4.1.21. Let $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ be a nice cover of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$, and $Z$ a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ such that the $Z$-thickening of all of the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ exist. Let us denote this set by $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$. We will say it is a $Z$-thickening of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$. The set $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ will be said to be a $Z$-relative nice cover of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ if the statement of Theorem 4.1.20 is satisfied.

Remark 4.1.22. Whenever taking the thickening of a nice cover $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ to obtain a $Z$-relative nice cover of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ for a suitably chosen $Z$, we will suppose that a writing was fixed simultaneously for all of the points of $\bigcup_{U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}} \partial U$, and that constructions were made based on this "compatible" writing of the boundary points (as we did e.g. in Proposition 4.1.16 and Theorem 4.1.20). The same principle goes for any family of affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ whose $Z$-thickenings we consider simultaneously.

We have shown:
Theorem 4.1.23. Let $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ be a nice cover of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$ such that the $Z$-thickening of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ exists and is a $Z$-relative nice cover of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$. The same is true for any other connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$.

Corollary 4.1.24. Let $U$ be a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ containing only type 3 points in its boundary. There exists an affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$ in $S$ such that the $Z$-thickening $U_{Z}$ exists and is connected. The same is true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$.

Proof. If $U$ is a type 3 point, then this is Theorem 4.1.9. Suppose this is not the case. By Lemma 3.1.11, there exists a nice cover $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ such that $U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$. Let $Z$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ such that the $Z$-thickening $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ exists and is a $Z$-relative nice cover. Then, $U_{Z} \in \mathcal{U}_{Z}$ is connected. The last part of the statement is clear since the same property is true in Theorem 4.1.20.

Remark 4.1.25. The notion of a $Z$-relative nice cover can be extended to connected affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ that are $Z$-thickenings of affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$.

### 4.2. A norm comparison

As seen in the previous section, when constructing relative nice covers we often have to restrict to smaller neighborhoods of the fiber. The same phenomenon appears when trying to apply the patching results of Chapter 2 to this setting. This is why we need some uniform-boundedness-type results.

Recall Notation 4.1.5. Let $Z$ be any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ in $S$. Set $A_{Z}=\mathcal{O}(Z)$. The $k$-algebra $A_{Z}$ is a $k$-affinoid algebra, and since $Z$ is connected and reduced (recall $S$ is normal), $A_{Z}$ is an integral domain. By Proposition 1.3.15(2), the spectral norm $\rho_{Z}$ of $A_{Z}$ is equivalent to the norm of $A_{Z}$, and it satisfies: for all $f \in A_{Z}$, $|f|_{\rho_{Z}}=\max _{y \in Z}|f|_{y}$. In this section, for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$ in $S$, we endow the corresponding affinoid algebra $A_{Z}$ with its spectral norm $\rho_{Z}$.

For any positive real number $r$, we will use the notation $A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\}$ (where $T$ is a fixed variable on $\left.\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)$ for the $A_{Z}$-affinoid algebra $\left\{\sum_{n \geqslant 0} \frac{a_{n}}{T^{n}}: a_{n} \in A_{Z}, \lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{-n}=0\right\}$ with corresponding submultiplicative norm $\left|\sum_{n \geqslant 0} \frac{a_{n}}{T^{n}}\right|:=\max _{n}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{-n}$.

Remark 4.2.1. In what follows we suppose that the coefficient $r$ is not an element of $\sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$. The only reason behind this assumption is to be able to guarantee the connectedness of the affinoid domains that are considered. If we assume connectedness, then the rest works the same regardless of whether $r \in \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$or not.
4.2.1. The case of degree one polynomials. Let $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}$.
(1) Set $X_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{u} \leqslant r\right\}$. It is an affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$, and $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}\right)=A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}$, where

$$
A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}=\left\{\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n} T^{n}, a_{n} \in A_{Z}, \lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n}=0\right\}
$$

and it is endowed with the norm $\left|\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n} T^{n}\right|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}:=\max _{n \geqslant 0}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n}$.
(2) Set $X_{|T| \geqslant r, Z}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{u} \geqslant r\right\}$. It is an affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ and $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \geqslant r, Z}\right)=A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\}$, where

$$
A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\}=\left\{\sum_{n \geqslant 0} \frac{a_{n}}{T^{n}}: a_{n} \in A_{Z}, \lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{-n}=0\right\}
$$

and it is endowed with the norm $\left|\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n} T^{n}\right||T| \geqslant r, Z:=\max _{n \geq 0}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{-n}$.
(3) Set $X_{|T|=r, Z}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{u}=r\right\}$. It is an affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ and $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T|=r, Z}\right)=A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}$, where

$$
A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}=\left\{\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n} T^{n}: a_{n} \in A_{Z}, \lim _{n \rightarrow \pm \infty}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n}=0\right\}
$$

and it is endowed with the norm $\left|\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n} T^{n}\right|_{|T|=r, Z}:=\max _{n \in \mathbb{Z}}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n}$.
By Corollary 4.1.24, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{T}$ of $x$ in $S$ such that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{T}$ of $x$, the affinoids $X_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}, X_{|T| \geqslant r, Z}$ and $X_{|T|=r, Z}$ are connected (and hence integral). For the rest of this subsection, we suppose $Z \subseteq Z_{T}$.

Lemma 4.2.2. The norms $|\cdot|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z},|\cdot|_{|T| \geqslant r, Z},|\cdot|_{|T|=r, Z}$ defined above are equal to the spectral norms on $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}, A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\}, A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}$, respectively.

Proof. By Theorem 1.1.38, for any affinoid space $X$, its associated spectral norm $\rho_{X}$ has the property that $|f|_{\rho_{X}}=\max _{y \in X}|f|_{y}$ for all $f \in \mathcal{O}(X)$.

Let $f=\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n} T^{n}$ be any element of $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}$. Let $\rho_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}$ denote the spectral norm on the integral affinoid space $X_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}$. We will show that $|f|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}=|f|_{\rho_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}}$. By the remark in the paragraph above, $|f|_{\rho_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}}=\max _{u \in X_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}}|f|_{u}$. For any $y \in Z$, the fiber of $X_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}$ over $y$ is the disc $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(y)}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{y} \leqslant r\right\}$, whose Shilov boundary is the singleton $\left\{\eta_{0, r}^{y}\right\}$ (i.e. the point $\left.\eta_{0, r} \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(y)}^{1, \text { an }}\right)$. Consequently, in the fiber of $X_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}$ over $y$, the function $f$ attains its maximum on the point $\eta_{0, r}^{y}$, implying $|f|_{\rho_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}}=\max _{y \in Z}|f|_{\eta_{0, r}^{y}}$ (see also Lemma 4.2.24).

Since $|f|_{\eta_{0, r}^{y}}=\left|\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n} T^{n}\right|_{\eta_{0, r}^{y}}=\max _{n \geqslant 0}\left|a_{n}\right|_{y} r^{n}$, we obtain that

$$
|f|_{\rho_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}}=\max _{y \in Z} \max _{n \geqslant 0}\left|a_{n}\right|_{y} r^{n} .
$$

At the same time, $|f|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}=\max _{n \geqslant 0}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n}=\max _{n \geqslant 0} \max _{y \in Z}\left|a_{n}\right|_{y} r^{n}$, implying the equality of the statement.

The result is proven in the same way for the norms $|\cdot|_{|T| \geqslant r, Z}$ and $|\cdot|_{|T|=r, Z}$.
Corollary 4.2.3. Let $Z_{1} \subseteq Z$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. The restriction morphism $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z}\right) \rightarrow \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z_{1}}\right)$ is a contraction with respect to the corresponding norms $|\cdot|_{|T| \bowtie r, Z}$ and $|\cdot|_{|T| \bowtie r, Z_{1}}, \bowtie \in\{\leqslant,=, \geqslant\}$.

Lemma 4.2.4. The restriction maps $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}, A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\} \hookrightarrow A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}$ are isometries with respect to the corresponding norms $|\cdot|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z},|\cdot|_{|T| \geqslant r, Z}$, and $|\cdot|_{|T|=r, Z}$.

Proof. Let $f=\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n} T^{n} \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}$. Then, $|f|_{|T|=r, Z}=\max _{n}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n}=$ $|f|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}$. The same is true for $A\left\{r T^{-1}\right\}$.

Since $H^{1}\left(X_{|T| \leqslant r, Z} \cup X_{|T| \geqslant r, Z}, \mathcal{O}\right)=H^{1}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, \mathcal{O}\right)=0$, we have the following exact sequence:

$$
0 \rightarrow A_{Z} \rightarrow A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\} \oplus A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\} \rightarrow A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\} \rightarrow 0,
$$

which gives us a surjective morphism $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\} \oplus A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\} \rightarrow A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}$. Admissibility follows from Banach's Open Mapping Theorem if $k$ is non-trivially valued (for a proof see [14]), and by a change of basis followed by the Open Mapping Theorem if it is (see Proposition 1.3.8).

Lemma 4.2.5. For any $c \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}$, there exist $a \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}, b \in A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\}$ such that $a+b=c$ and $|c|_{|T|=r, Z}=\max \left(|a|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z},|b|_{|T| \geqslant r, Z}\right)$.

Proof. Let $c=\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n} T^{n} \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}$. Set $a=\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n} T^{n}$ and $b=$ $\sum_{n<0} a_{n} T^{n}$. Clearly, $a \in A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\}, b \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}$ and $a+b=c$. Furthermore, $|a|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}=\max _{n \geqslant 0}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n} \leqslant \max _{n \in \mathbb{Z}}\left|a_{n}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n}=|c|_{|T|=r, Z}$, and the same is true for b. Consequently, $\max \left(|a|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z},|b|_{|T| \geqslant r, T}\right) \leqslant|c|_{|T|=r, Z}$. At the same time, $|c|_{|T|=r, Z} \leqslant$ $\max \left(|a|_{|T|=r, Z},|b|_{|T|=r, Z}\right)$ and by Lemma 4.2.4, this is equal to $\max \left(|a|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z},|b|_{|T| \geqslant r, Z}\right)$.

Remark 4.2.6. All of the results of this subsection remain true if we replace $T$ by $T-\alpha$ for any $\alpha \in A_{Z}$.
4.2.2. The general case. Let $P(T)$ be a unitary polynomial over $\mathcal{O}_{x}$, irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$, and of degree bigger than 1. Then, there exists an affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime}$ of $x$ such that $P(T) \in \mathcal{O}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)[T]$. The connected affinoid neighbrohood $Z$ of $x$ in this subsection will always be assumed to satisfy $Z \subseteq Z^{\prime} \cap Z_{T}$.

Notation 4.2.7. Let $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}$. Set $X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{u} \leqslant r\right\}$, $X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{u} \geqslant r\right\}$ and $X_{|P|=r, Z}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{u}=r\right\}$. These are affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ (furthermore, $X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}$ and $X_{|P|=r, Z}$ are affinoid domains of $\left.\mathbb{A}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)$. By Corollary 4.1.24, there exists an affinoid neighborhood $Z_{P}$ of $x$ such that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{P}, X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}, X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}$ and $X_{|P|=r, Z}$ are connected (hence integral). For the rest of this subsection, we assume that $Z \subseteq Z^{\prime} \cap Z_{T} \cap Z_{P}$.

The rings $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right)$ and $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$ have been studied extensively and under more general conditions by Poineau in [59, Chapter 5]. Restricted to our setting, the following is shown:

LEMMA 4.2.8. Let $Z$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$, such that $Z \subseteq Z^{\prime} \cap$ $Z_{T} \cap Z_{P}$. Then, $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right) \cong \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}\right)[X] /(P(X)-T)=A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$, and $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)=\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T|=r, Z}\right)[Y] /(P(Y)-T)=A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[Y] /(P(Y)-T)$.

Proof. The statement can be seen by considering the finite morphism $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ induced by $A_{Z}[T] \rightarrow A_{Z}[T], T \mapsto P(T)$.

Lemma 4.2.9. Let $j_{P}$ denote the restriction morphism $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$. Then, the following diagram commutes and $j_{P}(X)=Y$.


Taking this into account, we will from now on write $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ and $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ (i.e. using the same variable $X$ ).

Proof. This follows again from the work of Poineau in [59, Chapter 5]. Remark that the finite morphism $A_{Z}[T] \rightarrow A_{Z}[T], T \rightarrow P(T)$, induces a finite morphism $\varphi: X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z} \rightarrow$ $X_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}$ and $\varphi^{-1}\left(X_{|T|=r, Z}\right)=X_{|P|=r, Z}$. The vertical maps of the diagram above are induced by $\varphi$, which implies its commutativity. Remark that $j_{T}(T)=T$. Also, since $\varphi^{-1}\left(X_{|T|=r, Z}\right)=X_{|P|=r, Z}$, we have that $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)=\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right) \otimes_{\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \leqslant r}\right)} \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T|=r, Z}\right)$. The restriction morphism $j_{P}$ is given by $f \mapsto f \otimes 1$, implying $j_{P}(X)=Y$.

Recall that $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right), \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)$, and $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$ are affinoid algebras, meaning they are naturally endowed with submultiplicative norms $|\cdot|_{\leqslant,}|\cdot| \geqslant$ and $|\cdot|=$, respectively. (These norms are uniquely determined only up to equivalence.) We start by giving an explicit choice for $|\cdot|_{\leqslant}$and $|\cdot|_{=}$.

The morphism $A_{Z}[T] \rightarrow A_{Z}[T], T \mapsto P(T)$ induces a finite morphism $\varphi_{Z}: \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow$ $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$, for which $\varphi_{Z}^{-1}\left(X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z}\right)=X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}$, where $\bowtie \in\{\leqslant,=, \geqslant\}$. In particular, this gives rise to a finite morphism $X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z} \rightarrow X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z}$, hence to a finite morphism $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z}\right) \rightarrow$ $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}\right)$. The latter gives rise to a surjective morphism $\psi_{1}: \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z}\right)^{n} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}\right)$
for some $n \in \mathbb{N}$. Let $|\cdot|_{\bowtie}^{\prime}$ denote the norm (determined up to equivalence) on $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}\right)$ obtained by $\psi_{1}$, i.e. making $\psi_{1}$ admissible.

Proposition 4.2.10. The norms $|\cdot|_{\bowtie}$ and $|\cdot|_{\bowtie}^{\prime}$ are equivalent, $\bowtie \in\{\leqslant,=, \geqslant\}$.
Proof. By Lemma 1.3.7, there exists a complete non-trivially valued field extension $K$ of $k$ such that $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z}\right) \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K=: \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z_{K}}\right)$ and $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}\right) \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K=: \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z_{K}}\right)$ are strict $K$-affinoid algebras, where $Z_{K}:=Z \times_{k} K$. Moreover, we have the following commutative diagram

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z}\right) \xrightarrow{T \mapsto P(T)} \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}\right) \\
\downarrow \widehat{\otimes}_{k} K \\
\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z_{K}}\right) \xrightarrow{T \mapsto P(T)} \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z_{K}}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

which gives rise to the following commutative diagram, where $\psi_{2}$ is a surjective admissible morphism induced by $\psi_{1}$ :


Let $|\cdot|_{\psi_{2}}$ be the norm (determined up to equivalence) on $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z_{K}}\right)$ induced by the morphism $\psi_{2}$. Then, $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z_{K}}\right)$ is a Banach $K$-algebra with respect to $|\cdot|_{\psi_{2}}$.

Since $\mathcal{O}\left(|X|_{|T| \bowtie r, Z}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z_{K}}\right)$ is an isometry (see [60, Lemme 3.1]), the diagram above implies that $\left(\mathcal{O}\left(|X|_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}\right),|\cdot|_{\bowtie}^{\prime}\right) \hookrightarrow\left(\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z_{K}}\right),|\cdot|_{\psi_{2}}\right)$ is also an isometry.

Let $|\cdot|_{\bowtie, K}$ denote the norm that the $K$-affinoid algebra $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z_{K}}\right)$ is naturally endowed with. Then, $\left(\mathcal{O}\left(|X|_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}\right),|\cdot|_{\bowtie}\right) \hookrightarrow\left(\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z_{K}}\right),|\cdot|_{\bowtie, K}\right)$ is an isometry (again, see [60, Lemme 3.1]).

Since $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z_{K}}\right)$ is a strict $K$-affinoid algebra, by $[11,6.1 .3 / 2]$, there is a unique way to define the structure of a Banach $K$-algebra on it. Hence, $|\cdot|_{\psi_{2}}$ is equivalent to $|\cdot|_{\bowtie, K}$, so the norms $|\cdot|_{\bowtie}^{\prime}$, resp. $|\cdot|_{\bowtie}$, they induce on $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}\right)$, are equivalent.

Notation 4.2.11. Set $d=\operatorname{deg} P$. Since $P(X)$ is unitary, any $f \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}[X] /(P(X)-$ $T)\left(\right.$ resp. $f \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ ) has a unique representation of the form $\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \alpha_{i} X^{i}$, where $\alpha_{i} \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}$ (resp. $\alpha_{i} \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}$ ) for all $i=0,1, \ldots, d-1$. Set $|f|_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}:=\max _{i}\left(\left|\alpha_{i}\right|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}\right.$ (resp. $|f|_{|P|=r, Z}:=\max _{i}\left(\left|\alpha_{i}\right|_{|T|=r, Z}\right)$ ). By Proposition 4.2.10, we can take $\left.|\cdot|_{\leqslant=\mid} \cdot\right|_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}$ and $|\cdot|_{=}=|\cdot|_{|P|=r, Z}$. (This kind of norm is called $\|\cdot\|_{U, \text { div }}$ in $[\mathbf{5 9}, 5.2]$; here $U$ is $X_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}$ or $\left.X_{|T|=r, Z}.\right)$

Let us now find a good representative for $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)$ and its norm. In what follows, we identify the $k$-affinoid algebras $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right)$ and $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)$ with $A_{Z}$-subalgebras of $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$ via the respective restriction morphisms. As before, since $H^{1}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, \mathcal{O}\right)=0$, we have the following short exact sequence:

$$
\begin{equation*}
0 \rightarrow A_{Z} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right) \oplus \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right) \rightarrow \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right) \rightarrow 0 \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $f \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)=A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$. Suppose its unique representative of degree $<d$ in $X$ is $f_{0}=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i}$, where $\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n, i} T^{n} \in$
$A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}$ for all $i$. Then, we can write the following decomposition for $f_{0}$ :

$$
f_{0}=a_{0,0}+\underbrace{\left(\sum_{n \geqslant 1} a_{n, 0} T^{n}+\sum_{i=1}^{d-1} \sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i}\right)}_{\alpha_{f}}+\underbrace{\left(\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \leqslant-1} a_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i}\right)}_{\beta_{f}} .
$$

Remark that $\alpha_{f} \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$.
Proposition 4.2.12. The $A_{Z}$-subalgebra $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)$ of $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$ is equal to

$$
B:=\left\{f \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T): f=a_{0,0}+\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \geqslant 1} \frac{a_{n, i}}{T^{n}} X^{i}\right\} .
$$

Proof. Let us first show that $B$ is closed with respect to multiplication. Let $f=a_{0,0}+$ $\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \geqslant 1} \frac{a_{n, i} T^{n}}{T^{i}}, g=b_{0,0}+\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \geqslant 1} \frac{b_{n, i}}{T^{n}} X^{i} \in B$. For any $m$ such that $d \leqslant m<2 d$, the coefficient corresponding to $X^{m}$ in the product $f g$ is of the form $\sum_{n \geqslant 2} \frac{c_{n, m}}{T^{n}}$ where $c_{n, m} \in A_{Z}$ for all $n, m$. By using Euclidian division, since $P(X)$ is unitary, we obtain $X^{m}=P(X) Q(X)+R(X)$ where $Q, R \in A_{Z}[X], \operatorname{deg} R<d$ and $\operatorname{deg} Q=m-d<d$. Hence, $\sum_{n \geqslant 2} \frac{c_{n, m}}{T^{n}} X^{m}=\sum_{n \geqslant 2} \frac{c_{n, m}}{T^{n}} P(X) Q(X)+\sum_{n \geqslant 2} \frac{c_{n, m}}{T^{n}} R(X)=\sum_{n \geqslant 1} \frac{c_{n, m}}{T^{n}} Q(X)+$ $\sum_{n \geqslant 2} \frac{c_{n, m}}{T n} R(X)$ in $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$, which is an element of $B$ seeing as $\operatorname{deg} Q, \operatorname{deg} R<d$. Consequently, $f g \in B$, and $B$ is an $A_{Z}$-algebra.

Let us consider the restriction morphism $\psi: A_{Z}=\mathcal{O}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right) \rightarrow \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r}, Z\right)$, a section of which is given as follows: for any $f \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r}, Z\right)$, let $f_{\infty}$ denote the restriction of $f$ to the Zariski closed subset $\mathcal{Z}:=\left\{x \in X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}:\left|T^{-1}\right|_{x}=0\right\}$. Remark that in the copy of $\mathbb{A}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ in $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ with coordinate $T^{-1}, \mathcal{Z}=\left\{u \in \mathbb{A}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:\left|T^{-1}\right|_{u}=0\right\}$, so $\mathcal{O}(\mathcal{Z})=A_{Z}$.

The morphism $s: \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r}, Z\right) \rightarrow A_{Z}, f \mapsto f_{\infty}$, is a section of $\psi$. Let $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)_{\infty}$ denote the kernel of $s$. Then, $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)=A_{Z} \oplus \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r}, Z\right)_{\infty}$.

Let us consider the following commutative diagram that is obtained from the short exact sequence 4 above.


Let $f \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$. By the surjectivity of $h^{\prime \prime}$ (from the short exact sequence 4) there exist $f_{1} \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right)$ and $f_{2} \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)$ such that $f_{1}+f_{2}=f$. Let $f_{2}^{\prime} \in A_{Z}$ and $f_{2}^{\prime \prime} \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)_{\infty}$ be such that $f_{2}=f_{2}^{\prime}+f_{2}^{\prime \prime}$ (as we saw above, such $f_{2}^{\prime}$, $f_{2}^{\prime \prime}$ are unique). Set $f_{1}^{\prime}:=f_{1}+f_{2}^{\prime}$ and remark that $f_{1}^{\prime} \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right)$. By the commutativity of the diagram, $h\left(f_{1}^{\prime}, f_{2}^{\prime \prime}\right)=f$, i.e. $h$ is surjective. Let us also show it is injective. Suppose $h(a, b)=0$ for some $a \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right)$ and $b \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)_{\infty} \subseteq \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)$. Then, $a+b=h^{\prime \prime}(a, b)=0$, and the exact sequence 4 implies that $a=-b \in A_{Z}$. Since $b \in A_{Z}$ and $b \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)_{\infty}$, we obtain that $b=0$ and $a=0$, i.e. $h$ is injective.

By Lemma 4.2.9, the map $s^{\prime}: \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right) \rightarrow \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right)$, which to an element $f_{0}:=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} d_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i}$ associates the element $f_{\geqslant}:=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \leqslant-1} d_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i}$, is a section of the isomorphism $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right) \oplus \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)_{\infty} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$. Consequently, $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)_{\infty}=\left\{f \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right): f=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \leqslant-1} a_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i}\right\}$.

Finally, since $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)=A_{Z} \oplus \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)_{\infty}$, we get:
$\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)=\left\{f \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T): f=a_{0,0}+\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \geqslant 1} \frac{a_{n, i}}{T^{n}} X^{i}\right\}$.

Remark 4.2.13. Let $I$ be the ideal of $A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\}$ generated by $T^{-1}$. Denote by $I[X]^{d-1}$ the polynomials on $X$ with coefficients in $I$ and degree at most $d-1$. Then, the $k$-affinoid algebra $B$ can be written as $\left(A_{Z} \oplus I[X]^{d-1}\right) /\left(P(X) T^{-1}-1\right)$, where multiplication is done using Euclidian division, just like in $B$.

Notation 4.2.14. The morphism $A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\} \rightarrow B, T^{-1} \mapsto \frac{1}{T}$ is finite (it is the one induced by $A_{Z}[T] \rightarrow A_{Z}[T], T \mapsto P(T)$ ), and $1, X, \ldots, X^{d-1}$ is a set of generators of $B$ as an $A_{Z}$-module. Let $|\cdot|_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}$ be the norm on $B$ induced by the norm $|\cdot||T| \geqslant 1, Z$ on $A_{Z}\left\{r T^{-1}\right\}$. By Theorem 1.3.9, $B$ is complete with respect to this norm. As before, by Proposition 4.2.10, we can take $|\cdot| \geqslant:=|\cdot|_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}$. Explicitely, for any $f:=a_{0,0}+$ $\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \geqslant 1} \frac{a_{n, i}}{T^{n}} X^{i}=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \alpha_{i} X^{i} \in B,|f|_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}=\max _{i}\left|\alpha_{i}\right|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}$.

Lemma 4.2.15. The restriction maps from $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ and $B$ to $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ are isometries with respect to the corresponding norms $|\cdot|_{|P| \leqslant r, Z},|\cdot|_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}$ and $|\cdot|_{|P|=r, Z}$.

Proof. Let $f=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i} \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$. Then, by Lemma 4.2.4, $|f|_{|P|=r, Z}=\max _{i}\left|\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n, i} T^{n}\right|_{|T|=r, Z}=\max _{i}\left|\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n, i} T^{n}\right|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}=|f|_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}$. The statement for $B$ is proven in the same way.

The exact sequence 4 above gives rise to a surjection $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T) \oplus B \rightarrow$ $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$. Admissibility follows from Banach's Open Mapping Theorem if $k$ is non-trivially valued (for a proof see [14]), and by a change of basis followed by the Open Mapping Theorem if it is (see Proposition 1.3.8).

Lemma 4.2.16. For any $c \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$, there exist $a \in$ $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ and $b \in B$ such that $a+b=c$ and $\max \left(|a|_{|P| \leqslant r, Z},|b|_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)=$ $|c|_{|P|=r, Z}$.

Proof. There exists a unique degree $<d$ polynomial $c_{0}(X)$ over $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}$ such that $c=c_{0}$ in $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$. Let $c_{0}=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i}$. Let $a$ and $b$ be given as follows:

$$
c_{0}=\underbrace{\left(\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i}\right)}_{a}+\underbrace{\left(\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \leqslant-1} a_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i}\right)}_{b} .
$$

Clearly, $a \in A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ and $b \in B$.
Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
|a|_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}= & \max _{i}\left|\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n, i} T^{n}\right|_{|T| \leqslant r, Z}=\max _{i} \max _{n \in \mathbb{N}}\left|a_{n, i}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n} \\
& \leqslant \max _{i} \max _{n \in \mathbb{Z}}\left|a_{n, i}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n}=|a|_{|P|=r, Z},
\end{aligned}
$$

and the same is true for $|b|_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}$. Consequently, $\max \left(|a|_{|P| \leqslant r, Z},|b|_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right) \leqslant|c|_{|P|=r, Z}$.

On the other hand, $c=a+b$, so $|c|_{|P|=r, Z} \leqslant \max \left(|a|_{|P|=r, Z},|b|_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$, which, by Lemma 4.2.15, is the same as $\max \left(|a|_{|P| \leqslant r, Z},|b|_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)$.

Let $Z_{1} \subseteq Z$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$.
Lemma 4.2.17. The restriction morphism $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z_{1}}\right)$ is a contraction with respect to the corresponding norms $|\cdot|_{|P|=r, Z}$ and $|\cdot|_{|P|=r, Z_{1}}$.

Proof. Let the restriction morphism $\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z_{1}}\right)$ be denoted by $j_{P, 1}$. Similarly to Lemma 4.2.9, the following diagram is commutative and $j_{P, 1}(X)=Y$ (remark that $j_{T, 1}(T)=T, j_{T, 1}\left(T^{-1}\right)=T^{-1}$, and the restriction of $j_{T, 1}$ to $A_{Z}$ is the restriction morphism $A_{Z} \rightarrow A_{Z_{1}}$ ).


Let $f=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i} \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)=A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$. Then, $|f|_{|P|=r, Z_{1}}=\max _{i} \max _{n}\left|a_{n, i}\right|_{\rho_{Z_{1}}} r^{n}$. Since $A_{Z}$ and $A_{Z_{1}}$ are equipped with their respective spectral norms, $\left|a_{n, i}\right|_{\rho_{Z_{1}}} \leqslant\left|a_{n, i}\right|_{\rho_{Z}}$, implying $|f|_{|P|=r, Z_{1}} \leqslant \max _{i} \max _{n}\left|a_{n, i}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n}=$ $|f|_{|P|=r, Z}$.

Remark 4.2.18. By applying the above to the case when $S$ is a point (i.e. if everything is defined over a complete ultrametric field), it makes sense to speak of the affinoid domains $X_{|P| \bowtie r, x}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$, and their norms $|\cdot|_{|P| \bowtie r, x}$, for $\bowtie \in\{\leqslant,=, \geqslant\}$, which satisfy all of the properties we have proven so far.

Furthermore, if $P$ is a unitary polynomial of degree $d$ over $A_{Z}$ that is irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$, then there exists a "restriction morphism" $\left(\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}\right),|\cdot|_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}\right) \rightarrow$ $\left(\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, x}\right),|\cdot|_{|P| \bowtie r, x}\right)$ on the fiber (corresponding to base change), which is a contraction. To see this, let $f=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i} \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}\right)$ (with certain $a_{n, i}$ possibly 0 depending on what $\bowtie$ is). Then, $|f|_{|P| \bowtie r, x}=\max _{i} \max _{n}\left|a_{n, i}\right|_{x} r^{n} \leqslant \max _{i} \max _{n}\left|a_{n, i}\right|_{\rho_{Z}} r^{n}=$ $|f|_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}$.
4.2.3. The explicit norm comparison. The following is mainly a special case of [59, 5.2] (or a rather direct consequence thereof), which we summarize here with an emphasis on the results that interest us.

Let $P$ be a unitary polynomial of degree $d>1$ over $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ that is irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$. Also, let $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}$. As before, let $Z$ be any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ contained in $Z^{\prime} \cap Z_{T} \cap Z_{P}$.

For $t \in\{x, Z\}$ (we understand here that $t$ can be $x$ or any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ with the property we just mentioned), let ( $R_{t},|\cdot|_{r, t}$ ) be ( $A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}, \mid \cdot$ $\left.\left.\right|_{|T|=r, Z}\right)$ if $t=Z$ and $\left(\mathcal{H}(x)\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\},|\cdot|_{|T|=r, x}\right)$ otherwise. Remark that $\left(R_{t},|\cdot|_{r, t}\right)$ is an affinoid algebra over $A_{Z}$ if $t=Z$ and over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ if $t=x$. As mentioned in Remark 4.2.18, there is a contraction $R_{Z} \hookrightarrow R_{x}$ induced from the restriction $A_{Z} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}_{x} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}(x)$.

For any $s \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, let $|\cdot|_{t, s}$ denote the norm on $R_{t}[X]$ induced from the $R_{t}$-affinoid algebra $R_{t}\left\{s^{-1} X\right\}$. Let $|\cdot|_{t, s, \text { res }}$ denote the residue norm on $R_{t}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ induced by $|\cdot|_{t, s}$.

Lemma 4.2.19. For any $t \in\{x, Z\}$, there exists $v_{t}^{\prime}>0$, such that for any $s \geqslant v_{t}^{\prime}$, the norm $|\cdot|_{t, s, \text { res }}$ is equivalent to $|\cdot|_{|P|=r, t}$. Explicitely, for any $f \in R_{t}[X] /(P(X)-T)$,

$$
|f|_{t, s, r e s} \leqslant|f|_{|P|=r, t} \leqslant C_{t} \max _{1 \leqslant i \leqslant d-1}\left(s^{-i}\right)|f|_{t, s, r e s},
$$

where $C_{t}=\max \left(2,2 v_{t}^{\prime-d}\right)$.
Fix a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{0} \subseteq Z^{\prime} \cap Z_{T} \cap Z_{P}$ of $x$. There exist $v^{\prime}, C^{\prime}>0$ such that the statement is true for any $s \geqslant v^{\prime}$ and any $t \in\left\{x, Z: Z \subseteq Z_{0}\right\}$.

Proof. For the first part of the statement, see [59, Lemme 5.2.3]. The norm $|\cdot|_{t, s, \text { res }}$ is the analogue of what in loc.cit. is denoted by $|\cdot|_{U, w, r e s}$ (here $U$ is $X_{|T|=r, t}$ and $s=w$ ).

To see the last part of the statement, let us describe $v_{t}^{\prime}$ explicitely. Let $\alpha_{0}, \ldots, \alpha_{d-1} \in A_{Z}$ be the coefficients of $P$, and $\beta_{0}, \ldots, \beta_{d-1} \in A_{Z}[T] \subseteq R_{Z}$ the coefficients of $P(X)-T$ (i.e. $\beta_{0}=\alpha_{0}-T, \beta_{i}=\alpha_{i}$ for $1 \leqslant i \leqslant d-1$ ). By the proof of Théorème 5.2.1 of [59], we only require that $v_{t}^{\prime}>0$ satisfy $\sum_{i=0}^{d-1}\left|\beta_{i}\right|_{r, t} v_{t}^{\prime} \leqslant \frac{1}{2}$. Set $v^{\prime}:=v_{Z_{0}}^{\prime}$. Then, $\sum_{i=0}^{d-1}\left|\beta_{i}\right|_{r, Z_{0}} v^{\prime} \leqslant \frac{1}{2}$. By Lemma 4.2.17 and Remark 4.2.18, $\left|\beta_{i}\right|_{r, t} \leqslant\left|\beta_{i}\right|_{r, Z_{0}}$ for any $t \in\left\{x, Z: Z \subseteq Z_{0}\right\}$, so

$$
\sum_{i=0}^{d-1}\left|\beta_{i}\right|_{r, t} v^{\prime} \leqslant \sum_{i=0}^{d-1}\left|\beta_{i}\right|_{r, Z_{0}} v^{\prime} \leqslant \frac{1}{2}
$$

Set $C^{\prime}=\max \left(2,2 v^{\prime-d}\right)$. The statement is true with this choice of $v^{\prime}$ and $C^{\prime}$.
Theorem 4.2.20. Let $Z_{0}$ be as in the previous lemma. There exist $m, s, C^{\prime}>0$ such that for any $t \in\left\{x, Z: Z \subseteq Z_{0}\right\}$ and any $f \in R_{t}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ :

$$
|f|_{\rho_{|P|=r, t}} \leqslant|f|_{|P|=r, t} \leqslant C^{\prime} \max _{1 \leqslant i \leqslant d-1}\left(s^{-i}\right) \frac{d^{2}(2 s)^{d^{2}-d}}{m}|f|_{\rho_{|P|=r, t}},
$$

where $\rho_{|P|=r, t}$ is the spectral norm on $R_{t}[X] /(P(X)-T)=\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, t}\right)$.
Proof. The first inequality is immediate from the definition of the spectral norm.
By the previous lemma, there exist $v^{\prime}>0$ and $C^{\prime}>0$ such that for any $s \geqslant v^{\prime}$ and any $t \in\left\{x, Z: Z \subseteq Z_{0}\right\},|\cdot|_{|P|=r, t} \leqslant C^{\prime} \max _{1 \leqslant i \leqslant d-1}\left(s^{-i}\right)|\cdot|_{t, s, \text { res }}$. Thus, it suffices to compare the norm $|\cdot|_{t, s, \text { res }}$ to the spectral one. For a fixed $t$, this is done in [59, Proposition 5.2.7] as follows.

Let $\operatorname{Res}(\cdot, \cdot)$ denote the resultant of two polynomials (we assume the ambient ring is unambiguously determined). Let us show that $\operatorname{Res}\left(P(X)-T, P^{\prime}(X)\right) \neq 0$ in $A_{Z_{0}}[T]$. Otherwise, the polynomials $P(X)-T$ and $P^{\prime}(X)$ would have a common divisor of positive degree, i.e. there would exist $Q, R, R_{1} \in A_{Z_{0}}[T][X]$, with $\operatorname{deg}_{X} Q>0$ such that $P(X)-T=$ $Q(X, T) R(X, T)$ and $P^{\prime}(X)=Q(T, X) R_{1}(T, X)$. The second expression implies that the degree in $T$ of $Q$ and $R_{1}$ is 0 , meaning $Q, R_{1} \in A_{Z_{0}}[X]$. Consequently, $P(X)-T=$ $Q(X) R(X, T)$, which is impossible if $\operatorname{deg}_{X} Q>0$. Finally, this means that $\operatorname{Res}(P(X)-$ $\left.T, P^{\prime}(X)\right) \neq 0$ in $A_{Z_{0}}[T]$. As the resultant doesn't depend on the ring in which it is computed, $\operatorname{Res}\left(P(X)-T, P^{\prime}(X)\right) \neq 0$ in $R_{t}$, so $\left|\operatorname{Res}\left(P(X)-T, P^{\prime}(X)\right)\right|_{r, t} \neq 0$ for any $t$.

Let $\alpha_{0}, \beta_{1}, \ldots, \beta_{d-1} \in A_{Z_{0}}$ be the coefficients of $P(X)$, and $\beta_{0}:=\alpha_{0}-T, \beta_{1}, \ldots, \beta_{d-1} \in$ $A_{Z_{0}}[T] \subseteq R_{Z_{0}}$ the coefficients of $P(X)-T$. Set $v_{t}^{\prime \prime}:=\max _{1 \leqslant i \leqslant d-1}\left(\left|\beta_{i}\right|_{r, t}^{\frac{1}{d-i}}\right)$. Set $v_{t}=\max \left(v^{\prime}, v_{t}^{\prime \prime}\right)$. Let $m_{t}>0$ be such that $\left|\operatorname{Res}\left(P(X)-T, P^{\prime}(X)\right)\right|_{r, t}>m_{t}$ (such an $m_{t}$ exists by the paragraph above).

Let $s>v_{t}$. Then, for any $f \in R_{t}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ (see [59, Proposition 5.2.7]):

$$
|f|_{t, s, r e s} \leqslant \frac{d^{2}(2 s)^{d^{2}-d}}{m_{t}}|f|_{\rho_{|P|=r, t}} .
$$

By Lemma 4.2.17 and Remark 4.2.18, for any $t \in\left\{x, Z: Z \subseteq Z_{0}\right\}, v_{t}^{\prime \prime} \leqslant v_{Z_{0}}^{\prime \prime}$. Set $v=\max \left(v^{\prime}, v_{Z_{0}}^{\prime \prime}\right)$, so that for any $t, v_{t} \leqslant v$.

Set $m=m_{x}$. Note that for any $t$,

$$
0<m<\left|\operatorname{Res}\left(P(X)-T, P^{\prime}(X)\right)\right|_{r, x} \leqslant\left|\operatorname{Res}\left(P(X)-T, P^{\prime}(X)\right)\right|_{r, t} .
$$

Consequently, for any $t \in\left\{x, Z: Z \subseteq Z_{0}\right\}$ and any $s \geqslant v$,

$$
|f|_{t, s, r e s} \leqslant \frac{d^{2}(2 s)^{d^{2}-d}}{m}|f|_{\rho_{|P|=r, t}} .
$$

From Lemma 4.2.19, $|f|_{|P|=r, t} \leqslant C^{\prime} \max _{1 \leqslant i \leqslant d-1}\left(s^{-i}\right)|f|_{t, s, \text { res }}$ for all $t$, so finally

$$
|f|_{|P|=r, t} \leqslant C^{\prime} \max _{1 \leqslant i \leqslant d-1}\left(s^{-i}\right) \frac{d^{2}(2 s)^{d^{2}-d}}{m}|f|_{|P|=r, t},
$$

for all $f \in R_{t}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ and all $t \in\left\{x, Z: Z \subseteq Z_{0}\right\}$.
Remark 4.2.21. The previous theorem gives an explicit comparison between the norms $|\cdot|_{|P|=r, t}$ and $\rho_{|P|=r, t}$ with a constant that is valid for all $t \in\left\{x, Z: Z \subseteq Z_{0}\right\}$. By Lemma 4.2.2, in the case of degree one polynomials, this constant is simply 1.

Set $C=\max \left(1, C^{\prime} \max _{1 \leqslant i \leqslant d-1}\left(s^{-i}\right) \frac{d^{2}(2 s)^{d^{2}-d}}{m}\right)$. We have shown the following:
Corollary 4.2.22. Let $P(T)$ be a unitary polynomial in $\mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ and $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}$. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{0}$ of $x$ in $S$ such that for any $t \in\left\{x, Z: Z \subseteq Z_{0}\right.$ is a connected affinoid neighborhood of $\left.x\right\}$,

$$
|\cdot|_{\rho_{|P|=r, t}} \leqslant|\cdot|_{|P|=r, t} \leqslant C|\cdot|_{\rho_{|P|=r, t}} .
$$

Remark 4.2.23. From now on, whenever we consider spaces of the form $X_{|P| \bowtie r, t}$, $t \in\{x, Z\}, \bowtie \in\{\leqslant,=, \geqslant\}$, we will always assume its corresponding affinoid algebra to be endowed with the norm $|\cdot|_{|P| \bowtie r, t}$ defined in Notation 4.2.11, resp. Notation 4.2.14.
4.2.4. A useful proposition. Recall the notion of complete residue field of a point (Definition 1.1.33, Lemma 1.4.22). We will need the following:

Lemma 4.2.24. Let $Y_{1}=\mathcal{M}(A)$ be a $k$-affinoid space. Let $Y_{2}=\mathcal{M}(B)$ be a relative affinoid space over $Y_{1}$ and $\phi: Y_{2} \rightarrow Y_{1}$ the corresponding morphism. Let $y \in Y_{1}$ and set $F_{y}:=\phi^{-1}(y)$, which we identify with the $\mathcal{H}(y)$-analytic space $\mathcal{M}\left(B \widehat{\otimes}_{A} \mathcal{H}(y)\right)$. For any $z \in F_{y}, \mathcal{H}_{\mathcal{M}(B)}(z)=\mathcal{H}_{F_{y}}(z)$, where $\mathcal{H}_{N}(z)$ is the completed residue field of $z$ when regarded as a point of $N, N \in\left\{\mathcal{M}(B), F_{y}\right\}$.

Proof. Considering the bounded embedding $\mathcal{H}(y) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}_{\mathcal{M}(B)}(z)$, we have the following commutative diagram where all the maps are bounded:


The proof is based on the identification of $F_{y}$ to $\mathcal{M}\left(B \widehat{\otimes}_{A} \mathcal{H}(x)\right)$. Remark that the map $\alpha$ induces on $B \widehat{\otimes}_{A} \mathcal{H}(y)$ the semi-norm determined by $z$, implying there is a bounded embedding $\mathcal{H}_{F_{y}}(z) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}_{\mathcal{M}(B)}(z)$ on the diagram above. Similarly, since the map $\beta$ induces on $B$ the semi-norm determined by $z$, we obtain that $\mathcal{H}_{F_{y}}(z)=\mathcal{H}_{\mathcal{M}(B)}(z)$.

Corollary 4.2.25. With the same notation as in Lemma 4.2.24 and with $Y_{2}$ integral, if $\mathcal{O}_{y}, \mathcal{O}_{F_{y}, z}$ are fields and $z$ is a smooth point of $Y_{2}$, then $\mathcal{O}_{Y_{2}, z}$ is a field.

Proof. Suppose that $\mathcal{O}_{Y_{2}, z}$ is not a field. Then, its maximal ideal is non-zero, meaning there exists a non-zero $f \in \mathcal{O}_{Y_{2}, z}$ such that $f(z)=0$ in $\mathcal{H}(z)$. As we saw in Lemma 4.2.24, this field is the same regardless of which ambient space we consider $z \mathrm{in}$. In particular, this means that the image $f_{y}$ of $f$ in $\mathcal{O}_{F_{y}, z}$ satisfies $f_{y}(z)=0$ in $\mathcal{H}(z)$. Since $\mathcal{O}_{F_{y}, z}$ was assumed to be a field, this means that $f_{y}=0$ in $\mathcal{O}_{F_{y}, z}$ so there exists a neighborhood of $z$ in $F_{y}$ where $f=0$. By [18, Proposition 6.3.1], which is where the smoothness assumption is needed, this means that there exists a neighborhood of $z$ in $Y_{2}$ on which $|f|=0$, implying $f=0$, which is in contradiction with the assumptions we made. Consequently, $\mathcal{O}_{Y_{2}, z}$ is a field.

Applied to our setting, this means that for any type 3 point $\eta$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$, the stalk $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{P}_{S}^{1 \text { an }}, \eta}$ is a field. We aim to show the same for the stalks $\mathcal{O}_{X_{|P|=r, Z}, \eta}$. The corollary above does not apply, since the smoothness condition is no longer satisfied.

Remark 4.2.26. Recall Notation 4.1.5. Let $P$ be a unitaty polynomial in $\mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$, and $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}$. Let $\eta:=\eta_{P, r} \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. As seen in Lemma 4.2.8 (cf. also Remark 4.2.18), $\mathcal{H}(x)\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T)$ is isomorphic to $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}}(\{\eta\})$. By Lemma 3.1.1, $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}}(\{\eta\})=\mathcal{H}(\eta)$. By Proposition 4.2.10 (see also Remark 4.2.18), $|\cdot|_{|P|=r, x}$ is equivalent to the norm $|\cdot|_{\eta}$ on $\mathcal{H}(\eta)$.

Following Notation 4.2.7, let $Z_{0} \subseteq Z^{\prime} \cap Z_{T} \cap Z_{P}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$.

Let us consider the following commutative diagram for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
& A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\} \xrightarrow{\text { finite }} A_{Z}\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[X] /(P(X)-T) \\
& \downarrow \widehat{\otimes}_{A_{Z}} \mathcal{H}(x) \downarrow \widehat{\otimes}_{A_{Z}} \mathcal{H}(x)  \tag{5}\\
& \mathcal{H}(x)\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\} \xrightarrow{\text { finite }} \mathcal{H}(x)\left\{r^{-1} T, r T^{-1}\right\}[Y] /(P(Y)-T)
\end{align*}
$$

The horizontal arrows are induced by the finite morphism $T \mapsto P(T)$. The vertical arrows correspond to taking the restriction of analytic functions on $X_{|T|=r, Z}$, resp. $X_{|P|=r, Z}$, to the fiber $F_{x}$. In particular, remark that $X \mapsto Y$, so we will use the same variable $X$.

We start by showing an auxiliary result.
Lemma 4.2.27. The family $\left\{X_{|P|=r, Z}: Z \subseteq Z_{0}\right\}$ (where $Z$ is always considered to be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ ) forms a basis of neighborhoods of $\eta$ in $X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}}$.

Proof. Let $U$ be an open neighborhood of $\eta$ in $X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}}$. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that $X_{|P|=r, Z} \subseteq U$. To see this, remark that $X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}} \backslash U$ is a compact subset of $\mathbb{P}_{Z_{0}}^{1, \text { an }}$, so $\pi\left(X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}} \backslash U\right)$ is a compact subset of $Z_{0}$. Furthermore, $x \notin \pi\left(X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}} \backslash U\right)$, so there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that $Z \cap \pi\left(X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}} \backslash U\right)=\emptyset$. Consequently, $X_{|P|=r, Z} \backslash U=\pi^{-1}(Z) \cap\left(X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}} \backslash U\right)=$ $\emptyset$, so $X_{|P|=r, Z} \subseteq U$.

Proposition 4.2.28. The local ring $\mathcal{O}_{X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}, \eta}}$ is a field.
Proof. Suppose that $\mathcal{O}_{X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}, \eta}}$ is not a field. Then, its maximal ideal is non-zero, so there exists $f \in \mathcal{O}_{X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}}, \eta}$ such that $f \neq 0$ and $f(\eta)=0$ in $\mathcal{H}(\eta)\left(i . e .|f|_{\eta}=0\right)$. By Lemma 4.2.27, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that $f \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$.

By Lemma 4.2.24, evaluating $f \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$ at the point $\eta \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$ is the same as evaluating the restriction of $f$ to the fiber (see the vertical map on the right of the diagram 5 above) at the point $\eta$ on the fiber. Consequently, since the norm $|\cdot|_{\eta}$ is equivalent to $|\cdot|_{|P|=r, x}$ (see Proposition 4.2.10 and Remark 4.2.18), we obtain that $|f|_{|P|=r, x}=0$.

Let $f=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n, i} T^{n} X^{i} \in \mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right)$. Then, $|f|_{|P|=r, x}=\max _{i} \max _{n}\left|a_{n, i}\right|_{x} r^{n}$. If $|f|_{|P|=r, x}=0$, this implies that for any $n$ and any $i,\left|a_{n, i}\right|_{x}=0$, and since $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field, we obtain $a_{n, i}=0$ in $A_{Z}$. Consequently, $f=0$ over $X_{|P|=r, Z}$.

By Lemma 4.2.27, this means that $f=0$ in $\mathcal{O}_{X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}, \eta}, \text {, contradiction. Hence, the }}$ local ring $\mathcal{O}_{X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}, \eta}}$ is a field.

### 4.3. Patching on the Relative Projective Line

The goal of this section is to prove a relative analogue of Proposition 3.2.3. As before, let $k$ be a complete ultrametric field.
4.3.1. A few preliminary results. Recall Notation 4.1.5.

Remark 4.3.1. By Theorem 1.7.8, for any integral $k$-affinoid space $Z, \mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)=$ $\mathscr{M}(Z)(T)$.

Lemma 4.3.2. Let $X$ be an integral $k$-affinoid space with corresponding affinoid algebra $R_{X}$. Set $F_{X}=\mathscr{M}(X)$. Let $z \in X$ be such that $\mathcal{O}_{z}$ is a field.

The function $|\cdot|_{F_{X}}:=\max \left(|\cdot|_{y}: y \in \Gamma(X) \cup\{z\}\right)$ defines a submultiplicative norm on $F_{X}$ which when restricted to $R_{X}$ gives the spectral norm $\rho_{X}$.

Let $X^{\prime}$ be an integral $k$-affinoid space such that $X$ is a rational domain of $X^{\prime}$. Set $F_{X^{\prime}}=\mathscr{M}\left(X^{\prime}\right)$. The field $F_{X^{\prime}}$ is dense in $\left(F_{X},\left.|\cdot|\right|_{F_{X}}\right)$.

Proof. Remark that $z$ (since $\mathcal{O}_{z}$ is a field) and all $y \in \Gamma(X)$ (because of Lemma 1.4.31) determine multiplicative norms on $R_{X}$, and hence also on $F_{X}$.

As a consequence, $|\cdot|_{F_{X}}$ is well-defined. That it is a submultiplicative norm on $F_{X}$ extending $\rho_{X}$ follows from the fact that $|\cdot|_{\rho_{X}}=\max \left(|\cdot|_{y}: y \in \Gamma(X)\right)$. Since $X$ is reduced, $\rho_{X}$ is equivalent to the norm on the affinoid algebra $R_{X}$ (Proposition 1.3.15).

By Lemma 1.4.16, for $S_{X}:=\left\{g \in \mathcal{O}\left(X^{\prime}\right):|g|_{x} \neq 0\right.$ for all $\left.x \in X\right\}$, the set $S_{X}^{-1} \mathcal{O}\left(X^{\prime}\right)$ is dense in $\mathcal{O}(X)=R_{X}$. As $S_{X} \subseteq \mathcal{O}\left(X^{\prime}\right) \backslash\{0\}$, by Lemma 1.7.6, $S_{X}^{-1} \mathcal{O}\left(X^{\prime}\right) \subseteq \mathscr{M}\left(X^{\prime}\right)=F_{X^{\prime}}$, so $R_{X} \cap F_{X^{\prime}} \subseteq F_{X}$ is a dense subset of $R_{X}$.

Let $f=\frac{u}{v} \in F_{X}$, where $u, v \in R_{X}$. Then, by the above, $u, v$ can be approximated by some $u_{0}, v_{0} \in R_{X} \cap F_{X^{\prime}}$. We will show that $\frac{u_{0}}{v_{0}}$ approximates $\frac{u}{v}$ in $F_{X}$, implying (since $\left.\frac{u_{0}}{v_{0}} \in F_{X^{\prime}}\right)$ that $F_{X^{\prime}}$ is dense in $F_{X}$.

Since both $\left|u-u_{0}\right|_{\rho_{X}}$ and $\left|v-v_{0}\right|_{\rho_{X}}$ may be assumed to be arbitrarily small, we may suppose that $|u|_{y}=\left|u_{0}\right|_{y}$ and $\left|v_{0}\right|_{y}=|v|_{y}$ for all $y \in \Gamma(X) \cup\{z\}$. Then, $\left|\frac{1}{v}\right|_{F_{X}}=\left|\frac{1}{v_{0}}\right|_{F_{X}}$. Finally, $\left|f-\frac{u_{0}}{v_{0}}\right|_{F_{X}} \leqslant\left|u v_{0}-u_{0} v\right|_{F_{X}} \cdot\left|\frac{1}{v}\right|_{F_{X}}^{2}=\left|u v_{0}-u_{0} v\right|_{R_{X}} \cdot\left|\frac{1}{v}\right|_{F_{X}}^{2} \rightarrow 0$ when $u_{0} \rightarrow u$ and $v_{0} \rightarrow v$ in $R_{X}$.

The following is an example of Setting 2.1.5 which we will be working with.
Proposition 4.3.3. Let $U, V$ be connected affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ containing only type 3 points in their boundaries such that $U \cap V$ is a single type 3 point $\{\eta\}$. Let $Z$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ in $S$ such that there exist $Z$-thickenings $U_{Z}, V_{Z}$ of $U, V$, respectively. Assume that $Z$ is such that the statement of Proposition 4.1.16 is satisfied. Then, the conditions of Setting 2.1.5 are satisfied for: $F:=\mathscr{M}(Z)(T), R_{0}:=$ $\mathcal{O}\left(U_{Z} \cap V_{Z}\right), R_{1}=A_{1}:=\mathcal{O}\left(U_{Z}\right), R_{2}=A_{2}:=\mathcal{O}\left(V_{Z}\right)$, and $F_{i}:=$ Frac $R_{i}, i=0,1,2$.

Proof. The field $F$ is clearly infinite and embeds in both $F_{1}$ and $F_{2}$. Also, the rings $R_{i}, i=0,1,2$, are integral domains containing $k$ and endowed with a non-Archimedean submultiplicative norm that extends that of $k$ and is $k$-linear. The morphisms $R_{j} \hookrightarrow R_{0}$, $j=1,2$, are bounded seeing as they are restriction morphisms.

Remark that regardless of whether $U_{Z} \cup V_{Z}$ is an affinoid domain or all of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$, $H^{1}\left(U_{Z} \cup V_{Z}, \mathcal{O}\right)=0$. Consequently, as usual, there exists a surjective admissible morphism $R_{1} \oplus R_{2} \rightarrow R_{0}$.

Notation 4.3.4. In addition to Notation 4.1.5, let $G$ be a rational linear algebraic group defined over $\mathcal{O}_{x}(T)$. Let $H / \mathcal{O}_{x}(T)$ be a variety on which $G$ acts strongly transitively (Definition 3.2.1).

Seeing as $\mathcal{O}_{x}(T)={\underset{\underline{\lim }}{Z}}^{\mathscr{M}(Z)(T) \text {, where the direct limit is taken with respect to }}$ connected affinoid neighborhoods of $x$, there exists such a $Z_{G}$ for which $G$ is a rational linear algebraic group defined over $\mathscr{M}\left(Z_{G}\right)(T)$. The same remains true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{G}$ of $x$.
4.3.2. Patching over $\mathbb{P}^{1, a n}$. We now have all the necessary elements to show that patching is possible over $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ for a well-enough chosen affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$ (both in the sense of Chapter 2 and of Proposition 3.2.2).

For the rest of this section, we assume that $k$ is a complete non-trivially valued ultrametric field. Recall Notation 4.1.5.

Remark 4.3.5. In order for the results of Section 4.2 to be applicable, from now on, whenever taking a thickening of an affinoid domain with respect to a certain writing of its boundary points (see Definition 4.1.14), we will always assume that the corresponding polynomials were chosen to be unitary (since $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field, this can be done without causing any restrictions to our general setting).

Setting 4.3.6. Let $\eta$ be a type 3 point of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. There exists a unitary polynomial $P \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ that is irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ and a real number $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}$such that $\eta=\eta_{P, r}$. Let $Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ in $S$ such that $P \in \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)[T]$ and the $Z_{0}$-thickenings of $\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{u} \bowtie r\right\},\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{u} \bowtie r\right\}, \bowtie \in\{\leqslant, \geqslant\}$, are connected. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ be any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$.

As before, set $X_{|T| \bowtie r, Z}:=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|T|_{u} \bowtie r\right\}$, and $X_{|P| \bowtie r, Z}:=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{u} \bowtie\right.$ $r\}$, where $\bowtie \in\{\leqslant,=, \geqslant\}$. Set $\left(R_{0, Z},|\cdot|_{R_{0, Z}}\right):=\left(\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P|=r, Z}\right),|\cdot|_{|P|=r, Z}\right),\left(R_{1, Z},|\cdot|_{R_{1, Z}}\right):=$ $\left(\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right),|\cdot|_{|P| \leqslant r, Z}\right)$ and $\left(R_{2, Z},|\cdot|_{R_{2, Z}}\right):=\left(\mathcal{O}\left(X_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right),|\cdot|_{|P| \geqslant r, Z}\right)$ (see Remark 4.2.23). Also, set $F_{i, Z}:=\operatorname{Frac}\left(R_{0, i}\right), i=0,1,2$, and $F:=\mathscr{M}(Z)(T)$.

Assume that $Z_{0}$ is chosen so that all of the results of Section 4.2 are satisfied. Moreover, assume $Z_{0} \subseteq Z_{G}$ (see Notation 4.3.4).

Throughout this subsection, suppose we are in the situation of Setting 4.3.6.
Parameter 1. Since $H^{1}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, \mathcal{O}\right)=0$, there is an admissible surjection $R_{1, Z} \oplus R_{2, Z} \rightarrow R_{0, Z}$. Furthermore, by Lemmas 4.2.5 and 4.2.16, for any $c \in R_{0, Z}$, there exist $a \in R_{1, Z}$ and $b \in R_{2, Z}$ such that $\frac{1}{2} \max \left(|a|_{R_{1, Z}},|b|_{R_{2, Z}}\right)<|c|_{R_{0, Z}}$. Set $d=\frac{1}{2}$.

As mentioned in Remark 2.1.8, since $G$ is a rational linear algebraic group over $F:=$ $\mathscr{M}\left(Z_{0}\right)(T)$, by definition there exists a Zariski open $S^{\prime}$ of $G$ which is isomorphic (via a morphism $\varphi$ ) to an open $S^{\prime \prime}$ of some $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$. If we denote by $m$ the multiplication on $G$, this leads to the following commutative diagram (which is defined over $F$ ), where $\widetilde{S^{\prime}}:=m^{-1}\left(S^{\prime}\right) \cap\left(S^{\prime} \times S^{\prime}\right)$ is an open of $G \times G, \widetilde{S^{\prime \prime}}$ is an open of $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{2 n}$, the vertical maps are isomorphisms, and $f$ is the map induced from $m$ :


Furthermore, by translating if necessary, we may assume that the identity $I$ of $G$ is in $S^{\prime}$ and that $\varphi(I)=0$. Then, $0 \in \widetilde{S^{\prime \prime}}$, and $f$ is a rational morphism $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{2 n} \longrightarrow \mathbb{A}_{F}^{2 n}$ defined over the open $\widetilde{S^{\prime \prime}}$. In particular, this means that $f=\left(f_{1}, \ldots, f_{n}\right)$, where $f_{i}=\frac{g_{i}}{h_{i}}$ for some $g_{i}, h_{i} \in F\left[S_{1}, \ldots, S_{n}, T_{1}, \ldots, T_{n}\right]_{\left(S_{1}, \ldots, S_{n}, T_{1}, \ldots, T_{n}\right)}=: F[\underline{S}, \underline{T}]_{(\underline{S}, \underline{T})}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$. Remark also that $f(x, 0)=f(0, x)=x$ whenever $(0, x),(x, 0) \in \widetilde{S^{\prime \prime}}$.

Parameter 2. Let us look at the diagram above over the field $F_{0, Z_{0}}$. We may suppose that $g_{i}, h_{i} \in R_{0, Z_{0}}[\underline{S}, \underline{T}]$ for all $i$. Since $h_{i}(0) \neq 0$ and $\mathcal{O}_{X_{|P|=r, Z_{0}, \eta}}$ is a field, $\left|h_{i}(0)\right|_{\eta} \neq 0$. Consequently, by Lemma 4.2.27, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1} \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that $\left|h_{i}(0)\right|_{u} \neq 0$ for all $u \in X_{|P|=r, Z_{1}}, i$. By Lemma 1.1.39, $h_{i}(0) \in R_{0, Z_{1}}^{\times}$for all $i$. This implies that $h_{i}(0) \in R_{0, Z}^{\times}$for all connected affinoid neighborhoods $Z \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x$.

By Lemmas 2.1.2 and 2.1.3, there exists $M \geqslant 1$ such that

$$
f_{i}=S_{i}+T_{i}+\sum_{|(l, m)| \geqslant 2} c_{l, m}^{i} \underline{S}^{l} \underline{T}^{m} \in R_{0, Z_{1}}[[\underline{S}, \underline{T}]],
$$

and $\left|c_{l, m}^{i}\right|_{R_{0, Z_{1}}} \leqslant M^{|(l, m)|}$ for all $i$, and all $(l, m) \in \mathbb{N}^{2 n}$ such that $|(l, m)| \geqslant 2$, where $|(l, m)|$ is the sum of the coordinates of $(l, m)$.

By Lemma 4.2.17 (see also Corollary 4.2.3), for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x, f_{i}=S_{i}+T_{i}+\sum_{|(l, m)| \geqslant 2} c_{l, m}^{i} \underline{S}^{l} \underline{T}^{m} \in R_{0, Z}[[\underline{S}, \underline{T}]]$, and $\left|c_{l, m}^{i}\right|_{R_{0, Z}} \leqslant\left|c_{l, m}^{i}\right|_{R_{0, Z_{1}}} \leqslant M^{|(l, m)|}$ for all $i$ and all $(l, m) \in \mathbb{N}^{2 n}$ such that $|(l, m)| \geqslant 2$,.

Parameter 3. Since $\widetilde{S^{\prime \prime}}$ is a Zariski open of $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{2 n}$ and $F \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}(\eta)$, we have that $\widetilde{S^{\prime \prime}}(\mathcal{H}(\eta))$ is a Zariski open of $\mathcal{H}(\eta)^{2 n}$. Since the topology induced by the norm on $\mathcal{H}(\eta)$ is finer than the Zariski one and $0 \in \widetilde{S^{\prime \prime}}$, there exists $\delta>0$ such that the open disc $D_{\mathcal{H}(\eta)^{2 n}}(0, \delta)$ in $\mathcal{H}(\eta)^{2 n}$ (with respect to the max-norm), centered at 0 and of radius $\delta$, is contained in $\widetilde{S^{\prime \prime}}(\mathcal{H}(\eta)) \subseteq \widetilde{S^{\prime \prime}}$.

Then, for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, the open disc $D_{R_{0, Z}^{2 n}}(0, \delta)$ in $R_{0, Z}^{2 n}$ (with respect to the max-norm), centered at 0 and of radius $\delta$, satisfies: $D_{R_{0, Z}^{2 n}}(0, \delta) \subseteq$ $D_{\mathcal{H}(\eta)^{2 n}}(0, \delta) \subseteq \widetilde{S^{\prime \prime}}$. This is clear seeing as for any $a \in R_{0, Z},|a|_{\eta} \leqslant|a|_{\rho_{X_{|P|=r, Z}}} \leqslant|a|_{R_{0, Z}}$, where $\rho_{X_{|P|=r, Z}}$ is the spectral norm on $X_{|P|=r, Z}$.

Remark 4.3.7. Putting Parameters 1, 2, 3 together, let $\varepsilon>0$ be such that $\varepsilon<\min \left(\frac{d}{2 M}, \frac{d^{3}}{M^{4}}, \frac{d \delta}{2}\right)$. Then, all of the conditions of Theorem 2.1.10 are satisfied for $R_{0}:=R_{0, Z}, A_{1}:=R_{1, Z}, A_{2}:=R_{2, Z}, F_{0}=$ Frac $R_{0}$. where $Z$ is any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ contained in $Z_{1}$, with $Z_{1}$ as in Parameter 2.

Proposition 4.3.8. Let $g \in G\left(F_{0, Z_{1}}\right)$ (with $Z_{1}$ as in Parameter 2). Suppose $g \in S^{\prime}$ (see diagram 6), and $|\varphi(g)|_{\eta}<\frac{\varepsilon}{C}$, where $C$ is the constant obtained in Corollary 4.2.22 corresponding to the polynomial $P$. Then, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x$, and $g_{i} \in G\left(F_{i, Z}\right), i=1,2$, such that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0, Z}\right)$.

Proof. Since $\varphi(g) \in \mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}\left(F_{0, Z_{1}}\right)=F_{0, Z_{1}}^{n}$, there exist $\alpha_{i}, \beta_{i} \in R_{0, Z_{1}}$ such that $\varphi(g)=\left(\alpha_{i} / \beta_{i}\right)_{i=1}^{n}$. Since $\beta_{i} \neq 0$, by Proposition 4.2.28, $\left|\beta_{i}\right|_{\eta} \neq 0$. Thus, by Lemma 4.2.27, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x$ such that $\left|\beta_{i}\right|_{u} \neq 0$ for all $u \in X_{|P|=r, Z_{1}}$ and all $i$. By Lemma 1.1.39, $\beta_{i} \in R_{0, Z^{\prime}}^{\times}$for all $i$. In particular, this means that $\varphi(g) \in R_{0, Z^{\prime}}^{n}$. Remark that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x, \varphi(g) \in R_{0, Z}^{n}$.

Since $|\varphi(g)|_{\eta}<\varepsilon / C$, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$ such that $|\varphi(g)|_{u}<\varepsilon / C$ for all $u \in X_{|P|=r, Z}$. Consequently, $|\varphi(g)|_{\rho_{X|P|=r, Z}}<\varepsilon / C$, where $\rho_{X_{|P|=r, Z}}$ is the spectral norm on $X_{|P|=r, Z}$. By Corollary 4.2.22, this means that $|\varphi(g)|_{R_{0, Z}}<\varepsilon$.

By Remark 4.3.7, the conditions of Theorem 2.1.10 are satisfied, meaning there exist $g_{i} \in G\left(F_{i, Z}\right), i=1,2$, such that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0, Z}\right)$.

Remark that in the proposition above, we can in the same way show that there exist $g_{i}^{\prime} \in G\left(F_{i, Z}\right), i=1,2$, such that $g=g_{2}^{\prime} \cdot g_{1}^{\prime}$ in $G\left(F_{0, Z}\right)$.

We recall the following from Chapter 2 :
Convention 4.3.9. Let us fix once and for all an embedding of $G$ into $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{m}$ for some $m \in \mathbb{N}$. Let $K / F$ be a field extension, and $M \subseteq K$. Set $G_{K}=G \times_{F} K$. Let $U$ be a Zariski open subset of $G_{K}$. Seeing as $G$ is affine, there is a notion of " $M$-points" of $U$. More precisely, these are the points in $U(K)$ whose coordinates are in $M$. Let us denote this set by $U(M)$.

Proposition 4.3.10. With the same notation as in Proposition 4.3.8, let $g \in G\left(F_{0, Z_{1}}\right)$. Suppose $g \in S^{\prime}$. Then, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x$, and $g_{i} \in G\left(F_{i, Z}\right), i=1,2$, such that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0, Z}\right)$.

Proof. We will reduce to the first case (i.e. Proposition 4.3.8). Recall that the fields $F_{0, Z_{1}}$ can be endowed with a submultiplicative norm $|\cdot|_{F_{0, Z_{1}}}$ as in Lemma 4.3.2, where the role of the point $z$ is played by $\eta$ here.

Let $\psi: g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime} \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{F_{0}, Z_{1}}^{n}$ be the morphism given by $h \mapsto \varphi\left(g^{-1} h\right)$. Remark $0 \in \operatorname{Im}(\psi)$. The preimage $\psi^{-1}\left(D_{F_{0, Z_{1}}^{n}}(0, \varepsilon / C)\right)$ is open in $\left(g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime}\right)\left(F_{0, Z_{1}}\right)$.

Since $X_{|P|=r, Z_{1}}$ is a rational domain in $X_{|P| \leqslant r, Z_{1}}$, by Lemma 4.3.2, $F_{1, Z_{1}}$ is dense in $F_{0, Z_{1}}$, so $\left(g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime}\right)\left(F_{1, Z_{1}}\right)$ is dense in $\left(g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime}\right)\left(F_{0, Z_{1}}\right)$ (see Convention 4.3.9). This means there exists $h \in\left(g S^{\prime} \cap S^{\prime}\right)\left(F_{1, Z_{1}}\right) \subseteq G\left(F_{1, Z_{1}}\right)$ such that $\left|\varphi\left(g^{-1} h\right)\right|_{F_{0, Z_{1}}}<\varepsilon / C$, implying that $\left|\varphi\left(g^{-1} h\right)\right|_{\eta}<\varepsilon / C$.

By Proposition 4.3.8, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x$ and $g_{1}^{\prime} \in G\left(F_{1, Z}\right), g_{2}^{\prime} \in G\left(F_{2, Z}\right)$, such that $g^{-1} h=g_{2}^{\prime} \cdot g_{1}^{\prime}$ in $G\left(F_{0, Z}\right)$. Hence, there exist $g_{1}:=h g_{1}^{\prime-1} \in G\left(F_{1, Z}\right)$ and $g_{2}:=g_{2}^{\prime-1} \in G\left(F_{2, Z}\right)$ such that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0, Z}\right)$.

Theorem 4.3.11. Recall Setting 4.3.6. For any $g \in G\left(F_{0, Z_{0}}\right)$, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, and $g_{i} \in G\left(F_{i, Z}\right), i=1,2$, such that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0, Z}\right)$.

Proof. Recall the construction of the connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1} \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ in Parameter 2. By [34, Lemma 3.1], there exists a Zariski open $S_{1}^{\prime}$ of $G$ isomorphic to an open $S_{1}^{\prime \prime}$ of $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$ such that $g \in S_{1}^{\prime}\left(F_{0, Z_{1}}\right)$. Since $F$ is infinite and $S_{1}^{\prime}$ is isomorphic to an open of some $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$, there exists $\alpha \in S_{1}^{\prime}(F)$. Set $S_{1}:=\alpha^{-1} S_{1}^{\prime}$. Then, $I \in S_{1}$, and $S_{1}$ is isomorphic to an open subset of $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{n}$. By translation, we may assume that this isomorphism sends $I$ to $\left.0 \in \mathbb{A}^{( } F\right)$. Set $g^{\prime}:=\alpha^{-1} g \in S_{1}\left(F_{0, Z_{1}}\right)$. Then, by Proposition 4.3.10, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x$, and $g_{1}^{\prime} \in G\left(F_{1, Z}\right), g_{2} \in G\left(F_{2, Z}\right)$, such that $g^{\prime}=g_{1}^{\prime} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0, Z}\right)$. Consequently, for $g_{1}:=\alpha \cdot g_{1}^{\prime} \in G\left(F_{1, Z}\right)$, we obtain that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(F_{0, Z}\right)$.

As a consequence, the following, which is the main tool for showing a local-global principle over the relative $\mathbb{P}^{1, a n}$, can be shown.

Recall that in this chapter we are working in Setting 4.1.5.
Proposition 4.3.12. Let $U, V$ be connected affinoid domains in $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ containing only type 3 points in their boundaries, such that $U \cap V$ is a single type 3 point $\left\{\eta_{P, r}\right\}$, with $P \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ and $r \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}$. Set $W:=U \cap V$.

Let $G$ be as in Notation 4.3.4, and $Z_{0}$ as in Setting 4.3.6. Let $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ for which the $Z^{\prime}$-thickenings $U_{Z^{\prime}}, V_{Z^{\prime}}, W_{Z^{\prime}}$ exist, are connected, and Proposition 4.1.16 is satisfied.

Then, for any $g \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{Z^{\prime}}\right)\right.$ ) (resp. $g \in G\left(\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, a n}}, \eta\right)$ ), there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$, and $g_{U} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z}\right)\right), g_{V} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(V_{Z}\right)\right)$, such that $g=g_{U} \cdot g_{V}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{Z}\right)\right)=G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z} \cap V_{Z}\right)\right)$.

Proof. Remark that for any $g \in G\left(\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, n}, \eta}\right)$, by Lemma 4.1.19, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$, such that $g \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{Z}\right)\right)$. Thus, it suffices to show the result for any $g \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$.

By Theorem 4.3.11, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$, and $g_{i} \in G\left(F_{i, Z}\right), i=1,2$, such that $g=g_{1} \cdot g_{2}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{Z}\right)\right)$ (once again, recall Setting 4.3.6). Set $\partial U=\left\{\eta_{P, r}, \eta_{P_{j}, r_{j}}, j=1,2, \ldots, n\right\}$, where $P_{j} \in \mathcal{O}_{x}[T]$ are unitary polynomials that are irreducible over $\mathcal{H}(x)$, and $r_{j} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \backslash \sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}(x)^{\times}\right|}$, for all $j$.

Seeing as $U=\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{u} \bowtie r,\left|P_{j}\right|_{u} \bowtie_{j} r_{j}, j\right\}$, where $\bowtie, \bowtie_{j} \in\{\leqslant, \geqslant\}$ for all $j$ (Proposition 4.1.1), $U_{Z} \subseteq\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{u} \bowtie r\right\}$. Without loss of generality, suppose that $\bowtie$ is $\leqslant$. Then, $U_{Z} \subseteq\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{u} \leqslant r\right\}$ and $V_{Z} \subseteq\left\{u \in \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{u} \geqslant r\right\}$ (see Lemma 4.1.4).

Consequently, for $g_{U}:=g_{1 \mid U_{Z}} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z}\right)\right)$ and $g_{V}:=g_{2 \mid Z} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(V_{Z}\right)\right), g=g_{U} \cdot g_{V}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{Z}\right)\right)=G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z} \cap V_{Z}\right)\right)$.
4.3.3. Patching over relative nice covers. Proposition 4.3 .12 is enough in itself to directly show a local-global principle over the relative projective line. However, just like in the one-dimensional case, when showing a local-global principle for relative projective curves, we use arguments that make it possible to descend to the line. The goal of this part is to present the necessary arguments to make this descent.

Recall Notation 4.1.5.
THEOREM 4.3.13. Let $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ be a nice cover of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$, and $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$ a parity function corresponding to $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ (see Definition 3.1.16). Let $S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$ be the set of intersection points of the different elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$. Let $Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ such that the $Z_{0}$-thickening $\mathcal{U}_{Z_{0}}$ of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ exists and is a $Z_{0}$-relative nice cover of $\mathbb{P}_{Z_{0}}^{1, \text { an }}$.

Let $G / \mathscr{M}\left(Z_{0}\right)(T)$ be a rational linear algebraic group. Then, for any element $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S u_{x}}$ of $\prod_{s \in S_{u_{x}}} G\left(\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z_{0}}^{1, a n}, s}\right)$, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, and $\left(g_{U_{Z}}\right)_{U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}} \in \prod_{U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z}\right)\right)$, satisfying: for any $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, there exist exactly two $U_{s}, V_{s} \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$ containing $s, g_{s} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{s, Z} \cap V_{s, Z}\right)\right)$, and if $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}\left(U_{s}\right)=0$, then $g_{s}=g_{U_{s, Z}} \cdot g_{V_{s, Z}}^{-1}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{s, Z} \cap V_{s, Z}\right)\right)$.

Proof. Set $\mathcal{U}_{x}=\left\{U_{1}, U_{2}, \ldots, U_{n}\right\}$. If $n=1$ there is nothing to prove. Otherwise, using induction we will show the following statement for all $i$ such that $2 \leqslant i \leqslant n$ :

Statement 1. Let $I \subseteq\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$ be such that $|I|=i$ and $\bigcup_{h \in I} U_{h}$ is connected. Let $S_{I}\left(\subseteq S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}\right)$ denote the set of intersection points of the different elements of $\left\{U_{h}\right\}_{h \in I}$. Let $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{0}$ be any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. Then, for any $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{I}} \in \prod_{s \in S_{I}} G\left(\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}, s}\right)$, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{I} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$ and $\left(g_{U_{h}, Z_{I}}\right)_{h \in I} \in \prod_{h \in I} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{h, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$, satisfying: for any $s \in S_{I}$ there exist exactly two elements $U_{s}, V_{s} \in\left\{U_{h}\right\}_{h \in I}$ containing $s, g_{s} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{s, Z_{I}} \cap V_{s, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$, and if $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}\left(U_{s}\right)=0$, then $g_{s}=g_{U_{s}, Z_{I}} \cdot g_{V_{s}, Z_{I}}^{-1}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{s, Z_{I}} \cap V_{s, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$. The same is true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z_{I}$ of $x$.

For $i=2$, this is Proposition 4.3.12. Suppose it is true for some $i-1,2<i<n$, and let us show that it is true for $i$. Without loss of generality, we may assume that $I=\{1,2, \ldots, i\}$, i.e. that $\bigcup_{h=1}^{i} U_{h}$ is connected. By Lemma 3.1.18, there exist $i-1$ elements of $\left\{U_{h}\right\}_{h=1}^{i}$ whose union is connected. Without loss of generality, let us assume that $\bigcup_{h=1}^{i-1} U_{h}$ is connected. Set $I^{\prime}=I \backslash\{i\}$.

Let us start by making a comparison between $S_{I}$ and $S_{I^{\prime}}$. Set $V_{i-1}=\bigcup_{h=1}^{i-1} U_{h}$. This is a connected affinoid domain containing only type 3 points in its boundary. Since $V_{i-1}, U_{i}$,
and $V_{i-1} \cup U_{i}$ are connected subsets of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}, V_{i-1} \cap U_{i}$ is non-empty and connected (see Lemma 1.8.20). Furthermore, since $V_{i-1} \cap U_{i} \subseteq S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$ (i.e. it is contained in a finite set of type 3 points), $V_{i-1} \cap U_{i}$ is a single type 3 point $\{\eta\}$. Hence, there exists $h_{0} \in I^{\prime}$ such that $U_{h_{0}} \cap U_{i} \neq \emptyset$. By Lemma 3.1.9, such an $h_{0}$ is unique. Consequently, $S_{I}=S_{I^{\prime}} \cup\{\eta\}$.

For some $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{0}$ as in Statement 1, let $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{I}} \in \prod_{s \in S_{I}} G\left(\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}, s}^{1, \text { an }}, s}\right)$. From the induction hypothesis, for $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{I^{\prime}}} \in \prod_{s \in S_{I^{\prime}}} G\left(\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}, s}\right)$, there exist a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{I^{\prime}} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$ and $\left(g_{U_{h, Z_{I^{\prime}}}}\right)_{h \in I^{\prime}} \in \prod_{h \in I^{\prime}} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{h, Z_{I^{\prime}}}\right)\right)$, satisfying: for any $s \in S_{I^{\prime}}$, there exist exactly two $U_{s}, V_{s} \in\left\{U_{h}\right\}_{h \in I^{\prime}}$ containing $s, g_{s} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{s, Z_{I^{\prime}}} \cap V_{s, Z_{I^{\prime}}}\right)\right)$, and if $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}\left(U_{s}\right)=0, g_{s}=g_{U_{s, Z_{I^{\prime}}}} \cdot g_{V_{s, Z_{I^{\prime}}}}^{-1}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{s, Z_{I^{\prime}}} \cap V_{s, Z_{I^{\prime}}}\right)\right)$.

Remark that the affinoid domains $V_{i-1}$ and $U_{i}$ satisfy the properties of Proposition 4.3 .12 with $V_{i-1} \cap U_{i}=\{\eta\}$. As seen above, there exist exactly two elements of $\left\{U_{h}\right\}_{h \in I}$ containing $\eta$. Also, since $g_{\eta} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}, \eta}\right)$, by Lemma 4.1.19, we may assume that $g_{\eta} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(V_{i-1, Z^{\prime}} \cap U_{i, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$. Hence, we may also assume that for any connected affinoid domain $Z^{\prime \prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x, g_{\eta} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(V_{i-1, Z^{\prime \prime \prime}} \cap U_{i, Z^{\prime \prime \prime}}\right)\right)$.

- Suppose $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}\left(U_{i}\right)=0$. By Proposition 4.3.12, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{I} \subseteq Z_{I^{\prime}} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$, and $a \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i, Z_{I}}\right)\right), b \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(V_{i-1, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$, such that $g_{\eta} \cdot g_{U_{i-1}, Z_{I}}=a \cdot b$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i, Z_{I}} \cap V_{i-1, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$. For any $h \in I^{\prime}$, set $g_{U_{h}, Z_{I}}^{\prime}:=g_{U_{h}, Z_{I}} \cdot b^{-1}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{h, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$. Also, set $g_{U_{i}, Z_{I}}^{\prime}:=a$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$.
- Suppose $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}\left(U_{i}\right)=1$. By Proposition 4.3.12, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{I} \subseteq Z_{I^{\prime}} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$ and $c \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(V_{i-1, Z_{I}}\right)\right), d \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$, such that $g_{U_{i-1}, Z_{I}}^{-1} \cdot g_{\eta}=c \cdot d$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(V_{i-1, Z_{I}} \cap U_{i, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$. For any $h \in I^{\prime}$, set $g_{U_{h}, Z_{I}}^{\prime}:=g_{U_{h}, Z_{I}} \cdot c$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{h, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$. Also, set $g_{U_{i}, Z_{I}}^{\prime}:=d^{-1}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$.
The family $\left(g_{U_{h}, Z_{I}}^{\prime}\right)_{h \in I} \in \prod_{h \in I} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{h, Z_{I}}\right)\right)$ satisfies the conditions of Statement 1 for the given $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{I}}$. The last part of Statement 1 is obtained directly by taking restrictions of $g_{U_{h, Z_{I}}}^{\prime}$ to $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{h, Z^{\prime \prime}}\right)\right), h \in I$.

In particular, for $i=n$, we obtain the result that was announced.

### 4.4. Relative proper curves

Throughout this section, let $k$ denote a complete ultrametric field. Let us fix and study the following framework.

Setting 4.4.1. Let $S, C$ be good $k$-analytic spaces such that $S$ is normal. Suppose there exists a morphism $\pi: C \rightarrow S$ that makes $C$ a proper flat relative analytic curve (i.e. all the fibers are curves) over $S$. Assume $\pi$ is surjective. Let $x \in S$ be such that the stalk $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field.

Assume there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that:
(1) for any $y \in Z_{0}$, the fiber $\pi^{-1}(y)$ is a normal irreducible projective $\mathcal{H}(y)$-analytic curve $C_{y}$;
(2) there exists a normal proper scheme $C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)}$ over $\operatorname{spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$, such that the analytification of the structural morphism $\pi_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)}: C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$ (in the sense of Subsection 1.6.3) is the projection $C_{Z_{0}}:=C \times_{S} Z_{0} \rightarrow Z_{0}$.

Let us mention some immediate consequences of Setting 4.4.1.

For any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, set $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}=C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \mathcal{O}(Z)$. Let us denote by $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ the structural morphism $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}(Z)$. Seeing as it is a base change of $\pi_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)}, \pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is proper.

Let $C_{Z}$ denote the Berkovich analytification of $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ (in the sense of Subsection 1.6.3). Remark that by Lemma 1.6.16, $C_{Z}=\left(C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}\right)^{\text {an }}=\left(C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \mathcal{O}(Z)\right)^{\text {an }}=C_{Z_{0}} \times{ }_{Z_{0}} Z$ $=C \times_{S} Z$. Let $\pi_{Z}: C_{Z} \rightarrow Z$ denote the structural morphism (i.e. the analytification of $\left.\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}\right)$. By [4, Proposition 2.6.9], $\pi_{Z}$ is proper.

Before exploring in more depth the properties of Setting 4.4.1, let us present a particular situation which leads to this setup, and which allows us to generalize the results of Chapter 3.

### 4.4.1. Example: Realization of an algebraic curve over $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ as the thickening

 of an analytic curve over $\mathcal{H}(x)$.Notation 4.4.2. Let $S^{\prime}$ be a normal good $k$-analytic space. Let $x \in S^{\prime}$ be such that $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field. Let $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ be a smooth geometrically irreducible projective algebraic curve over $\mathcal{O}_{x}$. Let us denote by $\pi_{x}$ the structural morphism $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}_{x}$.

Remark that $\mathcal{O}_{x}=\underset{\longrightarrow}{\lim _{Z} \mathcal{O}(Z) \text {, where the limit is taken over connected affinoid neigh- }}$ borhoods $Z$ of $x$ in $S$, implying Spec $\mathcal{O}_{x}=\lim _{Z} \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}(Z)$. By [27, Théorème 8.8.2], there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{0}$ of $x$, such that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, there exists a finitely presented scheme $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ over Spec $\mathcal{O}(Z)$ satisfying $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \times{ }_{\text {Spec } \mathcal{O}(Z)}$ Spec $\mathcal{O}_{x}=C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$. Let us denote by $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ the structural morphism $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}(Z)$.

Remark that $\pi_{x}$ is a proper smooth surjective morphism. The affinoid domain $Z_{0}$ can be chosen so that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, the morphism $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}: C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}(Z)$ remains proper, surjective (by [27, Théorème 8.10.5]), and smooth (by [62, Tag 0CNU]). Furthermore, by [62, Tag 0EY2], we may assume that $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is a relative curve over $\mathcal{O}(Z)$. Let $C_{Z}$ (defined over $Z$ ) denote the Berkovich analytification of the finite type scheme $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ over $\operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}(Z)$ (in the sense of Subsection 1.6.3). We denote by $\pi_{Z}: C_{Z} \rightarrow Z$ the analytification of $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$.

Proposition 4.4.3. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$.
(1) The morphism $\pi_{Z}: C_{Z} \rightarrow Z$ is quasi-smooth, proper, and surjective. Furthermore, $C_{Z}$ is a relative curve over $Z$.
(2) The spaces $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}, C_{Z}$ are normal.

Proof. Surjectivity of $\pi_{Z}$ can be obtained as in the proof of [6, Proposition 3.4.6(7)] from the surjectivity of $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$. Properness is given by [4, Proposition 2.6.9]. Quasismoothness is a consequence of the smoothness of $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ via [18, 5.2.14]. The dimension property is given by [18, Proposition 2.7.7].

Since $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}: C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow$ Spec $\mathcal{O}(Z)$ is smooth, for any point $y \in C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$, there exists an open neighborhood $U$ of $y$ such that there is a factorization of $U \rightarrow$ Spec $\mathcal{O}(Z)$ as: $U \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{d} \rightarrow$ Spec $\mathcal{O}(Z)$ for some $d \in \mathbb{N}$, where $U \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{d}$ is étale. Moreover, by [28, II, Remarque 1.5], $d=1$. By [28, I, Théorème 9.5], $U$ is normal at $y$ if and only if $\mathbb{A}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{1}$ is normal at its image.

Seeing as $S$ is normal, so is $Z$ (by [21, Théorème 3.4]). This implies that $\mathcal{O}(Z)$ is an integrally closed domain (recall $Z$ is connected in a normal space, so it is irreducible), hence
so is $\mathcal{O}(Z)[T]$ (where $T$ is an indeterminate), implying $\mathbb{A}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{1}$ is normal. Consequently, by the above paragraph, $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is normal. By [21, Théorème 3.4], its analytification $C_{Z}$ is also normal.

Seeing as a quasi-smooth morphism is flat (see [18, Theorem 5.3.4]), it remains to show that property (1) of Setting 4.4.1 is satisfied.

Notation 4.4.4. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ be any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$.

- For any $y \in Z$, the fiber $\pi_{Z}^{-1}(y)$ can be endowed with the structure of an $\mathcal{H}(y)$ analytic curve $C_{y}:=C_{Z} \times_{Z} \mathcal{H}(y)$ (see Proposition 1.5.7). Remark that $C_{y}$ does not depend on $Z$.
- For any $y^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}(Z)$, the fiber $\pi_{Z}^{-1}\left(y^{\prime}\right)$ can be endowed with the structure of a $\kappa\left(y^{\prime}\right)$-algebraic curve $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z), \kappa\left(y^{\prime}\right)}:=C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \times_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \kappa\left(y^{\prime}\right)$, where $\kappa\left(y^{\prime}\right)$ denotes the residue field of $y^{\prime}$ in $\operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}(Z)$. We will use the notation $C_{\kappa\left(y^{\prime}\right)}$ whenever there is no risk of ambiguity.
Since $\operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$ is Noetherian, the proper morphism $\pi_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)}$ is of finite presentation. Since it is smooth, $\pi_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)}$ is flat. By [27, Théorème 12.2.4], the set

$$
A:=\left\{u \in \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right): C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right), \kappa(u)} \text { is geometrically integral and smooth }\right\}
$$

is Zariski open in $\operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$.
Let $x^{\prime}$ denote the image of $x$ via the analytification $Z_{0} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$. Since $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field, there is a natural embedding $\kappa\left(x^{\prime}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}_{x}$, from where we obtain that $C_{\kappa\left(x^{\prime}\right)} \times_{\kappa\left(x^{\prime}\right)} \mathcal{O}_{x}=C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$. Since $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is smooth and geometrically irreducible, it is geometrically normal and integral, implying so is $C_{\kappa\left(x^{\prime}\right)}$. Consequently, $x^{\prime} \in A$, so $A$ is a non-empty Zariski open subset of Spec $\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$.

Lemma 4.4.5. Let $\psi$ denote the analytification $Z_{0} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$. For any $y \in Z_{0}$ such that $\psi(y) \in A, C_{y}$ is a geometrically irreducible smooth projective $\mathcal{H}(y)$-analytic curve. The same is true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$.

Proof. Let $y \in Z_{0}$ be such that $y^{\prime}:=\psi(y) \in A$, i.e. that $C_{\kappa\left(y^{\prime}\right)}$ is geometrically integral. By Corollary 1.5.7, $C_{y}$ is isomorphic to the analytification of $C_{\kappa\left(y^{\prime}\right)} \times \kappa\left(y^{\prime}\right) \mathcal{H}(y)$, so $C_{y}$ is an $\mathcal{H}(y)$-analytic curve that is geometrically integral, hence geometrically irreducible. Since $\pi_{Z}$ is proper, $C_{y}$ is a proper curve. Since $\pi_{Z}$ is quasi-smooth, $C_{y}$ is quasi-smooth (by [18, Theorem 5.3.4]). As it is proper, it is boundaryless, so smooth (see [18, Corollary 5.4.8]).

The last part of the statement is a direct consequence of the fact that $C_{y}$ does not depend on $Z_{0}$ (i.e. remains the same for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ containing $y$ ).

The preimage of $A$ with respect to the analytification morphism $\psi: Z_{0} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$ is a Zariski open in $Z_{0}$. Consequently, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1} \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, such that $Z_{1} \subseteq \psi^{-1}(A)$. This means that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x$, the fiber $C_{y}$ of any $y \in Z$ in $C_{Z}$ is a geometrically irreducible smooth projective $\mathcal{H}(y)$-analytic curve. Consequently, Setting 4.4.1 is satisfied for $S=Z_{1}$ and $C=C_{Z_{1}}$.
4.4.2. Consequences of Setting 4.4.1. Recall that for any affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$ in $S$, we denote by $\pi_{Z}$ the structural morphism $C_{Z}=C \times{ }_{S} Z \rightarrow Z$.

Proposition 4.4.6. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$.
(1) The space $C_{Z}$ is a normal proper flat relative analytic curve over $Z$. Furthermore, $\pi_{Z}$ is surjective. The same properties are true for $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ and $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$.
(2) Any connected affinoid domain of $C_{Z}$ is normal and irreducible.

Proof. Since $\pi_{Z}$ is obtained by a base change of $\pi: C \rightarrow S$, we immediately obtain that $\pi_{Z}$ is proper, surjective, flat, and of relative dimension 1.

Seeing as $C_{Z_{0}}$ is the analytification of the normal proper $\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$-scheme $C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)}$, it is normal by $\left[\mathbf{2 1}\right.$, Théorème 3.4]. Seeing as $C_{Z}=\pi_{Z_{0}}^{-1}(Z)$ is an analytic domain of the normal analytic space $C_{Z_{0}}$, by loc.cit., it is normal. By the same result, $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is also normal.

The morphism $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ was already remarked to be proper, as a base change of a proper morphism. Surjectivity of $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ can be obtained from the surjectivity of $\pi_{Z}$ as in Proposition 3.4.6(7) of [6]. The relative dimension of $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is the same as that of $\pi_{Z}$ by [18, Proposition 2.7.7]. Its flatness is a consequence of [18, Lemma 4.2.1].

Any connected affinoid domain of $C_{Z}$ is normal by [21, Théorème 3.4] and irreducible by [21, Théorème 5.17].

The object the following lemma deals with will be central for the rest of this chapter.
LEMMA 4.4.7. Set $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}:=C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \mathcal{O}_{x}$. Then, $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is an irreducible normal projective $k$-algebraic curve.

Proof. Let $C_{x}$ denote the fiber of $\pi_{Z_{0}}: C_{Z_{0}} \rightarrow Z_{0}$. It is a normal irreducible projective $\mathcal{H}(x)$-curve by definition. Let $\bar{x}$ denote the image of $x$ via the analytification morphism $\psi: Z_{0} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$. By Corollary 1.6.17, $C_{x} \cong\left(C_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \times_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \mathcal{H}(x)\right)^{\text {an }}$, where $\kappa(\bar{x})$ denotes the residue field of $x$ in $\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$, and $C_{\kappa(\bar{x})}:=C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \kappa(\bar{x})$ - the algebraic fiber of $\bar{x}$ with respect to $C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$.

Set $C_{x}^{\text {alg }}:=C_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \times_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \mathcal{H}(x)$. Seeing as $\psi(x)=\bar{x}$ and $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field, there is a canonical embedding $\kappa(\bar{x}) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}_{x}$. Consequently, $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=C_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \times_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \mathcal{O}_{x}$, and

$$
C_{x}^{\mathrm{alg}}=C_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \times_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \mathcal{H}(x)=C_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \times_{\kappa(\bar{x})} \mathcal{O}_{x} \times \times_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \mathcal{H}(x)=C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \times \mathcal{O}_{x} \mathcal{H}(x)
$$

As $\left(C_{x}^{\text {alg }}\right)^{\text {an }} \cong C_{x}$, and $C_{x}$ is a normal irreducible $\mathcal{H}(x)$-analytic curve, $C_{x}^{\text {alg }}$ is a connected ( $[\mathbf{6}$, Thm. 3.5.8(iii) $]$ ) normal algebraic curve ( $[\mathbf{6}$, Prop. 3.4.3]) over $\mathcal{H}(x)$.

Consequently, $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is connected, and by [26, Corollaire 6.5.4], it is normal. Properness is immediate seeing as $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \rightarrow$ Spec $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a base change of a proper morphism.

Recall Notation 4.4.4, which is applicable here. A very important property for the constructions we make is the following:

LEMMA 4.4.8. For any non-rigid point $\eta$ of $C_{x}$, the local ring $\mathcal{O}_{C, \eta}$ is a field. If $\eta \in C_{x}$ is rigid, then $\mathcal{O}_{C, \eta}$ is a discrete valuation ring.

In particular, this implies that for any type 3 point $\eta \in C_{x}$, the local ring $\mathcal{O}_{C, \eta}$ is a field.

Proof. Seeing as $x \in \operatorname{Int} Z_{0}$, for any $\eta \in C_{x}, \eta \in \operatorname{Int} C_{Z_{0}}$, so $\mathcal{O}_{C, \eta}=\mathcal{O}_{C_{Z_{0}}, \eta}$, and we can use the two interchangeably.

The morphism $\pi_{Z_{0}}: C_{Z_{0}} \rightarrow Z_{0}$ is proper, so boundaryless. As $\pi_{Z_{0}}$ is flat, by the proof of [18, Lemma 4.5.11], $\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{O}_{C, \eta}=\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{O}_{C_{x}, \eta}+\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{O}_{x}$. Since $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field, we obtain $\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{O}_{C, \eta}=\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{O}_{C_{x}, \eta}$.

By [18, Lemma 4.4.5], if $\eta \in C_{x}$ is not rigid, then $\mathcal{O}_{C_{x}, \eta}$ is a field, implying $\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{O}_{C, \eta}=$ 0 , so $\mathcal{O}_{C, \eta}$ is a field (recall $C_{Z_{0}}$ is normal). If $\eta \in C_{x}$ is rigid, by loc.cit. $\mathcal{O}_{C_{x}, \eta}$ is a discrete valuation ring, implying $\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{O}_{C, \eta}=1$. Hence, $\mathcal{O}_{C, \eta}$ is a Noetherian normal local ring with Krull dimension 1, meaning a discrete valuation ring.

We proved a result somewhat similar to Lemma 4.4.8 in Corollary 4.2.25 and applied it to $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$. Note that Lemma 4.4.8 is also applicable to the relative projective line.

Lemma 4.4.9. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. For any pair of different points $u_{1}, u_{2} \in C_{Z}$, there exist neighborhoods $B_{1}$ of $u_{1}$ and $B_{2}$ of $u_{2}$ in $C_{Z}$, such that $B_{1} \cap B_{2}=\emptyset$.

Proof. Seeing as $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is proper, it is separated, so by [4, Corollary 2.6.7], $\pi_{Z}$ is separated. Seeing as $Z$ is Hausdorff, by [6, Proposition 3.1.5], $Z \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k)$ is separated. Consequently, the canonical morphism $C_{Z} \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k)$ is separated, and we can conclude by loc.cit.

Lemma 4.4.10. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. The spaces $C_{Z}, C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ are irreducible.

Proof. Since all the fibers of $C_{Z} \rightarrow Z$ are connected, $C_{Z}$ is connected: if, by contradiction, $C_{Z}$ can be written as the disjoint union of two closed (hence compact) subsets $U$ and $V$, then $Z=\pi_{Z}(U) \cup \pi_{Z}(V)$. Since $\pi_{Z}(U)$ and $\pi_{Z}(V)$ are compact, and $Z$ is connected, their intersection is non-empty. Consequently, there exists $y \in Z$, such that $C_{y} \cap U \neq \emptyset$ and $C_{y} \cap V \neq \emptyset$. Since $C_{y}$ is connected and covered by the compacts $C_{y} \cap U, C_{y} \cap V$, this is a contradiction.

Thus, $C_{Z}$ is a connected normal analytic space. By [21, Proposition 5.14], it is irreducible. Then, by [18, Proposition 2.7.16], $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is also irreducible.

Proposition 4.4.11. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1} \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x$, there exists a finite surjective morphism $f_{Z}: C_{Z} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$, satisfying:
(1) $f_{Z}$ is the analytification of a finite surjective morphism $f_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}: C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{1, \text { an }}$;
(2) for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x, f_{Z} \times_{Z} Z^{\prime}=f_{Z^{\prime}}$, i.e. the following diagram (where the horizontal arrows correspond to the base change $\left.Z^{\prime} \hookrightarrow Z\right)$ is commutative.


Proof. Remark that $\mathcal{O}_{x}=\lim _{Z} \mathcal{O}(Z)$, where the limit is taken with respect to connected affinoid neighborhoods $Z \vec{\subseteq}^{Z} Z_{0}$ of $x$. Consequently, Spec $\mathcal{O}_{x}=\lim _{Z} \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}(Z)$, and $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \mathcal{O}_{x}=C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \lim _{Z} \mathcal{O}(Z)=\lim _{Z} C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$. Recall that $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is an irreducible normal projective curve (see Lemma 4.4.7).

Let $f_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}: C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}^{1}$ be any finite non-constant (hence surjective) morphism. By [27, Théorème 8.8.2], we may assume that $Z_{0}$ is such that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, there exists a morphism $f_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}: C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{1}$, such that the following diagram (where the horizontal arrows are the corresponding base changes) is commutative for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$.


Furthermore, by $[\mathbf{2 7}$, Théorème 8.10 .5$], Z_{0}$ can be chosen so that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, the morphism $f_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is finite and surjective.

Let $f_{Z}: C_{Z} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ denote the Berkovich analytification of $f_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ in the sense of Subsection 1.6.3. Then, as in [6, Proposition 3.4.6(7)], $f_{Z}$ is surjective; by [4, Proposition 2.6.9], it is finite.

Part (2) is a direct consequence of the commutativity of the diagram above.
Remark that the finite surjective morphism $f_{Z}: C_{Z} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ induces a finite surjective morphism $f_{z}: C_{z} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(z)}^{1, \text { an }}$ between the fibers of $z \in Z$ in $C_{Z}$ and $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$, respectively (recall Notation 4.4.4 which is applicable here).

Proposition 4.4.12. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. Let $y$ be a type 3 point in the fiber $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ of $x$ on $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$. Let $\left\{z_{1}, z_{2}, \ldots, z_{n}\right\}:=f_{Z}^{-1}(y)$. Then, $\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, y} \otimes_{\mathscr{M}(Z)(T)} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)=\prod_{i=1}^{n} \mathscr{M}_{C_{Z}, z_{i}}$.

Proof. Let us look at the finite surjective morphism $f_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}: C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{1}$ of $\mathcal{O}(Z)$-schemes. Let $y^{\prime}$ be the image of $y$ via the analytification $\psi: \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{1}$. Let $\mathcal{A}:=\operatorname{Spec} A$ be an open affine neighborhood of $y^{\prime}$ in $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{1}$. Its preimage by $\psi$ is a Zariski open $\mathcal{A}^{\prime}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ containing $y$.

Let $\mathcal{B}:=\operatorname{Spec} B$ be the pre-image of $\mathcal{A}$ by $f_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$. It is an affine open subset of $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$, and $f_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ induces a finite surjective morphism $\mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathcal{A}$. By construction, $\mathcal{B}$ contains $f_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{-1}\left(y^{\prime}\right)$. By the proof of [4, Proposition 2.6.10], there is an isomorphism $\prod_{i=1}^{n} \mathcal{O}_{C_{Z}, z_{i}}=$ $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, y} \otimes_{A} B$. Since $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ and $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{1}$ are irreducible, the function field of $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is Frac $B$, and the function field of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{1}$ is Frac $A$.

By Theorem 1.7.8, we obtain that $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)=\operatorname{Frac} B$, and $\mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)=$ Frac $A$. Since $B$ is a finite $A$-module, by the last paragraph of the proof of Lemma 3.2.4, $\prod_{i=1}^{n} \mathcal{O}_{C_{Z}, z_{i}}=$ $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, y} \otimes_{\text {Frac } A} \operatorname{Frac} B$, so $\prod_{i=1}^{n} \mathcal{O}_{C_{Z}, z_{i}}=\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, y} \otimes_{\mathscr{M}(Z)(T)} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$. Finally, since $y$ and $z_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, are type 3 points in $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ and $C_{x}$, respectively, $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, y}=\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, y}$, and $\mathcal{O}_{C_{Z}, z_{i}}=\mathscr{M}_{C_{Z}, z_{i}}$ for all $i$, concluding the proof of the statement.

Proposition 4.4.13. For any connected affinoid neighborhoods $Z, Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$, the base change morphism $\iota_{Z, Z^{\prime}}: C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)} \rightarrow C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is dominant. Furthermore, if $\eta_{Z}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\eta_{Z^{\prime}}\right)$ is the generic point of $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)}\right)$, then $\iota_{Z, Z^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{Z^{\prime}}\right)=\eta_{Z}$.

Proof. By Lemma 4.4.10, $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}, C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)}$ are irreducible, so it makes sense to speak of their generic points $\eta_{Z}, \eta_{Z^{\prime}}$, respectively. It suffices to show that $\eta_{Z}$ is in the image
of $\iota_{Z, Z^{\prime}}$. Let $\alpha$ be any point of $C_{Z}$. Let $\alpha^{\prime}$ be its image in $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ via the analytification $\phi: C_{Z} \rightarrow C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$. Let $U$ be an open affine neighborhood of $\alpha^{\prime}$ in $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$. Then, $\eta_{Z} \in U$, and the closure of $\left\{\eta_{Z}\right\}$ in $U$ is $U$.

By [4, Proposition 2.6.8], $\phi^{-1}(U)=U^{\text {an }}$-the analytification of $U$. Remark that $U^{\text {an }}$ is an open subspace of $C_{Z}$. Let $B_{\alpha}$ be any open neighborhood of $\alpha$ in $C_{Z}$. Then, since $\alpha \in U^{\text {an }}, B_{\alpha} \cap U^{\text {an }}$ is an open neighborhood of $\alpha$ in $U^{\text {an }}$, so by [4, Lemma 2.6.5], there exists a point $\beta \in B_{\alpha} \cap U^{\text {an }} \subseteq B_{\alpha}$, such that $\phi(\beta)=\eta_{Z}$. Thus, for any point $\alpha \in C_{Z}$ and any open neighborhood $B_{\alpha}$ of $\alpha$ in $C_{Z}$, there exists $\beta \in B_{\alpha}$, such that $\phi(\beta)=\eta_{Z}$. In other words, $\overline{\phi^{-1}\left(\left\{\eta_{Z}\right\}\right)}=C_{Z}$.


Let us now look at the commutative diagram above, where the horizontal lines correspond to analytification, and the vertical ones to base change. In particular, remark that since $C_{Z}=\pi^{-1}(Z)$ and $C_{Z^{\prime}}=\pi^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)$, we have $C_{Z^{\prime}} \subseteq C_{Z}$, so $\theta_{Z^{\prime}, Z}$ is an inclusion. Let $\gamma \in \pi^{-1}\left(\operatorname{Int}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)\right)$ (which is non-empty considering $\left.x \in \operatorname{Int}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)\right)$. Let $B_{\gamma}$ be an open neighborhood of $\gamma$ in the open $\pi^{-1}\left(\operatorname{Int}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)\right)$. Then, $B_{\gamma}$ is open in both $C_{Z^{\prime}}$ and $C_{Z}$. By the paragraph above, there exists $\gamma^{\prime} \in B_{\gamma}$ such that $\phi\left(\theta_{Z, Z^{\prime}}\left(\gamma^{\prime}\right)\right)=\phi\left(\gamma^{\prime}\right)=\eta_{Z}$. By the commutativity of the diagram, $\eta_{Z}$ is in the image of $\iota_{Z, Z^{\prime}}$, so $\iota_{Z, Z^{\prime}}$ is dominant.

Let $\eta_{Z^{\prime}}$ be the generic point of $C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)}$. Since $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}, C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)}$ are integral schemes, this means $\iota_{Z, Z^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{Z^{\prime}}\right)=\eta_{Z}$.

Recall that $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \mathcal{O}_{x}=\lim _{Z} C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$, where the limit is taken with respect to the connected affinoid neighborhoods $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$. By the lemma above, the generic points $\eta_{Z}$ of $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ determine a unique point $\eta \in C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$.

Proposition 4.4.14. The curve $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is integral with generic point $\eta$.
Proof. Note that $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ was already shown to be integral in Lemma 4.4.7.
For any connected affinoid neighborhoods $Z, Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$, the base change $\iota_{Z, Z^{\prime}}: C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)}=C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \mathcal{O}\left(Z^{\prime}\right) \rightarrow C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is an affine morphism. Furthermore, since $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ is normal, it is reduced.

By [62, Tag 0CUG], $\lim _{Z}{\overline{\left\{\eta_{Z}\right\}}}_{\text {red }}=\overline{\{\eta\}}_{\text {red }}$. Seeing as ${\overline{\left\{\eta_{Z}\right\}}}_{\text {red }}=C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$, we obtain that ${\overline{\{\eta\}_{\text {red }}}}=\lim _{Z} C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}=C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$, so $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is reduced and irreducible, i.e. integral, with generic point $\eta$.

Let $F_{N}$ denote the function field of the integral scheme $C_{N}$, where $N \in\left\{\mathcal{O}_{x}, \mathcal{O}(Z): Z \subseteq Z_{0}\right\}$ ( $Z$ is as usual considered to be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ ).

Corollary 4.4.15. $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=\underset{Z}{\lim _{Z}} F_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$, where the limit is taken with respect to connected affinoid neighborhoods $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$.

Proof. The projective system of integral schemes $\left\{C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}\right\}_{Z}$ gives rise to a direct system of fields $\left\{F_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}\right\}_{Z}$. For connected affinoid neighborhoods $Z, Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$, let us denote the corresponding transition morphism $F_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow F_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)}$ by $\chi_{Z^{\prime}, Z}$. Let us denote by $F^{\prime}$ the field $\underset{Z}{\lim _{Z}} F_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$.

The projections $\iota_{Z}: C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \rightarrow C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$ give rise to maps $\chi_{Z}^{\prime}: F_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$. Since for any $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z, \iota_{Z}=\iota_{Z, Z^{\prime}} \circ \iota_{Z^{\prime}}$, we have that $\chi_{Z}^{\prime}=\chi_{Z^{\prime}}^{\prime} \circ \chi_{Z^{\prime}, Z}$. Consequently, there is a map $F^{\prime} \rightarrow F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$. To show that this is an equality it suffices to show that for any field $K$ and morphisms $\lambda_{Z}: F_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow K$ such that for any $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z, \lambda_{Z}=\lambda_{Z^{\prime}} \circ \chi_{Z^{\prime}, Z}$, there is a map $\lambda: F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \rightarrow K$, satisfying $\lambda_{Z}=\lambda \circ \chi_{Z}^{\prime}$.

The maps $\lambda_{Z}: F_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow K$ give rise to maps $\lambda_{Z}^{\prime}: \operatorname{Spec} K \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} F_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$, where the image of $\lambda_{Z}^{\prime}$ is the generic point $\left\{\eta_{Z}\right\}$ of $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$. Consequently, by Proposition 4.4.13, for any $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$, we have $\lambda_{Z}^{\prime}=\iota_{Z, Z^{\prime}} \circ \lambda_{Z^{\prime}}^{\prime}$, implying there is a morphism $\lambda^{\prime}:$ Spec $K \rightarrow C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ that satisfies $\lambda_{Z}^{\prime}=\iota_{Z} \circ \lambda^{\prime}$ for all $Z$. In turn, this gives rise to a morphism $\lambda: F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \rightarrow K$, which satisfies $\lambda_{Z}=\lambda \circ \chi_{Z}^{\prime}$.

Corollary 4.4.16. $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=\lim _{Z} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$, where the limit is taken over connected affinoid neighborhoods $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$.

Proof. This is a direct consequence of Corollary 4.4.15 and Theorem 1.7.8.

### 4.5. Nice Covers of a Relative Proper Curve and Patching

We work under the hypotheses of Setting 4.4.1 and the notations we have introduced along the way. Here is a summary:

Notation 4.5.1. In addition to Setting 4.4.1, for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, let $C_{x}:=C_{Z} \times_{Z} \mathcal{H}(x), C_{Z}:=C \times_{S} Z, C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}:=C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \mathcal{O}(Z)$, and $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}:=C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \mathcal{O}_{x}$. Moreover, we denote by $\pi_{Z}$, resp. $\pi_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}$, the structural morphisms $C_{Z} \rightarrow Z$, resp. $C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}(Z)$.

Finally, let $f_{Z}: C_{Z} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, f_{\mathcal{O}_{Z}}: C_{\mathcal{O}(Z)} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{1, \text { an }}$ be finite surjective morphisms such that $f_{\mathcal{O}(Z)}^{\text {an }}=f_{Z}$, and for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x, f_{Z} \times{ }_{Z} Z^{\prime}=f_{Z^{\prime}}$.
4.5.1. Nice covers of a relative proper curve. As in the case of $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$, in addition to Setting 4.4.1, we assume that $\operatorname{dim} S<\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$. The reason behind this hypothesis is the same as before: it is sufficient for the existence of type 3 points on the fiber $C_{x}$ (see Lemma 4.1.6).

Goal: Let $\mathcal{V}$ be an open cover of $C_{x}$ in $C$. We construct a refinement of $\mathcal{V}$ and show that it satisfies certain properties which are necessary for patching.
(1) The construction. Remark that the finite surjective morphism $f_{Z_{0}}: C_{Z_{0}} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{Z_{0}}^{1, \text { an }}$ induces a finite surjective morphism $f_{x}: C_{x} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ on the corresponding fibers of $x$.

Without loss of generality, we may assume that $\mathcal{V}$ is an affinoid cover of $C_{x}$ in $C$ such that $\{$ Int $V: V \in \mathcal{V}\}$ is an open cover of $C_{x}$ in $C$. Since $C_{x}$ is compact, we may assume $\mathcal{V}$ is finite. Let $\mathcal{V}_{x}$ denote the finite affinoid cover $\mathcal{V}$ induces on $C_{x}$. Remark that $\mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}:=\left\{\operatorname{Int}_{C_{x}} V: V \in \mathcal{V}_{x}\right\}$ remains an open cover of $C_{x}$. Since $\mathcal{V}_{x}$ is an affinoid cover, for any $V \in \mathcal{V}_{x}$, the topological boundary $\partial_{C_{x}} V$ of $V$ in $C_{x}$ is finite. Consequently, for any $V \in \mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}, \partial_{C_{x}} V$ is finite. Set $S^{\prime}=\bigcup_{V \in \mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}} \partial_{C_{x}} V$. This is a finite set of points on $C_{x}$.

Seeing as $C_{x}$ is a connected curve, for any two points $u, v$ of $S^{\prime}$, there exist finitely many $\operatorname{arcs}[u, v]_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, l$, in $C_{x}$ connecting them (Proposition 1.8.14). Let us take a type 3 point on each $[u, v]_{i}$, for any two points $u, v \in S^{\prime}$. We denote this set by $S_{1}$. By construction of $S_{1}$, since type 3 points are dense in $C_{x}$ (Proposition 1.8.7) and $f_{x}^{-1}\left(f_{x}\left(S^{\prime}\right)\right)$ is a finite set, we may assume that $S_{1} \cap f_{x}^{-1}\left(f_{x}\left(S^{\prime}\right)\right)=\emptyset$.

Since $S_{1}$ is a finite set of type 3 points in $C_{x}, f_{x}\left(S_{1}\right)$ is a finite set of type 3 points in the fiber $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ of $x$ in $\mathbb{P}_{Z_{0}}^{1, \text { an }}$. By Lemma 3.1.11, there exists a nice cover $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ such that $f\left(S_{1}\right)=S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}$ (recall this notation in Definition 3.1.15). Let $T_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}$ be a parity function (Definition 3.1.16) for $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ (it exists by Lemma 3.1.17).

Lemma 4.5.2. The connected components of $f_{x}^{-1}(D), D \in \mathcal{D}_{x}$, form a cover $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ of $C_{x}$ which is nice and refines $\mathcal{V}_{x}$. Furthermore, $S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}=f_{x}^{-1}\left(S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}\right)$, and the map $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}: \mathcal{U}_{x} \rightarrow$ $\{0,1\}, U \mapsto f_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}\left(f_{x}(U)\right)$, is a parity function for $\mathcal{U}_{x}$.

Proof. That $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ is a nice cover of $C_{x}, S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}=f_{x}^{-1}\left(S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}\right)$, and $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$ is a parity function for $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ has been shown in Proposition 3.1.19. It remains to show that $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ refines $\mathcal{V}_{x}$. For that, it suffices to show that $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ refines the open cover $\mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}$ of $C_{x}$.

Let us start by proving that $S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}} \cap S^{\prime}=\emptyset$. Suppose, by contradiction, that there exists $a \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}} \cap S^{\prime}=f_{x}^{-1}\left(f_{x}\left(S_{1}\right)\right) \cap S^{\prime}$. Then, $f_{x}(a) \in f_{x}\left(S_{1}\right) \cap f_{x}\left(S^{\prime}\right)$, so there exists $b \in S_{1}$ such that $f_{x}(a)=f_{x}(b) \in f_{x}\left(S_{1}\right) \cap f_{x}\left(S^{\prime}\right)$. Consequently, $b \in f_{x}^{-1}\left(f_{x}\left(S^{\prime}\right)\right) \cap S_{1}=\emptyset$, which is impossible, so $S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}} \cap S^{\prime}=\emptyset$. Considering $S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}=\bigcup_{U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}} \partial U$ and $S^{\prime}=\bigcup_{V \in \mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}} \partial V$, for any $U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$ and any $V \in \mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}, \partial U \cap \partial V=\emptyset$.

Let us now show that $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ refines $\mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}$. Suppose, by contradiction, that there exists $U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$, such that for any $V \in \mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}, U \nsubseteq V$. Let $V_{j}, j=1,2, \ldots, m$, be the elements of $\mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}$ intersecting $U\left(m \neq 0\right.$ seeing as $\mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}$ is a cover of $\left.C_{x}\right)$. Then, $U \subseteq \bigcup_{j=1}^{m} V_{j}$. Considering $U \nsubseteq V_{j}$ and $U$ is connected, $U \cap \partial V_{j} \neq \emptyset$ for all $j$. If $\bigcup_{j=1}^{m} U \cap \partial V_{j}$ is a single point $\{w\}$, then $w \in U \backslash \bigcup_{j=1}^{m} V_{j}$ (because the $V_{j}$ are open), which is impossible seeing as $U \subseteq \bigcup_{j=1}^{m} V_{j}$. Let $x_{1}, x_{2}$ be two different points of $\bigcup_{j=1}^{m} U \cap \partial V_{j}$. Since $\partial U \cap \partial V_{j}=\emptyset$ for all $j$ (this was shown in the paragraph above), $x_{i} \in \operatorname{Int}(U), i=1,2$.

Since $U$ is connected, by Lemma 1.8.16, Int $U$ is connected, so there exists an arc [ $x_{1}, x_{2}$ ] connecting $x_{1}$ and $x_{2}$, which is contained entirely in Int $U$. But then, by the construction of $S_{1}$, since $x_{1}, x_{2} \in S^{\prime}$, there exists $y \in S_{1}$ such that $y \in\left[x_{1}, x_{2}\right] \subseteq$ Int $U$. Considering $y \in S_{1} \subseteq f_{x}^{-1}\left(S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}\right)=S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, there exists $U^{\prime} \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$, such that $y \in \partial U^{\prime}$. But then, $\partial U \cap \partial U^{\prime} \neq U \cap U^{\prime}$ which is in contradiction with the fact that $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ is a nice cover of $C_{x}$.

Thus, there must exist $V_{U} \in \mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}$ such that $U \subseteq V_{U}$, implying $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ refines the cover $\mathcal{V}_{x}^{\prime}$.

The following result will be used several times in what is to come.
Lemma 4.5.3. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. Let $D^{\prime}$ be a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$, such that $D^{\prime} \cap F_{x}$ is non-empty and connected, where $F_{x}$ is the fiber of $x$ with respect to the morphism $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow Z$. Then, the connected components of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D^{\prime}\right)$ are connected affinoid domains of $C_{Z}$ that intersect the fiber $C_{x}$ of $x$. Moreover, if $U$ is a connected component of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D^{\prime}\right)$, then $f_{Z}(U)=D^{\prime}$.

Proof. Seeing as $f_{Z}$ is a finite morphism, $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D^{\prime}\right)$ is an affinoid domain in $C_{Z}$, and thus so are its connected components.

Seeing as $C_{Z}$ and $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ are irreducible, they are pure-dimensional (see [21, Corollaire 4.14]). Seeing as $f_{Z}$ is finite, its relative dimension is pure and equal to 0 (i.e. all its fibers are of dimension 0 ). By $[\mathbf{1 8}, 1.4 .14(3)]$, the dimension of $C_{Z}$ is the same as the dimension of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$. Consequently, by [6, Lemma 3.2.4], $f_{Z}$ is open.

Let $U$ be any connected component of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D^{\prime}\right)$. It is an open and a closed subset of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D^{\prime}\right)$. Seeing as $f_{Z}$ is open and closed, $f_{Z}\left(U^{\prime}\right)$ is an open and closed subset of $D^{\prime}$.

Considering $D^{\prime}$ is connected, this implies $D^{\prime}=f_{Z}(U)$. Since $D^{\prime} \cap F_{x} \neq \emptyset$, we obtain $U \cap C_{x} \neq \emptyset$.

Let $Z_{\mathcal{D}} \subseteq Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$, such that the $Z_{\mathcal{D}}$-thickening $\mathcal{D}_{Z_{\mathcal{D}}}$ of $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ exists and is a $Z_{\mathcal{D}}$-relative nice cover for $\mathbb{P}_{Z_{\mathcal{D}}}^{1, \text { an }}$ (see Theorem 4.1.23).

Let $Z \subseteq Z_{\mathcal{D}}$ be any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. We denote by $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ the set of connected components of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{Z}\right), D \in \mathcal{D}_{x}$. By Lemma 4.5.3, $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ is a finite affinoid cover of $C_{Z}$. Furthermore, for any $U \in \mathcal{U}_{Z}, U \cap C_{x} \neq \emptyset$ and $f_{Z}(U) \in \mathcal{D}_{Z}$. Remark that the nice cover $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ of Lemma 4.5.2 is obtained by taking the connected components of $U \cap C_{x}, U \in \mathcal{U}_{Z}$.
(2) The elements of $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ intersect the fiber nicely. We show that the connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{\mathcal{D}}$ of $x$ can be chosen such that $U \cap C_{x}$ is connected for any $U \in \mathcal{U}_{Z}$, and the same remains true when replacing $Z$ with any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$. Let us start with a couple of auxiliary results.

Lemma 4.5.4. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. Let $A_{1}, A_{2}$ be two disjoint compact subsets of $C_{x}$. Then, there exist two open subsets $B_{1}, B_{2}$ of $C_{Z}$ such that $A_{i} \subseteq B_{i}, i=1,2$, and $B_{1} \cap B_{2}=\emptyset$.

Proof. Let $a \in A_{1}$. By Lemma 4.4.9, for any $b \in A_{2}$, there exist an open neighborhood $N_{a, b}$ of $a$ in $C_{Z}$, and an open neighborhood $B_{a, b}$ of $b$ in $C_{Z}$, such that $N_{a, b} \cap B_{a, b}=\emptyset$. The family $\left\{B_{a, b}\right\}_{b \in A_{2}}$ forms an open cover of $A_{2}$. Considering $A_{2}$ is a compact subset of $C_{x}$, it is compact in $C_{Z}$, so there exists a finite subcover $\left\{B_{a, b_{i}}\right\}_{i=1}^{m}$ of $\left\{B_{a, b}\right\}_{b \in A_{2}}$. Set $N_{a}=\bigcap_{i=1}^{m} N_{a, b_{i}}$ and $B_{a}=\bigcup_{i=1}^{m} B_{a, b_{i}}$. Then, $N_{a}, B_{a}$ are open subsets of $C_{Z}, A_{2} \subseteq B_{a}$, and $N_{a} \cap B_{a}=\emptyset$.

The family $\left\{N_{a}\right\}_{a \in A_{1}}$ is an open cover of $A_{1}$. Since $A_{1}$ is compact, there exists an open subcover $\left\{N_{a_{j}}\right\}_{j=1}^{l}$. Set $B_{1}=\bigcup_{j=1}^{l} N_{a_{j}}$ and $B_{2}=\bigcap_{j=1}^{l} B_{a_{j}}$. Then, $B_{1}$ and $B_{2}$ satisfy the statement.

Lemma 4.5.5. Let $D$ be a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, a n}$ containing only type 3 points in its boundary. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$ such that the $Z$-thickening $D_{Z}$ exists, and for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$, the $Z^{\prime}$-thickening $D_{Z^{\prime}}$ of $D$ is connected. Let $U_{1, Z}, U_{2, Z}, \ldots, U_{n, Z}$ be the connected components of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{Z}\right)$.

Then, the connected components of $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right)$ are the connected components of $U_{i, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}$, $i=1,2, \ldots, n$.

Proof. By commutativity of the diagram below, $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{Z}\right) \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}=f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{Z} \cap \mathbb{P}_{Z^{\prime}}^{1, \text { an }}\right)=$ $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right)$, so $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right)=\bigsqcup_{i=1}^{n} U_{i, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}$ for any $i$. The statement follows immediately.


We can now show property (2):

Proposition 4.5.6. Let $D$ be a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, a n}$ containing only type 3 points in its boundary. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of x such that the $Z$-thickening $D_{Z}$ exists, and for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$, the $Z^{\prime}$-thickening $D_{Z^{\prime}}$ of $D$ is connected.

Let $U_{1, Z}, U_{2, Z}, \ldots, U_{n, Z}$ be the connected components of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{Z}\right)$. The affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$ can be chosen such that:

- $U_{i, Z} \cap C_{x}$ is a non-empty connected affinoid domain of $C_{x}$ for all $i$;
- there is a bijection between the connected components of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{Z}\right)$ and the connected components of $f_{x}^{-1}(D)$ given by $U_{i, Z} \mapsto U_{i, Z} \cap C_{x}$;
- for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$, the connected components of $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(Z^{\prime}\right)$ are $U_{i, Z^{\prime}}:=U_{i, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$.
Proof. Recall that the finite morphism $f_{Z}: C_{Z} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ induces a finite morphism $f_{x}: C_{x} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ on the corresponding fibers of $x$. Let $L_{1}, L_{2}, \ldots, L_{s}$ be the connected components of $f_{x}^{-1}(D)$. They are connected affinoid domains of $C_{x}$.

Seeing as (follow the diagram below) $\bigsqcup_{t=1}^{s} L_{t}=f_{x}^{-1}(D)=f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{Z}\right) \cap C_{x}=\bigsqcup_{i=1}^{n} U_{i, Z} \cap C_{x}$, for any $t, L_{t} \subseteq \bigsqcup_{i=1}^{n} U_{i, Z}$. Since $L_{t}$ is connected, there exists a unique $i_{t}$ such that $L_{t} \subseteq U_{i_{t}, Z} \cap C_{x}$.


Suppose there exists $i_{0}$ such that $U_{i_{0}, Z} \cap C_{x}$ is not connected. Suppose, without loss of generality, that $L_{1}, L_{2}, \ldots, L_{r}$ are the connected components of $C_{x} \cap U_{i_{0}, Z}$. By Lemma 4.5.4, there exist mutually disjoint open subsets $B_{t}$ of $C_{Z}$ such that $L_{t} \subseteq B_{t}, t=1,2, \ldots, r$. The set $U_{i_{0}, Z} \backslash \bigsqcup_{t=1}^{r} B_{t}$ is a compact subset of $C_{Z}$ that doesn't intersect the fiber $C_{x}$. It is a non-empty set: otherwise, $U_{i_{0}, Z} \subseteq \bigsqcup_{t=1}^{r} B_{t}$; seeing as $U_{i_{0}, Z} \cap B_{t} \supseteq U_{i_{0}, Z} \cap L_{t} \neq \emptyset$ for all $t=1,2, \ldots, r$, we obtain that $U_{i_{0}, Z}$ is not connected, contradiction.

Since $\pi_{Z}$ is proper, $\pi_{Z}\left(U_{i_{0}, Z} \backslash \bigsqcup_{t=1}^{r} B_{t}\right)$ is a non-empty compact subset of $Z$ that does not contain $x$. Thus, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1} \subseteq Z$ of $x$ such that $\pi_{Z}^{-1}\left(Z_{1}\right) \cap\left(U_{i_{0}, Z} \backslash \bigsqcup_{t=1}^{r} B_{t}\right)=\emptyset$, implying $U_{i_{0}, Z} \cap C_{Z_{1}} \subseteq \bigsqcup_{t=1}^{r} B_{t}$.

Let $V_{1, Z_{1}}, V_{2, Z_{1}}, \ldots, V_{e, Z_{1}}$ be the connected components of $U_{i_{0}, Z} \cap C_{Z_{1}}$. By Lemma 4.5.5, $V_{j, Z_{1}}, j=1,2, \ldots, e$, are connected components of $f_{Z_{1}}^{-1}\left(D_{Z_{1}}\right)$, so by Lemma 4.5.3, they all intersect the fiber $C_{x}$. Moreover, $\bigsqcup_{j=1}^{e} V_{j, Z_{1}} \cap C_{x}=U_{i_{0}, Z} \cap C_{x}=\bigsqcup_{t=1}^{r} L_{t}$. Hence, for any $t$, there exists a unique $e_{t}$ such that $L_{t} \subseteq V_{e_{t}, Z_{1}} \cap C_{x}$. By the paragraph above, for any $j$, there exists a unique $t_{j}$, such that $V_{j, Z_{1}} \subseteq B_{t_{j}}$, hence a unique $L_{t_{j}}$ contained in $V_{j, Z_{1}}$. Consequently, $r=e$ and $\left\{V_{j, Z_{1}} \cap C_{x}: j=1,2, \ldots, r\right\}=\left\{L_{t}: t=1,2, \ldots, r\right\}$. We may assume, without loss of generality, that $V_{j, Z_{1}} \cap C_{x}=L_{j}, j=1,2, \ldots, r$. Clearly, this induces a bijection between the connected components of $U_{i_{0}, Z} \cap C_{Z_{1}}$ and the connected components of $U_{i_{0}, Z} \cap C_{x}$, given by $V_{j, Z_{1}} \mapsto V_{j, Z_{1}} \cap C_{x}=L_{j}, j=1,2, \ldots, r$.

Let us show that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{2} \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x, V_{j, Z_{1}} \cap C_{Z_{2}}$ remains connected for all $j=1,2, \ldots, r$. By Lemma 4.5.5, the connected components of $V_{j, Z_{1}} \cap C_{Z_{2}}$ are connected components of $f_{Z_{2}}^{-1}\left(D_{Z_{2}}\right)$, so by Lemma 4.5.3, they all intersect the fiber $C_{x}$. Seeing as $L_{j}=V_{j, Z_{1}} \cap C_{x}=V_{j, Z_{1}} \cap C_{Z_{2}} \cap C_{x}$ is connected, $V_{j, Z_{1}} \cap C_{Z_{2}}$ has to
be connected for all $j$. In particular, the bijective correspondence obtained above remains true when replacing $Z_{1}$ by $Z_{2}$.

We have shown that for any $i=1,2, \ldots, n$, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{i} \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, such that the connected components $V_{j, i, Z^{i}}, j=1,2, \ldots, r_{i}$, of $U_{i, Z} \cap C_{Z^{i}}$ satisfy: (a) $V_{j, i, Z^{i}} \cap C_{x}$ is non-empty and connected for all $j$; (b) there is a bijection between the connected components of $U_{i, Z} \cap C_{Z^{i}}$ and the connected components of $U_{i, Z} \cap C_{x}$, given by $V_{j, i, Z^{i}} \mapsto V_{j, i, Z^{i}} \cap C_{x}$; (c) for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z^{i}, V_{j, i, Z^{i}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}$ remains connected, implying the connected components of $U_{i, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}$ are $V_{j, i, Z^{i}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}, j=1,2, \ldots, r_{i}$.

Let $Z^{\prime} \subseteq \bigcap_{i=1}^{n} Z^{i}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. Since $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$, by Lemma 4.5.5, the connected components of $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right)$ are the connected components of $U_{i, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$. By the paragraph above, these are $V_{j, i, Z^{i}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}, j=1,2, \ldots, r_{i}$, $i=1,2, \ldots, n$, and they satisfy: (a') $V_{j, i, Z^{i}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}} \cap C_{x}$ is non-empty and connected for all $j, i ;$ (b') for any $i$, there is a bijection between the connected components of $U_{i, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}$ and the connected components of $U_{i, Z} \cap C_{x}$, given by $V_{i, j, Z^{i}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}} \mapsto V_{i, j, Z^{i}} \cap C_{x}$, implying there is a bijection between the connected components of $U_{i, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$ (i.e. of $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right)$ ) and the connected components of $U_{i, Z} \cap C_{x}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$ (i.e. of $\left.f_{x}^{-1}(D)\right)$, given by $V_{j, i, Z^{i}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}} \mapsto V_{j, i, Z^{i}} \cap C_{x}, j, i$; (c') for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$, by the paragraph above, the connected components of $f_{Z^{\prime \prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{Z^{\prime \prime}}\right)$ are $V_{j, i, Z^{i}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime \prime}}=V_{j, i, Z^{i}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime \prime}}, j=1,2, \ldots, r_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$.

We have shown:
Corollary 4.5.7. There exists a connected affinoid neighbohrood $Z_{f} \subseteq Z_{\mathcal{D}}$ of $x$, such that for any $U \in \mathcal{U}_{Z_{f}}, U \cap C_{x}$ is connected, and $\mathcal{U}_{x}=\left\{U \cap C_{x}: U \in \mathcal{U}_{Z_{f}}\right\}$, where $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ is the nice cover of $C_{x}$ obtained in the statement of Lemma 4.5.2. Moreover, for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{f}$ of $x, \mathcal{U}_{Z^{\prime}}=\left\{U \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}: U \in \mathcal{U}_{Z_{f}}\right\}$.

Remark 4.5.8. By Corollary 4.5.7, for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{f}$ of $x$, there is a bijective correspondence between $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ and $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ given by $V \mapsto V \cap C_{x}$.

Consequently, we will from now on sometimes write $U_{Z}$ for the unique element of $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ corresponding to the element $U$ of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$. In particular, $\mathcal{U}_{Z}=\left\{U_{Z}: U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}\right\}$.
(3) $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ refines $\mathcal{V}$. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{f}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. Let $U_{Z} \in \mathcal{U}_{Z}$. Then, $U:=U_{Z} \cap C_{x}$ is a connected affinoid domain of $C_{x}$ and an element of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ (recall Remark 4.5.8). By Lemma 4.5.2, there exists $V \in \mathcal{V}$, such that $U \subseteq V_{x}$, where $V_{x}$ denotes the intersection of $V$ with the fiber $C_{x}$. Assume $U_{Z} \nsubseteq V$. Then, $U_{Z} \backslash V$ is a non-empty compact subset of $C_{Z}$ not intersecting the fiber $C_{x}$. Seeing as $\pi_{Z}$ is proper, $\pi_{Z}\left(U_{Z} \backslash V\right)$ is a compact subset of $Z$ not containing $x$. Thus, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1} \subseteq Z$ of $x$, such that $\pi_{Z}^{-1}\left(Z_{1}\right) \cap\left(U_{Z} \backslash V\right)=\emptyset$, i.e. $C_{Z_{1}} \cap\left(U_{Z} \backslash V\right)=\emptyset$, implying $C_{Z_{1}} \cap U_{Z} \subseteq V$. Clearly, the same remains true when replacing $Z_{1}$ by any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{2} \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x$. Considering $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ is a finite cover, by repeating the same argument for all of its elements, we obtain that there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{f}$, such that $\left\{U_{Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}: U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}\right\}$ refines $\mathcal{V}$, and the same remains true when replacing $Z^{\prime}$ with any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$. By Corollary 4.5.7, $\mathcal{U}_{Z^{\prime}}=\left\{U_{Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}: U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}\right\}$, implying $\mathcal{U}_{Z^{\prime}}$ is a refinement of $\mathcal{V}$. The same remains true for any $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ as above.

We have shown:

Proposition 4.5.9. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{r} \subseteq Z_{f}$ of $x$ such that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{r}$, the cover $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ refines $\mathcal{V}$.
(4) The intersection of the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ between themselves. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{r}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. Let $D_{1}, D_{2} \in \mathcal{D}_{x}$ such that $D_{1} \cap D_{2} \neq \emptyset$. Set $D_{1} \cap D_{2}=\{y\}$. Then, $f_{x}^{-1}(y):=\left\{s_{1}, s_{2}, \ldots, s_{m}\right\}$ is a subset of $S_{\mathcal{u}_{x}}$. Set $D=D_{1} \cap D_{2}$. As $Z \subseteq Z_{\mathcal{D}}$ (with $Z_{\mathcal{D}}$ as in part (1)), the $Z$-thickening $D_{Z}$ of $D$ is a connected affinoid domain of $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ intersecting the fiber $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ at the single type 3 point $y$.

Let $W_{i, Z}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, be the connected components of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{Z}\right)$. By Proposition 4.5.6, we may assume that: (a) $W_{i, Z} \cap C_{x}$ is connected for all $i$; (b) there is a bijective correspondence between the connected components of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{Z}\right)$ and the points of $f_{x}^{-1}(y)$, given by $W_{i, Z} \mapsto W_{i, Z} \cap C_{x}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$; (c) for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$, the connected components of $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right)$ are $W_{i, Z^{\prime}}=W_{i, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$.

For any $s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)$, let us denote by $W_{s, Z}$ the (unique) connected component of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{Z}\right)$ containing $s$, (i.e. $W_{s, Z} \cap C_{x}=\{s\}$ ), so the connected components of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{Z}\right)$ are $W_{s, Z}, s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)$.

Let $U_{j, Z}, j=1,2, \ldots, p$ (resp. $V_{l, Z}, l=1,2, \ldots, q$ ), be the connected components of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{1, Z}\right)\left(\right.$ resp. $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{2, Z}\right)$. Then,

$$
\bigsqcup_{j=1}^{p} \bigsqcup_{l=1}^{q} U_{j, Z} \cap V_{l, Z}=f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{1, Z}\right) \cap f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{2, Z}\right)=f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{Z}\right)=\bigsqcup_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} W_{s, Z}
$$

For some $j, l$, let $s_{j, l} \in U_{j} \cap V_{l}$. Since $s_{j, l} \in W_{s_{j, l}, Z}$, we obtain that $W_{s_{j, l}, Z} \subseteq U_{j, Z} \cap V_{l, Z}$. Consequently, for any $j, l, U_{j, Z} \cap V_{l, Z}=\bigsqcup_{s \in U_{j} \cap V_{l}} W_{s, Z}$.

Let $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ be any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. Considering that the connected components of $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{1, Z^{\prime}}\right)$ (resp. $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{2, Z^{\prime}}\right)$ ) are $U_{j, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}, j=1,2, \ldots, p$ (resp. $\left.V_{l, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}, l=1,2, \ldots, q\right)$, the same properties remain true when replacing $Z$ by $Z^{\prime}$.

The same argument can be repeated for any two non-disjoint elements of the finite cover $\mathcal{D}_{x}$. We have shown:

Proposition 4.5.10. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{t} \subseteq Z_{r}$ of $x$ such that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{t}$, for any two non-disjoint elements $D_{1}, D_{2}$ of $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ with $D_{1} \cap D_{2}=:\{y\}$,

$$
f_{Z}^{-1}\left(D_{1, Z} \cap D_{2, Z}\right)=\bigsqcup_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} W_{s, Z},
$$

where $W_{s, Z}$ is a connected affinoid neighborhood of $C_{Z}$, and for any $s, W_{s, Z} \cap C_{x}=\{s\}$. Moreover, for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$, the connected components of $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{1, Z^{\prime}} \cap D_{2, Z^{\prime}}\right)$ are $W_{s, Z^{\prime}}:=W_{s, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}, s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)$.

Corollary 4.5.11. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{t}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. For any $U, V \in \mathcal{U}_{x}, U \cap V \neq \emptyset$ if and only if $U_{Z} \cap V_{Z} \neq \emptyset$.

Proof. If $U_{Z} \cap V_{Z} \neq \emptyset$, then $f(U) \cap f(V) \neq \emptyset$, so by Proposition 4.5.10, $U_{Z} \cap V_{Z} \cap C_{x} \neq \emptyset$, i.e. $U \cap V \neq \emptyset$. The other direction is immediate.

In order to invoke more easily the properties we have just shown for $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$, we introduce the following:

Definition 4.5.12. Let $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ be a nice cover of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$. For a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x$, a cover $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ of $C_{Z}$ constructed as in (1) and satisfying properties (2), (4), will be called a $Z$-relative nice cover of $C_{Z}$ induced by $\mathcal{D}_{x}$.

Remark that $\mathcal{U}_{x}:=\left\{U \cap C_{x}: U \in \mathcal{U}_{Z}\right\}$ is a nice cover of $C_{x}$ induced by $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ as in Lemma 4.5.2. Also, for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$, $\mathcal{U}_{Z^{\prime}}=\left\{U \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}: U \in \mathcal{U}_{Z}\right\}$ is a $Z^{\prime}$-relative nice cover of $C_{Z}$ induced by $\mathcal{D}_{x}$.

REMARK 4.5.13. We have shown that for any open cover $\mathcal{V}$ of $C_{x}$ in $C$, there exists a nice cover $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ and a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{t}$ of $x$, such that the $Z_{t^{-}}$ relative nice cover $\mathcal{U}_{Z_{t}}$ of $C_{Z_{t}}$ induced by $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ refines $\mathcal{V}$. This remains true when replacing $Z_{t}$ by any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{t}$ of $x$.
4.5.2. Patching over Relative Proper Curves. We now generalize the results of Section 4.3 , and obtain an application of patching on relative proper curves.

Throughout this part, let $k$ be a non-trivially valued complete ultrametric field. We continue working with Setting 4.4.1 and Notation 4.5.1. Moreover, we assume that $\operatorname{dim} S<$ $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$, so type 3 points exist in $C_{x}$.

As in the case of $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$ :
Notation 4.5.14. Let $G$ be a connected rational linear algebraic group defined over $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$. Since $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=\lim _{Z} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$ (Corollary 4.4.16), there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{G} \subseteq Z_{0} \overrightarrow{\text { of }} x$, such that $G$ is a connected rational linear algebraic group over $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z_{G}}\right)$.

The following is an analogue of Proposition 3.2.2.
TheOrem 4.5.15. For any open cover $\mathcal{V}$ of $C_{x}$ in $C$, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{G}$ of $x$ and a nice cover $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ such that:

- the $Z$-relative nice cover $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ of $C_{Z}$ induced by $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ refines $\mathcal{V}$;
- for any $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}} \in \prod_{s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}} G\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, s}\right)$, there exists $\left(g_{U}\right)_{U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}} \in \prod_{U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z}\right)\right)$, satisfying: for any $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, if $U_{s}, V_{s}$ are the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ containing $s$, if $W_{s, Z}$ is the connected component of $U_{s, Z} \cap V_{s, Z}$ containing $s$, and $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}\left(U_{s}\right)=0$, then $g_{s} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z}\right)\right)$, and $g_{s}=g_{U} \cdot g_{V}^{-1}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z}\right)\right)$.
The same remains true when replacing $Z$ by any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$.

Proof. Seeing as for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x, x \in \operatorname{Int}(Z)$, for any $u \in C_{x}, u \in \operatorname{Int}\left(C_{Z}\right)$, so $\mathscr{M}_{C_{Z}, u}=\mathscr{M}_{C, u}$.

By Remark 4.5.13, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{G}$ of $x$ and a nice cover $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ which induce a refinement $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ of $\mathcal{V}$ obtained as in construction (1) and satisfying properties (2) and (4) of Subsection 4.5.1. Let $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ denote the corresponding nice cover of $C_{x}, T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$ its associated parity function, and $S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$ the intersection points of the different elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$.

The proof is organized in three parts: in (a) we explore some properties of the neighborhoods of $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$; in (b) we make the descent to $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$ where the statement has already been proven; in (c) we conclude by using pull-backs.
(a) The neighborhoods of $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$. We will need the following:

Lemma 4.5.16. For $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, let $B_{s}$ be a neighborhood of $s$ in $C$. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1}$ of $x$ such that for any $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, if $U_{s}, V_{s}$ are the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ containing $s$, and $W_{s, Z_{1}}$ is the connected component of $U_{s, Z_{1}} \cap V_{s, Z_{1}}$ containing $s$, then $W_{s, Z_{1}} \subseteq B_{s}$. The neighborhood $Z_{1}$ can be chosen such that the statement remains true when replacing $Z_{1}$ by any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{2} \subseteq Z_{1}$ of $x$.

Proof. Let $Z \subseteq Z_{t}$ be a connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$, where $Z_{t}$ is as in Proposition 4.5.10. By Lemma 4.4.9, we may suppose that $B_{s} \cap S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}=\{s\}$ for any $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$.

Let $y \in S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}$. By Lemma 4.1.19, there exists an open neighborhood $A_{y}$ of $y$ in $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$, such that $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(A_{y}\right) \subseteq \bigsqcup_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} B_{s}$. Let $D_{1}, D_{2}$ be the elements of $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ containing $y$. By [25, Lemma I.1.2], there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1} \subseteq Z_{t}$ of $x$, such that $D_{1, Z_{1}} \cap D_{2, Z_{1}}=\left(D_{1} \cap D_{2}\right)_{Z_{1}} \subseteq A_{y}$. Then,

$$
f_{Z_{1}}^{-1}\left(D_{1, Z_{1}} \cap D_{2, Z_{1}}\right) \subseteq f_{Z_{1}}^{-1}\left(A_{y}\right)=f_{Z}^{-1}\left(A_{y}\right) \cap C_{Z_{1}} \subseteq \bigsqcup_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} B_{s}
$$

Let $W_{s, Z_{1}}, s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)$, be the connected components of $f_{Z_{1}}^{-1}\left(D_{1, Z_{1}} \cap D_{2, Z_{1}}\right)$, where for any $s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y), s \in W_{s, Z_{1}}$ (see Proposition 4.5.10). Seeing as $\bigsqcup_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} W_{s, Z_{1}} \subseteq \bigsqcup_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} B_{s}$ and $B_{s} \cap S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}=\{s\}$ for any $s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)$, we obtain that $W_{s, Z_{1}} \subseteq B_{s}$.

Let $Z_{2} \subseteq Z_{1}$ be any connected affinoid neighborhood of $x$. Seeing as the connected components of $f_{Z_{2}}^{-1}\left(D_{1, Z_{2}} \cap D_{2, Z_{2}}\right)$ are $W_{s, Z_{2}}=W_{s, Z_{1}} \cap C_{Z_{2}}, s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)$ (Proposition 4.5.10), all of the above remains true when replacing $Z_{1}$ by $Z_{2}$.

We obtain the statement by applying the above to all points of $S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}$.
Summary 1. Let $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}} \in \prod_{s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}} G\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, s}\right)$. For any $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, there exists a neighborhood $B_{s}$ of $s$ in $C$, such that $g_{s} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(B_{s}\right)\right)$. By Lemma 4.5.16, there exists an affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{t}$ (with $Z_{t}$ as in Proposition 4.5.10) of $x$ such that for any $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, if $U_{s}, V_{s}$ are the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ containing $s$, then $W_{s, Z} \subseteq B_{s}$, where $W_{s, Z}$ is the connected component of $U_{s, Z} \cap V_{s, Z}$ containing $s$. Consequently, $g_{s} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z}\right)\right)$. Seeing as for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z, W_{s, Z^{\prime}}=W_{s, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}$, the same remains true when replacing $Z$ by $Z^{\prime}$.
(b) The descent to $\mathbb{P}^{1, a n}$. Let $Z$ be as in Summary 1. The finite surjective morphism $f_{Z}: C_{Z} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}$ induces a finite field extension $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right) / \mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)$. Set $G^{\prime}=\mathcal{R}_{\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right) / \mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)}(G)$ - the Weil restriction of scalars from $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$ to $\mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)$ of $G$. This is still a connected rational linear algebraic group (see [12, 7.6] or [55, Section 1]). For any $y \in S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}$, by the universal property of $\mathcal{R}, G^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, y}\right)=G\left(\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }, y}} \otimes_{\mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)\right)$. By Proposition 4.4.12, $G^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }, y}}\right)=\prod_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} G\left(\mathscr{M}_{C_{Z}, s}\right)$. Let $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in S_{u_{x}}} \in \prod_{s \in S_{u_{x}}} G\left(\mathscr{M}_{C_{Z}, s}\right)$. This determines uniquely an element $\left(h_{y}\right)_{y \in S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}} \in \prod_{y \in S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}} G^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, y}\right)$.

By Theorem 4.3.13, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$, and $\left(h_{D}\right)_{D \in \mathcal{D}_{x}} \in \prod_{D \in \mathcal{D}_{x}} G^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$, satisfying: for any $y \in S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}$, there exist exactly two $D_{y}, D_{y}^{\prime} \in \mathcal{D}_{x}$ containing $y, h_{y} \in G^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}\left(D_{y, Z^{\prime}} \cap D_{y, Z^{\prime}}^{\prime}\right)\right)$, and if $T_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}\left(D_{y}\right)=0$, then $h_{y}=h_{D_{y}} \cdot h_{D_{y}^{\prime}}^{-1}$ in $G^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}\left(D_{y, Z^{\prime}} \cap D_{y, Z^{\prime}}^{\prime}\right)\right)$. The same expression remains true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$.

For any $D \in \mathcal{D}_{x}$, let $U_{1, Z^{\prime}}, U_{2, Z^{\prime}}, \ldots, U_{n, Z^{\prime}}$, be the connected components of $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right)$. The natural map $\mathscr{M}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right) \otimes_{\mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, a n}\right)} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right) \rightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{n} \mathscr{M}\left(U_{i, Z^{\prime}}\right)$ (obtained by pull-backs and multiplication), induces a map

$$
G^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)=G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right) \otimes_{\mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \mathrm{an}}\right)} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)\right) \rightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{n} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right) .
$$

Let the image of $h_{D} \in G^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}\left(D_{Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$ by this map be the element $\left(g_{U_{1}}, g_{U_{2}}, \ldots, g_{U_{n}}\right)$ of $\prod_{i=1}^{n} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$. Thus, for any $U_{Z^{\prime}} \in \mathcal{U}_{Z^{\prime}}$, we have an element $g_{U} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$.
(c) The decomposition. Finally, it remains to show that for any $U_{0}, U_{1} \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$ such that $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}\left(U_{0}\right)=0$, and $s \in U_{0} \cap U_{1}$, if $W_{s, Z^{\prime}}$ is the connected component of $U_{0, Z^{\prime}} \cap U_{1, Z^{\prime}}$ containing $s$, then $g_{s}=g_{U_{0}} \cdot g_{U_{1}}^{-1}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$, and that the same expression remains true when replacing $Z^{\prime}$ by any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x$.

Let $y \in S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}$. Let $D_{1}, D_{2}$ be the elements of $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ containing $y$. For any $s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)$, let $W_{s, Z^{\prime}}$ denote the connected component of $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(D_{1, Z^{\prime}} \cap D_{2, Z^{\prime}}\right)$ containing $s$. There is a natural bilinear map $\mathscr{M}\left(D_{1, Z^{\prime}} \cap D_{2, Z^{\prime}}\right) \times \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right) \rightarrow \prod_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} \mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z^{\prime}}\right),(a, b) \mapsto a b$, which induces an application $\mathscr{M}\left(D_{1, Z^{\prime}} \cap D_{2, Z^{\prime}}\right) \otimes_{\mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right) \rightarrow \prod_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} \mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z^{\prime}}\right)$ (this is "compatible" with the isomorphism $\mathscr{M}_{\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}, y} \otimes_{\mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right) \rightarrow \prod_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} \mathscr{M}_{C_{Z}, s}$, i.e. they are both induced by multiplication). Finally, this gives rise to a morphism $G^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}\left(D_{1, Z^{\prime}} \cap D_{2, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)=G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(D_{1, Z^{\prime}} \cap D_{2, Z^{\prime}}\right) \otimes_{\mathscr{M}\left(\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, \text { an }}\right)} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)\right) \rightarrow \prod_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$, which sends (the restriction of) $h_{y}$ to (the restriction of) $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)}$.

Let $U_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$, (resp. $V_{j}, j=1,2, \ldots, m$ ) be the connected components of $f_{x}^{-1}\left(D_{1}\right)$ (resp. $f_{x}^{-1}\left(D_{2}\right)$ ). For any $i, j$, set $U_{i} \cap V_{j}=\left\{s_{\alpha}^{i, j}: \alpha=1,2, \ldots, l_{i, j}\right\}$ (if $U_{i} \cap V_{j}=\emptyset$ for some $i, j$, then we take $l_{i, j}=0$ ). Remark that $f_{x}^{-1}(y)=\left\{s_{\alpha}^{i, j}: \alpha=1, \ldots, l_{i, j}, i=1, \ldots, n, j=1, \ldots, m\right\}$. For any $i, j, \alpha$, let $W_{s_{\alpha}^{i, j}, Z^{\prime}}$ be the connected component of $U_{i, Z^{\prime}} \cap V_{j, Z^{\prime}}$ containing $s_{\alpha}^{i, j}$.

For any $i$ (resp. $j$ ), there is a restriction map $\mathscr{M}\left(U_{i, Z^{\prime}}\right) \rightarrow \prod_{j=1}^{m} \prod_{\alpha=1}^{l_{i, j}} \mathscr{M}\left(W_{s_{\alpha}^{i, j}, Z^{\prime}}\right)$ (resp. $\left.\mathscr{M}\left(V_{j, Z^{\prime}}\right) \rightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{n} \prod_{\alpha=1}^{l_{i, j}} \mathscr{M}\left(W_{s_{\alpha}^{i, j}, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$. This induces a restriction map

$$
\prod_{i=1}^{n} \mathscr{M}\left(U_{i, Z^{\prime}}\right) \rightarrow \prod_{i, j, \alpha} \mathscr{M}\left(W_{s_{\alpha}^{i, j}, Z^{\prime}}\right)\left(\text { resp. } \prod_{j=1}^{m} \mathscr{M}\left(V_{j, Z^{\prime}}\right) \rightarrow \prod_{i, j, \alpha} \mathscr{M}\left(W_{s_{\alpha}^{i, j}, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right) .
$$

The following commutative diagram

gives rise to the following (where $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \lambda_{3}$ are isomorphisms):


The factorization result is now a consequence of the analoguous result for $\left(h_{y}\right)_{y \in S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}}$ and $\left(h_{D}\right)_{D \in \mathcal{U}_{x}}$, the relationship between $T_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}$ and $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, and the commutativity of the diagram above. More precisely, $h_{y}=h_{D_{1}} \cdot h_{D_{2}}^{-1}$ in $G^{\prime}\left(\mathscr{M}\left(D_{1, Z^{\prime}} \cap D_{2, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$, and $h_{y}$ is sent to $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)}$, so for any $s_{\alpha}^{i, j} \in f_{x}^{-1}(y), g_{s_{\alpha}^{i, j}}=g_{U_{i}} \cdot g_{V_{j}}^{-1}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{s_{\alpha}^{i, j}, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$.

Considering for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime}$ of $x, W_{s, Z^{\prime \prime}}=W_{s, Z^{\prime}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime \prime}}$ for any $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, and $U_{Z^{\prime \prime}}=U_{Z^{\prime}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime \prime}}$ for all $U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$, the same expressions remain true when replacing $Z^{\prime}$ by $Z^{\prime \prime}$.

### 4.6. The Local-Global Principles

Let $k$ be a non-trivially valued ultrametric field. Throughout this entire section, we keep working with the hypotheses of Setting 4.4.1, and the related notations we have introduced (see Notation 4.5.1). As before, we also suppose that $\operatorname{dim} S<\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$.

Remark 4.6.1. Recall in particular that for $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \mathcal{O}_{x}$, its function field was denoted by $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$. It was shown in Corollary 4.4.16 that $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=\underset{Z}{\lim } \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$, where $\mathscr{M}$ denotes the sheaf of meromorphic functions on $C$, and the direct limit is taken with respect to connected affinoid neighborhoods of $x$ in $S$.
4.6.1. With respect to germs of meromorphic functions. We show here the relative analogue of Theorem 3.2.11.

Recall that $C_{x}$ denotes the fiber at $x$ of the relative proper curve $C \rightarrow S$, and it is a normal irreducible projective $\mathcal{H}(x)$-analytic curve.

Theorem 4.6.2. Let $H / F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ be a variety and $G / F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively over $H$. Then,

$$
H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow H\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, u}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } u \in C_{x} .
$$

Proof. $(\Rightarrow)$ : By Corollary 4.4.16, $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=\underset{\longrightarrow}{\lim _{Z}} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$, where the limit is taken over connected affinoid neighborhoods $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$. If $H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset$, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, such that $H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$. Seeing as $x \in \operatorname{Int}(Z)$, we obtain that for any $u \in C_{x}, u \in \operatorname{Int}\left(C_{Z}\right)$, so $\mathscr{M}_{C_{Z}, u}=\mathscr{M}_{C, u}$. Consequently, there is a restriction morphism $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}_{C, u}$ for any $u \in C_{x}$, implying $H\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, u}\right) \neq \emptyset$.
$(\Leftarrow)$ : Let us now assume $H\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, u}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $u \in C_{x}$. This implies that for any $u \in C_{x}$, there exists an open neighborhood $N_{u}^{\prime}$ of $u$ in $C$, such that $H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(N_{u}^{\prime}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$. Let $\mathcal{V}$ denote the open cover $\left(N_{u}^{\prime}\right)_{u \in C_{x}}$ of $C_{x}$ in $C$.

By Remark 4.5.13, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{G}$ of $x\left(Z_{G}\right.$ as in Notation 4.5.14), and a nice cover $\mathcal{D}_{x}$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{\mathbb{1 , a n}}$ such that they induce a refinement $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ of $\mathcal{V}$ obtained as in construction (1) and satisfying properties (2) and (4) of Subsection 4.5.1. Let $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ denote the corresponding nice cover of $C_{x}, T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$ its associated parity function, and
$S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$ the intersection points of the different elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$. As $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ refines $\mathcal{V}$, for any $U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$ and any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x, H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z^{\prime}}\right)\right) \neq \emptyset$.

For any $U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$, let us fix an element $U^{\prime} \in \mathcal{V}$ for which $U_{Z} \subseteq U^{\prime}$ for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{t} \cap Z_{G}$ of $x$ (it exists seeing as $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ refines $\mathcal{V}$, and for any $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z^{\prime \prime} \subseteq Z_{t}$ that are connected affinoid neighborhoods of $x, U_{Z^{\prime}}=U_{Z^{\prime \prime}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}$ ).
(a) Finding good neighborhoods of $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$. Let $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$. Let $U_{s}, V_{s}$ be the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ containing $s$. Then, $s \in U_{s} \cap V_{s} \subseteq U_{s}^{\prime} \cap V_{s}^{\prime}$. Let $N_{s} \subseteq U_{s}^{\prime} \cap V_{s}^{\prime}$ be a neighborhood of $s$ in $C_{Z_{0}}$ such that $N_{s} \cap S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}=\{s\}$ (this is possible considering Lemma 4.4.9).

Let us fix a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{t} \cap Z_{G}$ of $x$. Remark that for any $y \in S_{\mathcal{D}_{x}}, \bigsqcup_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} N_{s}$ is an open neighborhood of $f_{x}^{-1}(y)$ in $C_{Z_{0}}$, hence in $C_{Z}$. By [25, Lemma I.1.2], there exists a connected neighborhood $A_{y}$ of $y$ in $\mathbb{P}_{Z}^{1, a n}$, such that $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(A_{y}\right) \subseteq \bigsqcup_{s \in f_{Z}^{-1}(y)} N_{s}$. By Lemma 4.1.19 (and restricting to a smaller $Z$ if necessary), we may assume that $A_{y}$ is the $Z$-thickening $A_{Z}$ of a connected affinoid domain $A$ of $\mathbb{P}_{\mathcal{H}(x)}^{1, \text { an }}$ containing only type 3 points in its boundary. By Corollary 4.1.24, we may assume that for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$, the $Z^{\prime}$-thickening $A_{Z^{\prime}}$ of $A$ is connected.

Let $B_{i, Z}, i=1,2, \ldots, m$, be the connected components of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(A_{Z}\right)$. By Lemma 4.5.3, for any $i, B_{i, Z} \cap C_{x} \neq \emptyset$ and $f_{Z}\left(B_{i, Z}\right)=A_{Z}$, implying $B_{i, Z} \cap f_{x}^{-1}(y) \neq \emptyset$ for all $i$. By Proposition 4.5.6, we may assume that $B_{i, Z} \cap C_{x}$ is connected for all $i$, and for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$, the connected components of $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(A_{Z^{\prime}}\right)$ are $B_{i, Z^{\prime}}=B_{i, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$.

Seeing as $\bigsqcup_{i=1}^{n} B_{i, Z} \subseteq \bigsqcup_{s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)} N_{s}$, for any $i$, there exists exactly one $s_{i} \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)$ such that $B_{i, Z} \subseteq N_{s_{i}}$, which implies that $B_{i, Z} \cap f_{x}^{-1}(y)=\left\{s_{i}\right\}$. As $f_{x}^{-1}(y) \subseteq \bigsqcup_{i=1}^{n} B_{i, Z}$ and $B_{i, Z} \cap f_{x}^{-1}(y) \neq \emptyset$, there exists a bijective correspondence between the points of $f_{x}^{-1}(y)$ and the connected components of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(A_{Z}\right)$. For $s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)$, let $B_{s, Z}$ be the corresponding connected component of $f_{Z}^{-1}\left(A_{Z}\right)$ containing $s$, so that $B_{s, Z} \subseteq N_{s}$. Since the connected components of $f_{Z^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(A_{Z^{\prime}}\right)$ are $B_{s, Z} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}, s \in f_{x}^{-1}(y)$, the same remains true when replacing $Z$ by $Z^{\prime}$.
(b) The transitivity of the action. For $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, we denote by $U_{s}, V_{s}$ be the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ containing $s$, and suppose $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}\left(U_{s}\right)=0$. Then, $s \in B_{s, Z} \subseteq U_{s}^{\prime} \cap V_{s}^{\prime}$, with $B_{s, Z}$ constructed as in part (a). Let $h_{U_{s}} \in H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{s}^{\prime}\right)\right)$ and $h_{V_{s}} \in H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(V_{s}^{\prime}\right)\right)$. The restrictions of $h_{U_{s}}, h_{V_{s}}$ (which we keep denoting by $\left.h_{U_{s}}, h_{V_{s}}\right)$ to $\mathscr{M}\left(B_{s, Z}\right)$ induce elements of $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(B_{s, Z}\right)\right)$, and the same remains true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$.

Lemma 4.6.3. There exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{s} \subseteq Z$ of $x$ such that there exists $g_{s} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(B_{s, Z_{s}}\right)\right)$ satisfying $h_{U_{s}}=g_{s} \cdot h_{V_{s}}$ in $H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(B_{s, Z_{s}}\right)\right)$. For any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{s}$ of $x, h_{U_{s}}=g_{s} \cdot h_{V_{s}}$ in $H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(B_{s, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$.

Proof. Set $L=\lim _{Z} \mathscr{M}\left(B_{s, Z}\right)$, where the limit is taken with respect to the connected affinoid neighborhoods $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$. As shown in Proposition 4.5.6, we may assume that $B_{s, Z}$ is connected for all such $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$, so that $\mathscr{M}\left(B_{s, Z}\right)$ are fields. Consequently, $L$ is a field. The restriction morphisms $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}\left(B_{s, Z}\right)$ induce an embedding $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=\underset{\longrightarrow}{\lim _{Z}} \boldsymbol{M}\left(C_{Z}\right) \hookrightarrow L$. Hence, $G(L)$ acts transitively on $H(L)$.

As $h_{U_{s}}, h_{V_{s}} \in H(L)$, there exists $g \in G(L)$, for which $h_{U_{s}}=g_{s} \cdot h_{V_{s}}$ in $H(L)$. Consequently, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{s}$ of $x$, such that $g_{s} \in$
$G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(B_{s, Z_{s}}\right)\right)$ and $h_{U_{s}}=g_{s} \cdot h_{V_{s}}$ in $H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(B_{s, Z_{s}}\right)\right)$. The same remains true for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{s}$ of $x$ seeing as $B_{s, Z^{\prime}}=B_{s, Z_{s}} \cap C_{Z^{\prime}}$.

By Lemma 4.5.16, there exists a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{1} \subseteq Z$ of $x$, such that for any $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, if $W_{s, Z_{1}}$ is the connected component of $U_{s, Z_{1}} \cap V_{s, Z_{1}}$ containing $s$, then $W_{s, Z_{1}} \subseteq B_{s, Z}$, so $W_{s, Z_{1}} \subseteq B_{s, Z} \cap C_{Z_{1}}=B_{s, Z_{1}}$. Similarly, for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{1}, W_{s, Z^{\prime}} \subseteq B_{s, Z^{\prime}}$. Consequently, for any $s \in S_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}$, the equality $h_{U_{s}}=g_{s} \cdot h_{V_{s}}$ of Lemma 4.6.3 is well defined in $H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$ for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq \bigcap_{s \in S_{u_{x}}} Z_{s} \cap Z_{1}$ of $x$.
(c) The patching. Let us fix a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{t} \cap Z_{G}$ of $x$, where $Z_{t}$ is as in Remark 4.5.13, and $Z_{G}$ as in Notation 4.5.14. Then, $\mathcal{U}_{Z}$ is a cover of $C_{Z}$, so $\left\{U^{\prime} \in \mathcal{V}: U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}\right\}$ is an open cover of $C_{Z}$ in $C$. For any $U^{\prime} \in \mathcal{V}$, let us fix an element $h_{U} \in H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U^{\prime}\right)\right)$. This gives rise to an element of $H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z^{\prime}}\right)\right)$ for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z$ of $x$, which we will keep denoting by $h_{U}$.

By part (b), there exists $\left(g_{s}\right)_{s \in \mathcal{U}_{x}} \in \prod_{s \in S_{U_{x}}} G\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, s}\right)$ and a connected affinoid neighborhood $Z_{2} \subseteq Z$ of $x$, such that for any $s \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$, if $U_{s}, V_{s}$ are the elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$ containing $s$, and $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}\left(U_{s}\right)=0$, then $g_{s} \in G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z_{2}}\right)\right)$, and $h_{U_{s}}=g_{s} \cdot h_{V_{s}}$ in $H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z_{2}}\right)\right)$, where $W_{s, Z_{2}}$ is the connected component of $U_{s, Z_{2}} \cap V_{s, Z_{2}}$ containing $s$. Moreover, the same remains true when replacing $Z_{2}$ by any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{2}$ of $x$.

By Theorem 4.5.15, we may assume that $Z_{2}$ is such that there exists an element $\left(g_{U}\right)_{U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}}$ of $\prod_{U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}} G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z_{2}}\right)\right)$, such that for any non-disjoint $U, V \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$ with $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}(U)=0$, and any $s \in U \cap V, g_{s}=g_{U} \cdot g_{V}^{-1}$ in $G\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z_{2}}\right)\right)$, where $W_{s, Z_{2}}$ is the connected component of $U_{s, Z_{2}} \cap V_{s, Z_{2}}$ containing $s$. Moreover, the same remains true when replacing $Z_{2}$ with any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z_{2}$ of $x$.

For any $U \in \mathcal{U}_{x}$, set $h_{U}^{\prime}=g_{U}^{-1} \cdot h_{U} \in H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z_{2}}\right)\right)$. If $U, V$ are two non-disjoint elements of $\mathcal{U}_{x}$, and $T_{\mathcal{U}_{x}}(U)=0$, for any $s \in U \cap V$, one obtains $h_{V}^{\prime}=g_{V}^{-1} h_{V}=g_{U}^{-1}\left(g_{U} g_{V}^{-1}\right) h_{V}=$ $g_{U}^{-1} g_{s} h_{V}=g_{U}^{-1} h_{U}=h_{U}^{\prime}$ in $H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(W_{s, Z_{2}}\right)\right)$, where $W_{s, Z_{2}}$ is the connected component of $U_{Z_{2}} \cap V_{Z_{2}}$ containing $s$. Thus, $h_{U \mid U_{Z_{2}} \cap V_{Z_{2}}}^{\prime}=h_{V \mid U_{Z_{2}} \cap V_{Z_{2}}}^{\prime}$ in $H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z_{2}} \cap V_{Z_{2}}\right)\right)$.

To summarize, we have an affinoid cover $\mathcal{U}_{Z_{2}}$ of $C_{Z_{2}}$, and for any $U_{Z_{2}} \in \mathcal{U}_{Z_{2}}$, an element $h_{U}^{\prime} \in H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(U_{Z_{2}}\right)\right)$. Moreover, for any $U_{Z_{2}}, V_{Z_{2}} \in \mathcal{U}_{Z_{2}}, h_{U \mid U_{Z_{2}} \cap V_{Z_{2}}}^{\prime}=h_{V \mid U_{Z_{2}} \cap V_{Z_{2}}}^{\prime}$. Consequently, there exists $h \in H\left(\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z_{2}}\right)\right)$ such that $h_{\mid U_{Z_{2}}}=h_{U}^{\prime}$ for any $U_{Z_{2}} \in \mathcal{U}_{Z_{2}}$. Seeing as there is an embedding $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z_{2}}\right) \hookrightarrow F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$, we obtain that $H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset$.
4.6.2. With respect to valuations. Recall the notations mentioned at the beginning of this Section.

Since $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field, there is an embedding $\mathcal{O}_{x} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}(x)$, and it induces a valuation on $\mathcal{O}_{x}$. We will say that this is the valuation induced by $x$ on $\mathcal{O}_{x}$.

Definition 4.6.4. We denote by $V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$ the set of non-trivial rank one valuations $v$ on $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$, such that either $v_{\mid \mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is the valuation induced by $x$ on $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ or $v_{\mid \mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is trivial. Set $V^{\prime}\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)=\left\{v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right): v_{\mid \mathcal{O}_{x}}\right.$ is the norm induced by $x$ on $\left.\mathcal{O}_{x}\right\}$. For any $v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$, we denote by $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}$ the completion of $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ with respect to $v$.

Remark 4.6.5. For any non-rigid point $y \in C_{x}, \mathcal{O}_{C_{x}, y}$ is a field, so by Lemma 4.4.8, $\mathcal{O}_{C, y}$ is a field, and there is an embedding $\mathcal{O}_{C, y}=\mathscr{M}_{C, y} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}(y)$. We endow $\mathscr{M}_{C, y}$ with the valuation induced from $\mathcal{H}(y)$.

For any rigid point $y \in C_{x}, \mathcal{O}_{C_{x}, y}$ is a dvr, so by Lemma 4.4.8, $\mathcal{O}_{C, y}$ is a dvr. We endow $\mathscr{M}_{C, y}$ with the corresponding discrete valuation.

Proposition 4.6.6. There exists a surjective map val : $C_{x} \rightarrow V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right), y \mapsto v_{y}$, such that: if $y \in C_{x}$ is not rigid, then $v_{y \mid \mathcal{O}_{x}}$ induces the norm determined by $x$ on $\mathcal{O}_{x}$, and $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v_{y}}=\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C, y}} ;$ if $y \in C_{x}$ is rigid, then $v_{y}$ is discrete, $v_{y \mid \mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is trivial, and $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v_{y}} \hookrightarrow \widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C, y}}$.

Let $C_{x, \text { nrig }}$ denote the set of non-rigid points on $C_{x}$. The restriction $\operatorname{val}_{\mid C_{x, \text { nrig }}}: C_{x, \text { nrig }} \rightarrow V^{\prime}\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$ is a bijection.
Proof. The construction of the map val: Let $y \in C_{x}$ be a non-rigid point. Then, $\mathcal{O}_{C_{x}, y}$ is a field, and so is $\mathcal{O}_{C, y}$. Consequently, $\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C, y}}=\mathcal{H}(y)$, so for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z$ of $x, \widehat{\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)}=\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C, y}}$, where the completion of $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$ is taken with respect to the norm induced by the embedding $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{H}(y)$. Considering $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=$ ${\underset{Z}{\lim }}_{Z} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}_{C, y}$, and as $\widehat{\mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)}=\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C, y}}$ for any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, we obtain that $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v_{y}}=\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C, y}}$. The fact that $v_{y \mid \mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is the norm determined by $x$ on $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a direct consequence of the fact that $y \in C_{x}$.

Let $y \in C_{x}$ be a rigid point. Then, $\mathcal{O}_{C_{x}, y}$ is a discrete valuation ring, and by Lemma 4.4.8, so is $\mathcal{O}_{C, y}$. As $\pi(y)=x$, this induces a morphism of local rings $\mathcal{O}_{x} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{C, y}$. Furthermore, since $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field, $\mathcal{O}_{x} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}_{C, y}^{\times}$. As seen above, there is an embedding $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}_{C, y}$. Let us endow $\mathscr{M}_{C, y}$ with the discrete valuation arising from the dvr $\mathcal{O}_{C, y}$. This induces a discrete valuation $v_{y}$ in $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$. That $v_{y \mid \mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is trivial is immediate from the embedding $\mathcal{O}_{x} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}_{C, y}^{\times}$. Clearly, this gives rise to an embedding $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v_{y}} \hookrightarrow \widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C, y}}$.

The map $\operatorname{val}_{\mid C_{x, \text { nrig }}}$ : It remains to show that the restriction val $\left.\right|_{C_{x, \text { nrig }}}: C_{x, \text { nrig }} \rightarrow V^{\prime}\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$ is bijective. Let $v \in V^{\prime}\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$. Then, since $\mathcal{O}_{x} \hookrightarrow F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$, there is an embedding $\mathcal{H}(x) \hookrightarrow F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}$. This implies that there is a morphism $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \mathcal{H}(x) \rightarrow F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}$. Let $C_{x}^{\text {alg }}$ denote the normal irreducible projective algebraic curve over $\mathcal{H}(x)$ whose Berkovich analytification is $C_{x}$. Its function field is $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{x}\right)$ by [6, Proposition 3.6.2].

Let $x^{\prime}$ denote the image of $x$ via the morphism $Z_{0} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$, where $Z_{0}$ is as in Setting 4.4.1. Using Notation 4.4.4, by Corollary 1.6.17, $C_{x}=\left(C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right), \kappa\left(x^{\prime}\right)} \times_{\kappa\left(x^{\prime}\right)} \mathcal{H}(x)\right)^{\text {an }}$, so $C_{x}^{\text {alg }}=C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right), \kappa\left(x^{\prime}\right)} \times_{\kappa\left(x^{\prime}\right)} \mathcal{H}(x)$. Seeing as $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field, we have an embedding $\kappa\left(x^{\prime}\right) \hookrightarrow$ $\mathcal{O}_{x}$, so $C_{x}^{\mathrm{alg}}=C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \times \mathcal{O}_{x} \mathcal{H}(x)$. This means that its function field is $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{x}\right)=F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \mathcal{H}(x)$.

Consequently, there are embeddings $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}} \hookrightarrow \mathscr{M}\left(C_{x}\right) \hookrightarrow F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}$, implying $\widehat{\mathscr{M}\left(C_{x}\right)^{v}}=$ $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}$, where $\widetilde{\mathscr{M}\left(C_{x}\right)^{v}}$ is the completion of $\mathscr{M}\left(C_{x}\right)$ with respect to $v$. By Proposition 3.2.14, there exists a unique (implying both injectivity and surjectivity of val $\left.\right|_{C_{x, \text { nrig }}}$ ) non-rigid point $y \in C_{x}$ such that $\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C, y}}=\mathcal{H}(y)=\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C_{x}, y}}=F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}$. Clearly, $v=\operatorname{val}(y)$.

Corollary 4.6.7. With the notation of Theorem 4.6.2, if char $k=0$ or $H$ is smooth, then:

$$
H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)
$$

Proof. $(\Rightarrow)$ : Seeing as $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ embeds in $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}$ for all $v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$, this direction is immediate.
$(\Leftarrow):$ We remark that $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ is perfect if and only if char $k=0$. Suppose $H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$. By Proposition 4.6.6, for any $y \in C_{x}$, there exists $v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$, such
that $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v} \subseteq \widehat{\mathbb{M}_{C, y}}$. Hence, $H\left(\widehat{\mathscr{M}_{C, y}}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $y \in C_{x}$. If $y$ is a non-rigid point of $C_{x}$, then $\mathcal{O}_{C, y}=\mathscr{M}_{C, y}$ is a Henselian field by [4, Theorem 2.3.3]. If $y$ is rigid point, then $\mathcal{O}_{C, y}$ is a dvr that is Henselian, so by [4, Proposition 2.4.3], $\mathscr{M}_{C, y}=\operatorname{Frac} \mathcal{O}_{C, y}$ is Henselian. By Lemma 3.2.16, $H\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, y}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $y \in C_{x}$. Finally, by Theorem 4.6.2, this implies that $H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset$.
4.6.3. Summary of results. Recall that $(k,|\cdot|)$ denotes a complete non-trivially valued ultrametric field. As usual, we denote by $\mathscr{M}$ the sheaf of meromorphic functions.

Let us summarize the main results we have shown:
Theorem 4.6.8. Let $S, C$ be good $k$-analytic spaces such that $S$ is normal. Suppose $\operatorname{dim} S<\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$. Suppose there exists a surjective morphism $\pi: C \rightarrow S$ that makes $C$ a proper flat relative analytic curve. Let $x \in S$ be such that $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field. Set $C_{x}=\pi^{-1}(x)$.

Assume there exists a connected affinoid neighboorhood $Z_{0}$ of $x$ such that all the fibers of $\pi$ on $Z_{0}$ are normal irreducible projective analytic curves. Suppose that $C_{Z_{0}}:=\pi^{-1}\left(Z_{0}\right)$ is normal, and $C_{Z_{0}} \rightarrow Z_{0}$ is algebraic, i.e. the analytification of an algebraic morphism $C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \rightarrow \operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)$. Set $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=C_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \times{ }_{\mathcal{O}\left(Z_{0}\right)} \mathcal{O}_{x}$. Let $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ be the function field of $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$.

For any connected affinoid neighborhood $Z \subseteq Z_{0}$ of $x$, let us denote by $C_{Z}$ the analytic space $C \times_{S} Z$. Then, $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}=\underset{\longrightarrow}{\lim _{Z}} \mathscr{M}\left(C_{Z}\right)$.

Let $G / F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ be a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on a variety $H / F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$. The following local-global principles hold:

- $H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow H\left(\mathscr{M}_{C, u}\right) \neq \emptyset$ for all $u \in C_{x}$;
- if char $k=0$ or $H$ is smooth,

$$
H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)
$$

where $V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$ is given as in Definition 4.6.4.
The theorem above tells us that there is a local-global principle in the neighborhood of certain fibers of relative proper analytic curves. More generally, we have shown that patching is possible in the neighborhood of said fibers. Note that the statement of Theorem 4.6.8 is a local-global principle over the germs of meromorphic functions of a fixed fiber.

Considering Subsection 4.4.1 which provides an example of Setting 4.4.1, we also obtain the following theorem, which is a generalization of Corollary 3.2.18.

THEOREM 4.6.9. Let $S$ be a good normal $k$-analytic space such that $\operatorname{dim} S<\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$. Let $x \in S$ be such that $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field. Let $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ be a smooth geometrically irreducible projective algebraic curve over $\mathcal{O}_{x}$. Let $F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ denote the function field of $C_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$.

Let $G / F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$ be a connected rational linear algebraic group acting strongly transitively on a variety $H / F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}$. Then, if char $k=0$ or $H$ is smooth:

$$
H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right) \neq \emptyset \Longleftrightarrow H\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}, v}\right) \neq \emptyset \text { for all } v \in V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)
$$

where $V\left(F_{\mathcal{O}_{x}}\right)$ is given as in Definition 4.6.4.
REmARK 4.6.10. Just as in Chapter 3, if char $k \neq 2$, the two theorems above can be applied to quadratic forms.

### 4.7. Examples of fields $\mathcal{O}_{x}$

To illustrate on which types of fields our local-global principles of this chapter can be applied, we calculate a few examples of local rings $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ that are fields. To do this, the key is to find a "good" basis of neighborhoods of the point $x$.

We denote by $(k,|\cdot|)$ a complete ultrametric field such that $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}_{>0} /\left|k^{\times}\right| \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}=\infty$ (this condition is sufficient to guarantee the existence of type 3 points on the fiber of $x$ ). In all of the following examples, $x$ is chosen such that $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is a field.

Example 1. Suppose $S=\mathcal{M}(k)$, where $\mathcal{M}(\cdot)$ denotes the Berkovich spectrum. Then, if $S=\{x\}$, we obtain that $\mathcal{O}_{x}=k$, so a special case of Theorem 4.6.2 is Theorem 3.2.10.

Example 2. Let $\eta_{T, r} \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ be a type 3 point, meaning $r \notin \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$. We can deduce from [20, 3.4.19.3], that the family of sets $L_{r_{1}, r_{2}}:=\left\{y \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}: r_{1} \leqslant|T|_{y} \leqslant\right.$ $\left.r_{2}\right\}, 0<r_{1}<r<r_{2}$, forms a basis of neighborhoods of $\eta_{T, r}$ in $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. Considering $\mathcal{O}\left(L_{r_{1}, r_{2}}\right)=$ $\left\{\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n} T^{n}: a_{n} \in k, \lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{n}\right| r_{2}^{n}=0, \lim _{n \rightarrow-\infty}\left|a_{n}\right| r_{1}^{n}=0\right\}$, we obtain that
$\mathcal{O}_{x}=\left\{\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n} T^{n}: a_{n} \in k, \exists r_{1}, r_{2} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}\right.$, s.t. $\left.r_{1}<r<r_{2}, \lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{n}\right| r_{2}^{n}=0, \lim _{n \rightarrow-\infty}\left|a_{n}\right| r_{1}^{n}=0\right\}$
The norm that $x$ induces on $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is the following: $\left|\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{n} T^{n}\right|_{x}=\max _{n \in \mathbb{Z}}\left|a_{n}\right| r^{n}$.
Notation 4.7.1. For $\alpha \in k$ and $r \in \mathbb{R} \geqslant 0$, let us denote by $B_{k}(\alpha, r)$ the closed disc in $k$ centered at $a$ and of radius $r$. Also, for $P \in k[T]$ irreducible, we denote $\mathbb{D}_{k}(P, r):=$ $\left\{y \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1 \text {,an }}:|P|_{y} \leqslant r\right\}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\mathbb{D}_{k}^{\circ}(P, r):=\left\{y \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}:|P|_{y}<r\right\}\right)$ the closed (resp. open) virtual disc centered at $\eta_{P, 0}$ and of radius $r$. In particular, if there exists $\alpha \in k$ such that $P(T)=T-\alpha$, we will simply write $\mathbb{D}_{k}(\alpha, r)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\mathbb{D}_{k}^{\circ}(\alpha, r)\right)$. When there is no risk of ambiguity, we will forget the index $k$.

Example 3. Suppose $k$ is algebraically closed. Let $x=\eta_{T-\alpha, r} \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ be a type 2 point, meaning $r \in\left|k^{\times}\right|$. By [20,3.4.19.2] that $x$ has a basis of neighborhoods of the form $A_{R, \alpha_{i}, r_{i}, I}:=\mathbb{D}(\alpha, R) \backslash \bigsqcup_{i \in I} \mathbb{D}^{\circ}\left(\alpha_{i}, r_{i}\right)$, where $I$ is a finite set, $0<r_{i}<r$ for all $i \in I, R>r$, $\alpha_{i} \in B(\alpha, r)$, and for any $i, j \in I, i \neq j$, we have $\left|\alpha_{i}-\alpha_{j}\right|=r$. The subset $A_{R, \alpha_{i}, r_{i}, I}$ is an affinoid domain in $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. By [24, Proposition 2.2.6],

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{O}\left(A_{R, \alpha_{i}, r_{i}, I}\right)= & \left\{\sum_{n>0} \sum_{i \in I} \frac{a_{n, i}}{\left(T-\alpha_{i}\right)^{n}}+\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n}(T-\alpha)^{n}:\right. \\
& \left.a_{n, i}, a_{n} \in k, \lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{n, i}\right| r_{i}^{-n}=0, i \in I, \lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{n}\right| R^{n}=0\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Consequently, $f \in \mathcal{O}_{x}$ if and only if there exist a finite set $I \subseteq \mathbb{N}$, positive real numbers $R, r_{i}, i \in I$, such that $r_{i}<r<R$, and elements $\alpha_{i} \in B(\alpha, r)$, such that $\left|\alpha_{i}-\alpha_{j}\right|=r$ for any $i, j \in I, i \neq j$, satisfying $f \in \mathcal{O}\left(A_{R, \alpha_{i}, r_{i}, I}\right)$. The norm induced by $x$ is

$$
\left|\sum_{n>0} \sum_{i \in I} \frac{a_{n, i}}{\left(T-\alpha_{i}\right)^{n}}+\sum_{n \geqslant 0} a_{n}(T-\alpha)^{n}\right|_{x}=\max _{n>0, i \in I}\left(\left|a_{0}\right|,\left|a_{n, i}\right| r^{-n},\left|a_{n}\right| r^{n}\right)
$$

Example 4. Suppose $k$ is algebraically closed. Let $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, a n}$ be a type 4 point, meaning it is determined by a strictly decreasing family of closed discs $\mathscr{D}:=\left(B\left(a_{i}, r_{i}\right)\right)_{i \in \mathbb{N}}$ in $k$ such that $\bigcap_{i \in \mathbb{N}} B\left(a_{i}, r_{i}\right)=\emptyset$. Then, for any $Q(T) \in k[T],|Q|_{x}=\inf _{i}|Q|_{\eta_{a_{i}, r_{i}}}$. Let us remark that for any $i \in \mathbb{N}, x \in \mathbb{D}\left(a_{i}, r_{i}\right)$. Moreover, $x \in \mathbb{D}^{\circ}\left(a_{i}, r_{i}\right)$. To see the last part, assume, by contradiction, that there exists $j \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $\left|T-a_{j}\right|_{x}=r_{j}$. Then, for any $i>j, \max \left(\left|a_{i}-a_{j}\right|, r_{i}\right)=\left|T-a_{j}\right|_{\eta_{a_{i}, r_{i}}} \geqslant r_{j}$, which is impossible seeing as $\mathscr{D}$ is strictly decreasing.

By [20, 3.4.19.1], the elements of $\left.\mathscr{D}^{\prime}:=\left(\mathbb{D}\left(a_{i}, r\right) i\right)\right)_{i \in \mathbb{N}}$ form a basis of neighborhoods of $x$. Finally, for any $f \in \mathcal{O}_{x}$, there exists $i^{\prime} \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $f \in \mathcal{O}\left(\mathbb{D}\left(a_{i^{\prime}}, r_{i^{\prime}}\right)\right)$, meaning $f=\sum_{n \in \mathbb{N}} b_{n}\left(T-a_{i^{\prime}}\right)^{n}$, where $b_{n} \in k$ for all $n$, and $\lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|b_{n}\right| r_{i^{\prime}}^{n}=0$. Then, for any $i \geqslant i^{\prime}, f \in \mathcal{O}\left(\mathbb{D}\left(a_{i}, r_{i}\right)\right)$. Finally, the norm induced by $x$ is $|f|_{x}=\inf _{i \geqslant i^{\prime}}|f|_{\eta_{a_{i}, r_{i}}}$.

Example 5. Let us fix an algebraic closure $\bar{k}$ of $k$. Let $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ be a non-rigid type 1 point. This means that there exists an element $\alpha \in \widehat{\bar{k}} \backslash \bar{k}$, such that the image of $\eta_{\alpha, 0}$ with respect to the open surjective morphism $\varphi: \mathbb{A}_{\overline{\bar{k}}}^{1, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ is $x$. There exists a sequence $\left(\alpha_{i}\right)_{i \in \mathbb{N}}$ in $\bar{k}$ such that $\lim _{i \rightarrow+\infty} \alpha_{i}=\alpha$. Set $r_{i}=\left|\alpha-\alpha_{i}\right|$. Then, in $\widehat{\bar{k}}$, the point $\eta_{\alpha, 0}$ is determined by the strictly decreasing family of closed discs $\left(B_{\overline{\bar{k}}}\left(\alpha_{i}, r_{i}\right)\right)_{i \in \mathbb{N}}$, meaning for any $Q \in \widehat{\bar{k}}[T],|Q|_{\eta_{\alpha, 0}}=\inf _{i}|Q|_{\eta_{\alpha_{i}, r_{i}}}$. As in Example 4, by [20, 3.4.19.1], the family $\left(\mathbb{D}_{\widehat{\bar{k}}}\left(\alpha_{i}, r_{i}\right)\right)_{i \in \mathbb{N}}$ forms a family of neighborhoods of $\eta_{\alpha, 0}$ in $\mathbb{A}_{\overline{\bar{k}}}^{1, \text { an }}$.

Seeing as $\varphi$ is an open morphism, $\left(\varphi\left(\mathbb{D}_{\overline{\bar{k}}}\left(\alpha_{i}, r_{i}\right)\right)\right)_{i \in \mathbb{N}}$ forms a basis of neighborhoods of the point $x$ in $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$. For any $i$, let $P_{i} \in \mathbb{Q}_{p}[T]$ denote the minimal polynomial of $\alpha_{i}$ over $k$. Then, $\varphi\left(\mathbb{D}_{\widehat{\bar{k}}}\left(\alpha_{i}, r_{i}\right)\right)=\mathbb{D}_{k}\left(P_{i}, s_{i}\right)$, where $s_{i}=\prod_{P_{i}(\beta)=0} \max \left(\left|\alpha_{i}-\beta\right|, r_{i}\right)$ (Lemma 1.8.22).

Finally, for any $f \in \mathcal{O}_{x}$, there exists $i_{f} \in \mathbb{N}$, such that $f \in \mathcal{O}\left(\mathbb{D}_{k}\left(P_{i_{f}}, s_{i_{f}}\right)\right)$. As seen in Lemma 4.2.8, $\mathcal{O}\left(\mathbb{D}_{k}\left(P_{i_{f}}, s_{i_{f}}\right)\right)$ is isomorphic to $\mathcal{O}\left(\mathbb{D}_{k}\left(0, s_{i_{f}}\right)\right)[S] /\left(P_{i_{f}}(S)-T\right)$, where $\mathcal{O}\left(\mathbb{D}_{k}\left(0, s_{i_{f}}\right)\right)=\left\{\sum_{n \in \mathbb{N}} b_{n} T^{n}: b_{n} \in k, \lim _{n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|b_{n}\right| s_{i_{f}}^{n}=0\right\}$.

Remark that for any $i \geqslant i_{f}, f \in \mathcal{O}\left(\mathbb{D}_{k}\left(P_{i}, s_{i}\right)\right)$. The norm induced by $x$ on $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is given as follows: $|f|_{x}=\inf _{i \geqslant i_{f}}|f|_{\eta_{P_{i}}, s_{i}}$.

Example 6. Let $S, T$ denote the coordinates of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{2, \text { an }}$, and $\varphi: \mathbb{A}_{k}^{2, \text { an }} \rightarrow \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ the projection to $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}$ with coordinate $T$. Let $s, t \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$ be such that $t \notin \sqrt{\left|k^{\times}\right|}$and $s \notin$ $\sqrt{\left|\mathcal{H}\left(\eta_{T, t}\right)^{\times}\right|}$. Let $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{2, \text { an }}$ denote a point such that $|T|_{x}=t,|S|_{x}=s$. Then, $x \in$ $\varphi^{-1}\left(\eta_{T, t}\right)$, and considering the condition on $s, x$ is a type 3 point on the fiber of $\eta_{T, t}$. In particular, $x$ is the only point of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{2, \text { an }}$ that satisfies $|T|_{x}=t,|S|_{x}=s$.

By Lemma 4.1.19 and Example 2, a basis of neighborhoods of $x$ is given by $\left\{y \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{1, \text { an }}\right.$ : $\left.t_{1} \leqslant|T|_{y} \leqslant t_{2}, s_{1} \leqslant|S|_{y} \leqslant s_{2}\right\}$, where $0<t_{1}<t<t_{2}, 0<s_{1}<s<s_{2}$. Consequently,

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathcal{O}_{x}=\left\{\sum_{m, n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{m, n} T^{m} S^{n}: a_{m, n} \in k, \exists t_{1}, t_{2}, s_{1}, s_{2} \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}, \text { s.t. } t_{1}<t<t_{2}, s_{1}<s<s_{2},\right. \\
\left.\lim _{m+n \rightarrow+\infty}\left|a_{m, n}\right| t_{2}^{m} s_{2}^{n}=0, \lim _{m+n \rightarrow-\infty}\left|a_{m, n}\right| t_{1}^{m} s_{1}^{n}=0\right\} .
\end{gathered}
$$

The norm on $\mathcal{O}_{x}$ is given by: $\left|\sum_{m, n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{m, n} T^{m} S^{n}\right|_{x}=\max _{m, n \in \mathbb{Z}}\left|a_{m, n}\right| t^{m} s^{n}$.
By iterating the above, we can calculate the local ring of any point $x \in \mathbb{A}_{k}^{l, \text { an }}, l \in \mathbb{N}$, satisfying similar properties.

## Bibliography

[1] M. Artin. Algebraic approximation of structures over complete local rings. Inst. Hautes Études Sci. Publ. Math., (36):23-58.
[2] M. Baker, S. Payne, and J. Rabinoff. Nonarchimedean geometry, tropicalization, and metrics on curves. Algebr. Geom., 3(1):63-105, 2016.
[3] V. Berkovich. Part of course notes, Affinoid Algebras. http://www.math.huji.ac.il/~temkin/teach/ math738/Affinoid_algebras.pdf.
[4] V. G. Berkovich. Étale cohomology for non-Archimedean analytic spaces. Inst. Hautes Études Sci. Publ. Math., (78):5-161 (1994).
[5] V. G. Berkovich. Smooth p-adic analytic spaces are locally contractible. Invent. Math., 137(1):1-84.
[6] V. G. Berkovich. Spectral theory and analytic geometry over non-Archimedean fields, volume 33 of Mathematical Surveys and Monographs. American Mathematical Society, Providence, RI.
[7] V. G. Berkovich. Vanishing cycles for formal schemes. Invent. Math., 115(3):539-571.
[8] V. G. Berkovich. Vanishing cycles for formal schemes. ii. Invent. Math., 125(2):367-390.
[9] M. Borovoi. The Brauer-Manin obstructions for homogeneous spaces with connected or abelian stabilizer. J. Reine Angew. Math., 473:181-194, 1996.
[10] S. Bosch. Eine bemerkenswerte Eigenschaft der formellen Fasern affinoider Räume. Math. Ann., 229(1):25-45.
[11] S. Bosch, U. Güntzer, and R. Remmert. Non-Archimedean analysis, volume 261 of Grundlehren der Mathematischen Wissenschaften [Fundamental Principles of Mathematical Sciences]. Springer-Verlag, Berlin. A systematic approach to rigid analytic geometry.
[12] W. Bosch, S.and Lütkebohmert and M. Raynaud. Néron models, volume 21 of Ergebnisse der Mathematik und ihrer Grenzgebiete (3) [Results in Mathematics and Related Areas (3)]. Springer-Verlag, Berlin.
[13] N. Bourbaki. Éléments de mathématique. Algèbre commutative. Chapitre 10. Springer-Verlag, Berlin. Reprint of the 1998 original.
[14] N. Bourbaki. Éléments de Mathématique. Espaces vectoriels topologiques. Chapitres 1 à 5 . Hermann, Paris.
[15] N. Bourbaki. Éléments de mathématique. Fasc. XXX. Algèbre commutative. Chapitre 5: Entiers. Chapitre 6: Valuations. Actualités Scientifiques et Industrielles, No. 1308. Hermann, Paris.
[16] J.-L. Colliot-Thélène. The Hasse principle in a pencil of algebraic varieties. In Number theory (Tiruchirapalli, 1996), volume 210 of Contemp. Math., pages 19-39. Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 1998.
[17] J.-L. Colliot-Thélène, D. Harbater, J. Hartmann, D. Krashen, R. Parimala, and V. Suresh. LocalGlobal Principles for Zero-Cycles on Homogeneous Spaces over Arithmetic Function Fields. Transactions of the AMS, 372(8):5263-5286.
[18] A. Ducros. Families of Berkovich spaces. Astérisque, (400):vii+262.
[19] A. Ducros. Géométries analytique p-adique: la théorie de Berkovich. Gaz. Math., (111):12-27.
[20] A. Ducros. La structure des courbes analytiques. https://webusers.imj-prg.fr/~antoine.ducros/ trirss.pdf.
[21] A. Ducros. Les espaces de Berkovich sont excellents. Ann. Inst. Fourier (Grenoble), 59(4):1443-1552.
[22] A. Ducros. Variation de la dimension relative en géométrie analytique p-adique. Compositio math., 143:1511-1532.
[23] A. Ducros. Espaces analytiques p-adiques au sens de Berkovich. Number 311, pages Exp. No. 958, viii, 137-176. 2007. Séminaire Bourbaki. Vol. 2005/2006.
[24] J. Fresnel. Rigid analytic geometry and its applications, volume 218 of Progress in Mathematics. Birkhäuser Boston, Inc., Boston, MA.
[25] H. Grauert and R. Remmert. Theory of Stein spaces, volume 236 of Grundlehren der Mathematischen Wissenschaften [Fundamental Principles of Mathematical Sciences]. Springer-Verlag, Berlin-New York. Translated from the German by Alan Huckleberry.
[26] A. Grothendieck. Éléments de géométrie algébrique. iv. Étude locale des schémas et des morphismes de schémas. ii. Inst. Hautes Études Sci. Publ. Math., (24):231.
[27] A. Grothendieck. Éléments de géométrie algébrique. iv. Étude locale des schémas et des morphismes de schémas. iii. Inst. Hautes Études Sci. Publ. Math., (28):255.
[28] A. Grothendieck. Revêtements étales et groupe fondamental. Fasc. II: Exposés 6, 8 à 11, volume 1960/61 of Séminaire de Géométrie Algébrique. Institut des Hautes Études Scientifiques, Paris.
[29] L. Gruson. Théorie de Fredholm p-adique. Bull. Soc. Math. France, 94:67-95.
[30] D. Harbater. Galois coverings of the arithmetic line. pages 165-195.
[31] D. Harbater. Galois covers of an arithmetic surface. Amer. J. Math., 110(5):849-885.
[32] D. Harbater. Patching and Galois theory. pages 313-424.
[33] D. Harbater and J. Hartmann. Patching over fields. Israel J. Math., 176:61-107.
[34] D. Harbater, J. Hartmann, and D. Krashen. Applications of patching to quadratic forms and central simple algebras. Invent. Math., 178(2):231-263.
[35] D. Harbater, J. Hartmann, and D. Krashen. Local-global principles for torsors over arithmetic curves. Amer. J. Math., 137(6):1559-1612.
[36] D. Harbater, J. Hartmann, D. Krashen, R. Parimala, and V. Suresh. Local-global Galois theory of arithmetic function fields. Israel J. Math., 232(2):849-882.
[37] David Harbater. Patching in algebra. In Travaux mathématiques. Vol. XXIII, volume 23 of Trav. Math., pages 37-86. Fac. Sci. Technol. Commun. Univ. Luxemb., Luxembourg, 2013.
[38] E. Hrushovski and F. Loeser. Non-archimedean tame topology and stably dominated types, volume 192 of Annals of Mathematics Studies. Princeton University Press, Princeton, NJ.
[39] Colliot-Thélène J.-L., R. Parimala, and V. Suresh. Patching and local-global principles for homogeneous spaces over function fields of $p$-adic curves. Comment. Math. Helv., 87(4):1011-1033.
[40] M. Jarden. Algebraic patching. In Travaux mathématiques. Vol. XXIII, volume 23 of Trav. Math., pages 87-137. Fac. Sci. Technol. Commun. Univ. Luxemb., Luxembourg, 2013.
[41] M. Jonsson. Annotations to Berkovich's book. http://docplayer.net/ 33934280-Annotations-to-berkovich-s-book.html.
[42] M. Jonsson. Course notes, Topics in Algebraic Geometry I: Berkovich Spaces. http://www-personal. umich.edu/~takumim/Berkovich.pdf.
[43] S. L. Kleiman. Misconceptions about $k_{x}$. Enseign. Math. (2), 25(3-4):203-206 (1980).
[44] N. Koblitz. p-adic numbers, p-adic analysis, and zeta-functions, volume 58 of Graduate Texts in Mathematics. Springer-Verlag, New York, 2 edition.
[45] U. Köpf. Über eigentliche Familien algebraischer Varietäten über affinoiden Räumen. Schr. Math. Inst. Univ. Münster (2), (Heft 7):iv+72.
[46] T. Y. Lam. Introduction to quadratic forms over fields, volume 67 of Graduate Studies in Mathematics. American Mathematical Society, Providence, RI, 2005.
[47] D. B. Leep. The $u$-invariant of p-adic function fields. J. Reine Angew. Math., 679:65-73.
[48] Q. Liu. Algebraic geometry and arithmetic curves, volume 6 of Oxford Graduate Texts in Mathematics. Oxford University Press, Oxford. Translated from the French by Reinie Erné; Oxford Science Publications.
[49] Q. Liu. Algebraic geometry and arithmetic curves, volume 6 of Oxford Graduate Texts in Mathematics. Oxford University Press, Oxford. Translated from the French by Reinie Erné; Oxford Science Publications.
[50] Q. Liu. Tout groupe fini est un groupe de Galois sur $\mathbf{Q}_{p}(T)$, d'après Harbater. In Recent developments in the inverse Galois problem (Seattle, WA, 1993), volume 186 of Contemp. Math., pages 261-265. Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 1995.
[51] Y. I. Manin. Le groupe de Brauer-Grothendieck en géométrie diophantienne. In Actes du Congrès International des Mathématiciens (Nice, 1970), Tome 1, pages 401-411. 1971.
[52] D. Marker. Model theory, volume 217 of Graduate Texts in Mathematics. Springer-Verlag, New York. An introduction.
[53] F. Martin. Analytic functions on tubes of nonarchimedean analytic spaces. Algebra Number Theory, 11(3):657-683. With an appendix by Christian Kappen and Martin.
[54] V. Mehmeti. Patching over Berkovich Curves and Quadratic Forms. To appear in Compositio Math., 2019.
[55] J. S. Milne. On the arithmetic of abelian varieties. Invent. Math., 17:177-190.
[56] M. Mustata and J. Nicaise. Weight functions on non-Archimedean analytic spaces and the KontsevichSoibelman skeleton. Algebr. Geom., 2(3):365-404.
[57] nfdc23 (https://mathoverflow.net/users/81332/nfdc23). Application of the G.A.G.A. principle. MathOverflow. URL:https://mathoverflow.net/q/254580 (version: 2016-11-13).
[58] R. Parimala and V. Suresh. The $u$-invariant of the function fields of $p$-adic curves. Ann. of Math. (2), 172(2):1391-1405.
[59] J. Poineau. La droite de Berkovich sur Z. Astérisque, (334):viii+xii+284.
[60] J. Poineau. Les espaces de Berkovich sont angéliques. Bull. Soc. Math. France, 141(2):267-297.
[61] J. Poineau. Raccord sur les espaces de Berkovich. Algebra Number Theory, 4(3):297-334.
[62] The Stacks project authors. The stacks project. https://stacks.math.columbia.edu, 2019.
[63] J. Tate. Rigid analytic spaces. Invent. Math., 12:257-289, 1971.
[64] M. Temkin. Introduction to Berkovich analytic spaces. pages 3-66.
[65] M. Temkin. A new proof of the Gerritzen-Grauert theorem. Math. Ann., 333(2):261-269.
[66] M. Temkin. On local properties of non-Archimedean analytic spaces. ii. Israel J. Math., 140:1-27.
[67] M. Temkin. On local properties of non-Archimedean analytic spaces. ii. Israel J. Math., 140:1-27.
[68] A. Thuillier. Théorie du potentiel sur les courbes en géométrie analytique non archimédienne. Applications à la théorie d'Arakelov. Mathématiques.
[69] R. R. Vázquez. Non-Archimedean Normal Families. https://arxiv.org/pdf/1607.05976.pdf.
[70] S. Willard. General topology. Addison-Wesley Publishing Co., Reading, Mass.-London-Don Mills, Ont.

RÉsumé. Field patching, introduced by Harbater and Hartmann in [33], and extended by the aforementioned authors and Krashen in [34], has recently seen numerous applications. We present an extension of this technique to the setting of Berkovich analytic geometry and applications to the local-global principle.

In particular, we show that this adaptation of patching can be applied to Berkovich analytic curves, and as a consequence obtain local-global principles over function fields of curves defined over complete ultrametric fields. Because of the connection between the points of a Berkovich analytic curve and the valuations that its function field can be endowed with, one of these local-global principles is given with respect to completions, thus evoking some similarity with more classical versions. As an application, we obtain local-global principles for quadratic forms and results on the $u$-invariant. These findings generalize those of [34].

As a starting point for higher-dimensional patching in the Berkovich setting, we show that this technique is applicable around certain fibers of a relative Berkovich analytic curve. As a consequence, we prove a local-global principle over the germs of meromorphic functions on said fibers. By showing that said germs of meromorphic functions are algebraic, we also obtain local-global principles over function fields of algebraic curves defined over a larger class of ultrametric fields.

RÉSumé. Recollement sur les espaces de Berkovich et principe local-global.
Le recollement sur les corps, introduit par Harbater et Hartmann dans [33], et étendu par ces auteurs et Krashen dans [34], a récemment trouvé de nombreuses applications. Nous présentons ici une extension de cette technique au cadre de la géométrie analytique de Berkovich et des applications au principe local-global.

Nous montrons que cette adaptation du recollement peut s'appliquer aux courbes analytiques de Berkovich, et par conséquent obtenons des principes locaux-globaux sur les corps de fonctions de courbes définies sur des corps ultramétriques complets. Grâce à la connexion entre les points d'une courbe analytique de Berkovich et les valuations dont on peut munir son corps de fonctions, nous obtenons un principe local-global par rapport à des complétés du corps de fonctions considéré, ce qui présente une ressemblance avec des versions plus classiques. En application, nous établissons des principes locauxglobaux dans le cas plus précis des formes quadratiques et en déduisons des bornes sur l'u-invariant de certains corps. Nos résultats généralisent ceux de [34].

Comme point de départ pour le recollement en dimension supérieure dans un cadre d'espaces de Berkovich, nous montrons que cette technique peut s'appliquer autour de certaines fibres d'une courbe analytique relative. Nous l'utilisons ensuite pour démontrer un principe local-global sur les germes des fonctions méromorphes sur ces fibres. En montrant que ces germes de fonctions méromorphes sont algébriques, nous obtenons aussi des principes locaux-globaux sur les corps de fonctions des courbes algébriques définies sur une famille plus vaste de corps ultramétriques.


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ The idea for thickenings of affinoid domains of $\mathbb{P}^{1, \text { an }}$ originally appears in some unpublished notes of Jérôme Poineau.

